

Chronology of the Indians

By Bud Hannings

1621 - America - At Plymouth, Massachusetts, one-half of these new colonists perish from cold and hardship before spring. Among the casualties is Rose, the wife of Captain M. Standish, who succumbs by drowning on January 29th. The Pilgrims sustain a severe winter, but there is little contact with the Indians. The death rate climbs so rapidly that for every house constructed for the living, seven graves are dug for their deceased. In conjunction, the Pilgrims bury their dead near the banks of the landing spot, but to conceal the losses from the Indians, who might take advantage if they learned of the weakened state, they quickly plant corn over the graves. Surprisingly, during the spring of 1621, a bold Indian, named Samoset (Squanto) walks directly into the camp and bellows: "Welcome Englishmen, while offering them a modified salute." Thanks to him and his broken English, a treaty of friendship is agreed upon between the Pilgrims and Massoit, the main chief of the Pokanokets (also Wampanoags). During March, trading with the Indians begins. The Pilgrims reelect John Carver as Governor, but he succumbs within several weeks during April. William Bradford is then selected as governor. The *Mayflower* returns to England on April 5th. The colonists begin to probe deeper into the country. A contingent explores Massachusetts Bay about forty miles north of Plymouth and they also explore Shawmut peninsula, which is present day Boston.

September 1621- The Narragansett Indians, led by Chief Canonibus, agree to initiate friendly relations with the Pilgrims in Plymouth, as had similarly been agreed to by the Pokanokets earlier in the year. The Pokanokets and the Narragansetts are enemies, and each tribe is located near the Pilgrims' settlement. In other activity, King James I, gives a Scotchman, Sir William Alexander, the territory east of the St. Croix and south of the St. Lawrence, called Nova Scotia (Acadia). During the war between England and France which breaks out during 1627, Alexander using force gets control of the territory, but subsequent to the peace treaty, during 1632, the land reverts to the French (Treaty of St. Germain).

March 22nd 1622- In Virginia, the Indians under Opechancanough, seek retaliation and revenge for the murder of an Indian brave. The Indians, who have now also learned the skill of firing guns, attack every settlement and massacre the men women and children. One Indian, Chanco, a convert, is able to give some warning to the colonists of the imminent attack or more would be killed. About 350 settlers are killed, including six members of council. The colonists that had been spared, begin retaliation, but they are also fighting disease and chronic food shortages which soon deplete their numbers from about 4,000 people to 2,500. Intermittent warfare continues for twenty-four years when a peace treaty is finally signed during 1646.

July 1623 - England - American Colonies - The Privy Council in England assumes the administration of the Virginia Company which faces financial ruin. The Virginia colonists, their numbers trimmed considerably since the Indian attack of the previous year, initiate a retaliatory attack against the Indians to seek vengeance. In other activity, Virginia is introduced to the silk worm, bringing about the manufacture of silk in the colonies. Later, the House of Burgesses passes legislation "the Silk Laws," mandating the planting of Mulberry trees, the source of food for the silk worms. These laws

are repealed during 1666.

1623 - England - American Colonies - English Colonists, operating under the grant (1622) of Gorges and Mason, settle Portsmouth and Dover, on the Piscataqua River in New Hampshire. In conjunction, the Laconia Company fails to prosper and seed permanence, rather the towns retain the status of fishing towns. Meanwhile, in Massachusetts, Andrew Weston, under a grant from Plymouth Co., attempts to create a plantation for his own success. He dispatches sixty of his indentured servants to found the settlement at Wissagusset (Weymouth), Massachusetts along the south shore of Massachusetts Bay; however, these men seemingly lack the character of honest men and the endeavor goes awry from the start. With a propensity to avoid the labors of genuine toil, they begin to plunder the Indians. In turn, the Indians prepare to annihilate the colonists. Based on a tip from Massasoit, who is suffering from ill-health and dying, Miles Standish foils the plot. He pulls a surprise raid on Chief Wituwamot and executes him and several of the conspiring braves. Later, John Robinson, upon hearing the news of the actions of Smith, writes to the colonists and states: "**OH. HOW HAPPY A THING HAD IT BEEN, HAD YOU CONVERTED SOME, BEFORE YOU HAD KILLED ANY (Indians)!**" Once the ordeal ends, the sixty colonists quickly abandon the plantation and retire to safer quarters. During the following year, another attempt is made to revive the plantation, but this effort also fails. Capt. Christopher Levett explores the coast of Maine, and builds a house near the site of Portland but does not make a permanent settlement. In other activity, a settlement is founded at Quincy, Massachusetts by Captain Wollaston; however it is not Puritan and its governor, Thomas Morton is soon disliked by the Puritans.

1624 - Roger Conant, as agent of the Plymouth Co., founds a settlement near Cape Anne, Mass. The continued opposition of the House of Commons paralyzes the Company. Consequently, squatters colonize the coast from Cape Cod to the Bay of Fundy. York, (Maine) is settled about this date. In other activity, Reverend Lyford arrives in New Plymouth to replace Reverend Morrell who has returned to England, but he too is not well accepted by the Puritans. Lyford and some others are forced to leave the colony; they resettle at Nantasket at Boston Harbor. After about four years of attempting to colonize Plymouth and make it prosper, it becomes apparent that things must change. With the absence of private property, there is a lack of willingness to labor for the common good. In essence, the socialistic society is not working. A new blueprint is drawn to initiate an incentive to prosper. The new plan provides one acre of land for each person and they would plant the crop for their profit. Soon after implementation, there is an abundance of corn, so much that the Puritans begin selling to the Indians. In essence, the Puritans undergo a transition from socialism to capitalism.

1625 - At about this time, Pemaquid (Bristol), Maine is settled. Later during 1631, two Englishmen obtain a patent to become the proprietors of Pemaquid, The region is inhabited by Pemaquid Indians (Abenaki/Algonquian) and the Wawenock Indians who live along the coast between the St. George and Kennebec Rivers. In conjunction, The Pemaquid, part of the North Virginia Colony is coveted by both England and France.

May 4th 1626 - Netherlands - Colonies - Peter Minuit arrives at Manhattan and assumes the duties of director-general of the New Netherlands. Manhattan Island is purchased from the Indians for a sum of sixty guilders, equivalent to about \$24.00. At the southernmost point of the island, the Dutch construct Fort Amsterdam. The Indians also sell Staten Island to the Dutch. The New World is paying dividends to the Dutch and because of the expanding commerce, they spend little time thinking about permanent colonization. Rather, the Dutch concentrate on the immediate profits and

the continuing relationship with the English that have settled further north in New Plymouth.

1628 - Virginia declares that no treaties shall be made with the Indians.

1630 - Massachusetts - Maine - At about this time Fort Pemaquid (also known as Shurte's Fort) is established. The fort is later destroyed in 1676 during a conflict with the Indians known as "King Philip's War." Subsequently, the colonists rebuild the fort and rename it Fort Charles, but it too is later (1689) destroyed during a confrontation with the French. Undaunted, the fort is again reconstructed during 1692, and renamed Fort William Henry, but fate strikes yet again. During 1696, the fort's garrison capitulates to the French. The on-again off-again confrontation between the English and French continue well into the 18th Century. Nonetheless, the English establish Fort Frederick in this same vicinity during 1729 and it remains under English control through the French and Indian War and beyond up to 1775. By this time, the fort is no longer a strategic installation. It is demolished.

1630 - Fur trading leads to tension between the different colonists and the Indians. The various tribes in the Great Lakes area and the Ohio Valley such as the Iroquois who trade with the Dutch and the Huons who trade with the French enter into a prolonged period known as the "Beaver Wars," which lasts until about 1700.

1630 - Dutch West Indian Company - Godyn gets an Indian deed for his land in Delaware (July), the first deed of land in Delaware. He and Samuel Bloemart buy the Indian title to the east coast of Delaware Bay (N.J.); this tract called Swanendael or Swansdale. Kiliaen van Rensselaer buys from the Indians land (24 miles long and forty-eight miles wide) between Fort Orange and the Mohawk River; this tract is called Rensselaerwyck. Michael Pauw buys Staten Island and Pavonia (the country around Hoboken, N.J.). During December, De Vries, acting as agent for Godyn, sails with the emigrants for Swansdale or Swanendael (Lewistown, Delaware) and founds a colony during the early part of 1631. At about this time, the Dutch also establish a blockhouse (Amersfort Blockhouse) in Brooklyn (Flatlands).

May 1631 - Charles I, King of England, Grants to a company under William Clayborne (a member of the Virginia council) a license to trade with the Indians of Virginia; John Harvey, Governor of Virginia confirms it. Clayborne founds stations on Kent Island and near the Susquehanna River, the first settlements in Maryland.

1632 - In England, Charles I., grants "Maryland" to Sir George Calvert, Lord Baltimore; however Calvert succumbs on April 15th, prior to the signing of the patent. On the 20th of June, the patent is issued to Cecilius Calvert, his son. The colonists in Virginia, led principally by William Clayborne, protest loudly, insisting that Maryland is part of Virginia. In conjunction, Clayborne, operating in trade with the Indians by royal licence with two trading posts, one at Kent and another at the mouth of the Susquehanna desire no patents that might hinder the operation.

1632 - In Virginia, the governing laws are revised, essentially consolidating them under one statute. The government works to promote "Godliness" and authorizes particular items including the publishing of marriage bans, directing the number of occasions per year that a minister should preach, initiation of tithing, and instruction the children in religion. In addition, the laws render punishment for such crimes as, adultery, slander, swearing and drunkenness. The colony also curtails the production in an early version of price fixing; the intent is to assure the rise in prices within the market in England. At this time, competition is quickly building in Barbadoes, where other English emigrants have settled. At this time, the price of tobacco is about six cents per pound. In addition, the colonists are required to plant a specific amount of corn and plant vines. The revised

laws also mandate constant military exercises and they forbid parley with the Indians. Other items include restriction of emigration to New England without the consent of the government.

1632 - Massachusetts founds a representative government, makes treaties with the Indians, and establishes trade with Plymouth Colony, Virginia, and New Netherlands. It is decided most appropriate place for meetings would be Boston. And it is decided to construct a fort there and a prison. In other activity, regarding the Dutch West Indian Company, DeVries, the agent of Godyn, sails to Holland, but upon his return to Delaware at the close of the year, he finds that the colonists who remained had been slain by the Indians. During December, he moves to Staten Island and settles there.

May 1633 - France - Colonies - Jesuits including Father Jean de Brebeuf arrive back in Canada from France. The Jesuits had returned to France following the fall of Quebec to England during 1629. De Brebeuf moves to again work near Lake Huron, but he is rejected by the Indians. Later during 1634, he and another priest, Father Daniel, return to Ihonatiria near Georgian Bay.

March 27th 1634 - Colonies - Lord Calvert arrives at the Potomac in Maryland. The colonists land in proximity to where a group of Indians are preparing to leave the area. Here, on the eastern shore near the mouth of the Potomac, Lord Calvert founds St. Marys, named in honor of the Blessed Mother. St. Mary's Fort is also established, but within only a few years it becomes dilapidated. During the following year, the Indians cede this ground to the colonists. Governor Harvey of Virginia receives them quite amicably and because of his gesture there are no obstacles in establishing the settlement. In addition, the friendliness of the Indians, make the task easy. None the less, Clayborne, a Clayborne, a Virginia councilman, raises nasty opposition.

1634 - Netherlands - Colonies - In the Dutch Colonies, no white settlers remain within the Delaware Bay area. However several Swedes still reside in Burlington and Gloucester Counties in Southern New Jersey. In New Amsterdam, the Dutch construct a church and in addition, they build barracks for the troops that accompanied Wouter Van Twiller, the new Director-general. In other activity, the Dutch initiate action to gain some islands considered to be strategic for the Dutch trading enterprises. By the following year, they seize several including Curacao (Dutch Antilles) and St. Eustace (Dutch Lesser Antilles) that are located in the Caribbean Sea off Venezuela (South America). The Dutch capture them from Spain which has held them since 1527. In conjunction, the islands were originally settled by Arawak Indians.

January 1636 - Roger Williams having refused the Court order to return to England, departs Salem, Massachusetts and vanishes into the woods. Slightly more than three months later, he is accepted by two Indian chiefs, Massasoit and Canonicus, leaders of the Pokanokets and Narragansetts respectively. He later moves to Renoboth (Seekonk), but it lies within the borders of Plymouth colony, so he heads for Narragansett Bay and there during June, he founds Providence, Rhode Island. In conjunction, Williams had received some "friendly" advice, suggesting he remove from Plymouth. The land upon which he founds Providence is given to him by the Indians who befriended him. For a period of about two years, his friends and followers continue to join him at the new settlement.

April 1636 - A group of emigrants from Boston, including Reverend Thomas Hooker, again moves to Connecticut; however, unlike a similar journey the previous year, the group makes it without losing their cattle and expending their provisions. In other activity, The younger Winthrop under a commission from the proprietaries, founds Saybrook Conn. (named after Lord Saye and Sele and Lord Brooke), and erects a fort there; it will remain a separate colony until 1644. Due to the

hostilities of the Indians toward the Dutch, the new English colony also faces grave threats.

June 1636 - The Pequods (Pequots), the most powerful tribe of Indians inhabiting the area near Narragansett Bay holds power over about twenty tribes. A group of one of these murder a Captain Stone, the owner of a Virginia Ship supposedly in retaliation for some injustice against the Indians by him and his crew. The incident raises alarm in Massachusetts. The Indians quickly offer to turn the killers over to the magistrates; however, they do not follow through with the promise, and they offer an apology which is accepted. In addition, the Indians request assistance to initiate trade with the Narragansetts. The assistance is provided. Also, during July in the vicinity of Block Island, Rhode Island an elder trader named Oldham is murdered by Narragansett Indians, apparently because he had begun trading with their enemy, the Pequods. Chief (sachem) Canonicus, although unaware of the attack, takes blame and apologizes, but in this instance, the magistrates convinced the apology is insufficient, decide to retaliate. A contingent of about ninety men, led by Endicott, advances to Block Island to seek revenge by torching the wigwams and destroying the crop of corn. Following this attack, during August, Endicott sails to Fort Saybrook to initiate and overland march to the Pequod River where he will demand the surrender of the Indians who had murdered Captain Stone and to seek reparations in the form of "one thousand fathoms of wampum, which is equivalent to between three to five thousand dollars. The Nagansetts balk at the ultimatum of paying wampum and no murderers are produced. Consequently, Endicott's command sets the village afire and proceeds to the Connecticut River where the villages are also destroyed by fire. Endicott then returns to Boston, having lost only one man during the campaign. The Pequods, reacting to what they consider an unprovoked attack, make every attempt to annihilate the colonists beginning with raids that continue through the winter 1636-1637 and take the lives of about thirty colonists. In addition, the Pequods make every effort to galvanize themselves with the Narragansetts and Mohegans to expel or exterminate every white colonist in the area. Word of the impending Indian coalition reaches Roger Williams who in turn dispatches the information to the magistrates in Massachusetts. Williams, at the request of governor Vane and others intervenes and prevents the Narragansetts and Mohegans from joining the Pequods by persuading them to remain neutral. Meanwhile during December in conjunction with the convening of a special session of the General Court, three Regiments are raised to prepare for any hostilities. But no offensive action is undertaken until spring for several reasons including the ongoing crisis within the colony due to the ongoing "Hutchinson" dilemma.

1637 - 1641 - New Mexico - The Spanish under the Spanish governor, Luis de Rosas seize more than fifty Ute Indians during this time and press them into forced-labor at Santa Fe.

March 1637- A court held at Newtown, Connecticut changes the names of Newtown, Watertown, and Dorchester to Hartford, Wethersfield, and Windsor, respectively. Also, it decides to wage war against the Pequod Indians. John Mason, whom had been a soldier in Flanders is designated leader of the attack force. The attacks commence during May, subsequent to gaining volunteers, led by Underhill, from Saybrook and support from the Narragansetts and Mohegans. Also, with the Hutchinson crisis in Massachusetts coming to a conclusion, colonists from there will move to Connecticut to participate; however, the major battle concludes prior to their arrival, except for a group of about twenty whom had already been there.

May 10th 1637 - During the first part of May, the sought after allegiance of the Mohegans under their sachem (chief) Uncas is achieved by the colonists under John Mason giving them the added

muscle to attack the Pequods. This day, preparations are made to move against the villages, but there is also much prayer because of the great risk in launching an attack. Once the ninety-man force departs, the village with its women and children will be defenseless and subject to torture including being scalped if the mission fails.

On the 11th, the troops, their numbers now grown by about twenty men from Massachusetts who had been there, sail from Hartford and silently pass the forts until they lay an anchor in a harbor in the vicinity of the Pequod fortifications. The colonists are unaware that the Indians had noticed them, because of no resistance as they pass. In contrast, although the Indians have seen the Vessels, they take solace that these Ships continue to pass, rather than halt to initiate battle.

On the following day, Sunday, Mason's command pauses to rest on the Lord's Day, but soon after, they focus upon gaining the cooperation of the Narragansetts to aid in the quest to vanquish the Pequods. Initially, their sachem (chief), Miantonimoh, is enthusiastic; however when he learns of the diminutive size of the attack force, his spine quivers and many of his braves retreat to the woods, rather than join the assault. Undaunted, Mason marches toward the primary fort of the Pequods, guided through the woods by a disgruntled Pequod, until they come to rest at a place called Porter's rocks (Groton).

Meanwhile, the Indians convinced that the English had continued to pass the forts because they were too fearful of Pequod strength to attack. This infusion of overconfidence prompts the Pequods to relax their guard and in fact, there is an aura of joviality throughout the camp. Colonists posted close to the encampment hear much singing and merriment as the Indians celebrate until nearly midnight on this tranquil evening. Unbeknownst to the English, about 100 braves have moved into the fort and they are to launch an attack against the English on the following day, but circumstances prevent this attack from occurring.

On this the eve of battle, the colonists enjoy little because they realize that once dawn arrives, the fate of Connecticut will be determined by the victor of what shall be a gruesome battle when the arrow is pitted against the musket and the sword. As the lingering darkness begins to fade within the approaching light beams of dawn, the moon casts a solid glow over the landscape, and still there is no visible signs of the ominous sounds of battle that will burst from the thicket at first light and pounce upon the enemy like a lion on his prey.

About two hours prior to dawn, the English are tapped from their uneasy slumber and given the word to prepare to storm the enemy defenses. By this time, the Indians, those who still remain, have already sought safer positions, drawn well to the rear from where they can observe what they believe will be the demise of the colonists. These Indians only a short time ago had boldly boasted of their courage and skills in battle, but now they stand as passive witnesses, poised to move in any direction. As the English advance, a call is put out directing the Indians to join the attack. As two Indians, Uncas and Obequash move up, Captain Mason inquires: **"where is the fort?"** And he is informed: **"At the top of the hill."** Continuing, Mason inquires again, asking: **"Where are the other Indians?"** To this, he is told of their great fear. And Mason retorts, attempting to win their confidence and get them to fight: **"surround the fort at any distance they please, and see whether the Englishmen would fight."**

Meanwhile, the colonists under Mason encroach the northern approaches of the fort while the other contingent, led by Underhill, close against the western entrance, each racing against time as the sun readies to lurch from beyond the horizon, lest they lose the element of surprise and with it the momentum necessary to overcome the superior force. The troops accelerate the pace, but as Captain

Mason nears the objective, an unexpected spectator, a dog, senses his presence and immediately begins barking excitedly, thereby sounding the alarm. At about the same time, an Indian guard roars his signal, yelling repeatedly, "Owanux!, Owanux," interpreted as Englishmen.

Without hesitation, the English advance, while the Indians bolt from their wigwams to defend their fortress. The English commence a deafening round of fire that crashes upon the Indians as they attempt to intercept the invaders, and following the thunderclap, the Englishmen storm the main gate with their long swords in hand as they drive punishingly through the line of defenders. The Indians, although caught completely off guard and in a state of shock, take the thrashing, but quickly regain their composure and raise iron-resistance, giving no quarter to the English, nor refusing to capitulate. However, the English maintain their overwhelming pressure and force the Pequods to fall back, initially squeezing them from their defenses into the streets of the fort and once in the open, the English drive them toward the western section of the fort with a continual thrust of fire and sword. In the streets, some close-quartered combat ensues, but again the Indians are slain and the streets are clear for further advance. The surviving Pequods make way for more tenuous positions to continue the fight. They deploy in and around the wigwams located in the western side of the fort, but this places amidst many women and children who have taken refuge in them.

The English charge the positions and crash into the wigwams with their swords blazing, but they are greeted by withering fire from the muskets of the braves. Nevertheless, the unrelenting fury continues as each side pummels the other. The Indians continue to fall, but the English begin taking casualties, both wounded and dead, prompting Mason to alter his plan. Nearing exhaustion and with no clear view of victory in sight, Mason, aware that his small force is also running out of stamina from the grueling battle countermands his order not to torch the fort. He begins to shout " **We must burn them out!**" Mason, acting upon his own directive penetrates a wigwam and sets it afire. The flames begin to fly and jump from one wigwam to another until finally the entire encampment, composed of about seventy wigwams, is transformed into a raging inferno. The wild fire prompts the English to retire to safer positions outside the fort, but they deploy in such fashion as to completely encircle it. As the Indians flee from their hiding places they become conspicuous targets for the English who immediately ring them with fire. Others flee directly into the range of the Englishmen's swords and they too are slain, but some evade the storm of fire and break for the walls. However, as they ascend, other Englishmen commence firing and terminate them.

By the crack of dawn, the ongoing battle has ensued only for slightly more than one hour, but during this short period of time many lives have been lost and a nation of Indians nears extinction. By this time between 500-600 Indians, including women and children have been slain, either by combat or flame. At battle's end, only seven Indians survive the ordeal and seven others escape.

While the English view the devastation and prepare to rest before moving out, a new threat arrives on scene as other tribes of Pequods approach the fort. Upon observing the absolute horror of losing their fort and relatives, they mount a furious assault. The English, exhausted from the strain of the struggle, but invigorated by their victory, they engage the charging Indians from musket distance and deliver yet one more hurricane of fire that halts the attack in its tracks. Mason then executes an effortless withdrawal to Pequod Harbor (New London). He directs that the wounded be transported by sea, while the command retires by overland route to Saybrook. This battle concludes as the beginning of the end of the Pequod Indian tribe.

Those that have escaped this cauldron of death will subsequently be dealt with during the summer when the troops from Massachusetts initiate their expedition. The campaign will destroy their

remaining forts and scatter the surviving Pequods from their hideaways in the swamps. Sassacus, their sachem (chief), evades death and capture then seeks refuge with the Mohawk Indians; however, the Narragansetts intervene and persuade the Mohawks to execute him. In total it is believed that nearly 900 Pequods are killed or taken prisoner. Captivation proves to be no luxury as all males prisoners are transported to the West Indies and sold there as slaves. Only a few are able to escape and find refuge with either the Narragansetts or the Mohegans, but there are restriction here too. These Pequods are prohibited forever from calling themselves Pequods. Subsequent to the total annihilation of the tribe, the colonists, believe they have eradicated the “bloody heathen” and to bolster their rationale. They use quotes from the Old Testament and conclude that their victory was credited to Divine approval.

1637 - Colonies - In New Netherlands, William Kieft is made governor replacing Van Twiller. Under Kieft, described by John Winthrop, the Governor of Massachusetts Bay Company, as “ a sober and discreet man,” which remains in contrast to the opinions of Van Twiller. Kieft attempts to extricate the colony from its dilemma that Van Twiller’s apparent incompetence has caused, but he seems unable to accomplish much. His strong protest against the Swede settlement on the Delaware bears no fruit, nor is he able to restrain the New England Colonists from intruding upon Connecticut. Under Kieft; however, the ongoing monopoly regarding trade with the Indians will be abolished and he will provide lucrative privileges to the colonists in an attempt to bring about prosperity. However, the Dutch settlements in New York cause problems with the Indians and as time goes on, livestock annoys the Indians’ lands prompting the Indians to cause some animals to disappear to preserve their cornfields. Also, the Dutch Reform Church will become the established religion and the public teaching of it will be mandated.

March 1638 - Roger Williams obtains from the Indians, a deed of the land in the vicinity of present day Providence which in time he grants away gratis, a deed of Rhode Island for Anne Hutchinson and her fellow-exiles who found there a prosperous colony at Newport.

1639 - In New Netherlands, Governor Kieft reestablishes Fort Nassau in Gloucester Co., N.J. During January of this year, Dutch settlers acquire the western half of Long Island from the Marossepink sachem, Mechoswodt. Also, on Long Island a new settlement is founded at Breukelen adding to those already active at Wallabout and Flatlands. Meanwhile. Relations between the Dutch and the Indians continue to deteriorate. Kieft dispatches troops to Long Island due to an increasing number of missing animals and overreaction by the farmers. The incident leads to hostilities as several Raritan Indians (Unami Delaware) are slain. The Indians strike back by burning a farm and killing about four people. By the following year, Kieft declares war against the Indians and offers rewards for their scalps. The confrontation becomes known as the “Pig War.”

1639 - (Indians) - The Iroquois launches attacks against the Wenro tribe to eliminate it. In conjunction, the Wenro had been allied with the Erie and Neutrals, but recently the Wenro had been eliminated from the group. In conjunction, the Erie and Neutral themselves split during 1648 during yet another Indian war, one between the Iroquois and the Neutrals.

1640 - England - New England - Due to actions by Parliament, emigration to the colonies has been suspended. The price of the principle articles upon which the colonies subsist, particularly corn and cattle, severely drops, complicating the plight of the colonists who need to settle debts. Emergency actions are implemented to avoid further crisis. The governing bodies permit the use of beaver skins and wampum as currency in lieu of coins. The colonists also initiate new forms of trades including the construction of Ships and the manufacture of cotton and linen cloths. Other start ups include the

cultivation of flax and hemp. Fisheries also emerge as a source of revenue for the colonies. In conjunction, the Indians' "wampum," sometimes referred to as "peage" is composed of cylindrical half-inch beads which are made from specific parts of certain seashells. The beads comprise two colors, white and bluish black.

1640 - Colonies - English colonists from New Haven led by Sir Edmund Ploeden, settle at Elsingburgh on the east bank of the Delaware Bay and name it New Albion. Governor Kieft raises objections to the colony, but the English ignore the complaint. During the following year, the Dutch and Swedes move to evict them. In conjunction, by about this time, the English begin to supply firearms to the Mohawks, prompting the Dutch to begin supplying weapons to the Mohawks and Mahicans, but not to the tribes on the lower Hudson (Metoac, Munsee Delaware and Wappinger).

1640 - Colonies - English colonists from New England claim the rights to Long Island under a grant from Lord Stirling. They attempt to settle at Southampton on the western tip of the island. They replace the Dutch colors and in its place unfurl the picture of a "fools head," described later as an indecent caricature." The Dutch seize them as prisoners. Later, after apologizing, they are released and granted permission to settle on the eastern end of the island. The English place themselves under the jurisdiction of Connecticut. Also, hostilities erupt between the Dutch and the Raritan Indians ("Pig War").

October 4th 1641 - Two Jesuit priests, Charles Raymbault and Isaac Jogues reach Sault Ste. Marie near Lake Superior from the Georgian Bay, on what is the first time that the U.S. is entered from Canada by Europeans. After meeting with the Indians, they are informed that many other Indians inhabit the regions beyond the Great Lakes. Father Raymbault would later return to Quebec where he succumbs during 1643.

1641 - Netherlands - American Colonies - War erupts between the Dutch of New Netherlands and the Algonquin Indians; the conflict lasts until 1645. Also, the Dutch evict the Portuguese from Malacca (Melaka), Malasia on the southern Malay Peninsula along the Strait of Malacca. The Portuguese had seized Malacca during 1511 by Alfonso de Albuquerque. During the early part of the Nineteenth Century, the Dutch will transfer Malacca to England.

1642 - In New Netherlands, Governor Kieft at odds with the English regarding their settlements which intrude on Dutch territory also has another dilemma. Hostility arises from the Indians and several colonists are murdered, prompting Kieft to retaliate. Subsequent to the appointment of a twelve-man board, a contingent of eighty men is dispatched to avenge the killings. However, the raid fails as the troops's guide inadvertently takes the wrong route leaving the Indians unscathed. Shortly thereafter, yet another Dutchman is killed by a Hackensack Indian (Ackinkess-Hacky), but in this case, the Indian had sought revenge for having been made drunk and then fleeced of his wealth. The Indians in honorable fashion offer reparations, but the Dutch seek only revenge. The matter remains unsettled, but then during the following year, the Dutch take their wrath on the Tappan tribe (Tappaen) who come to them for protection. In conjunction, the Sessekenick tribe also lives in this general area which includes the foothills and summit of the Palisades. The Dutch traders who operate in Bergen (present day Jersey City, Hudson County, New Jersey) remain under constant threat by the Indians. The Dutch will later establish Fort Bergen at present-day Jersey City.

1642 - Colonies - Maryland - Indians - Maryland declares war on the Susquehannock Indians. The conflict officially continues until a treaty is consummated during 1652, but the hostilities taper off considerable during 1644. In conjunction, the Marylanders seem to maintain friendly relations with other Indians in the region including the Patuxents, Piscataways and the Yoamacoes.

1642 - Colonies - New England - Anne Hutchinson's son and son-in-law castigate the Boston authorities for their treatment of her, and for it, they are imprisoned. She removes from Rhode Island to East Chester, Connecticut, among the Dutch. Kieft, the Dutch governor initiates raids and massacres nearly 100 Algonquins, but they will retaliate and inflict huge casualties upon the Dutch colonists as they attack settlements from Connecticut to New Jersey, nearly annihilating the colonies. Anne Hutchinson will be counted among the casualties during the following year. A popular assembly of delegates from the Dutch villages mitigates Kieft's arbitrary rule. The war leads the Indians to attack the English colonies in Maryland and Virginia, and war goes on there for four years.

1642 - Colonies - New Netherlands (New Jersey) - Hostilities erupt between the Dutch and the Hackensack Indians ("Whiskey War").

Early August 1642 - Colonies - Father Isaac Jogues is seized by Indians and tortured, but rather than kill the Jesuit upon capture they take him to a village, Ossernenon on the Mohawk River less than fifty miles above Albany where he is subjected to more barbarous treatment including the amputation of several of his fingers. The Indians also capture and torture a Jesuit Layman, Rene Goupil who had been a doctor in Quebec and recently joined with Joques for the journey. Goupil while at Ossernenon is murdered by tomahawk for instructing children how to make the sign of the cross. Later, after several unsuccessful attempts to buy Jogues' freedom by some Protestants (Dutch Calvinists) from Fort Henry, Joques is finally saved. The Dutch get him aboard a ship which takes him to New Albany (New York) and from there he is able to get transportation back to France. Father Jogues, undaunted by his brushes with death and his Indian-inflicted deformation, returns to the Colonies during 1644. In conjunction, Rene Goupil is canonized a Saint (one of the eight North American Martyrs) by Pope Pius XI during 1930.

February 1643 - Colonies - Pavonia Massacre - In New Netherlands, the Wappinger Indians, having been attacked by the Mohawk Indians, flee to the protection of the Dutch at Pavonia (New Jersey); however, the Dutch provide only temporary safety as they conspire to entrap and slaughter the (Wappingers). Some within the colony attempt to have the dastardly act aborted, but their efforts are in vain. The Dutch without provocation spring the trap and slay not only the braves, but also the women and children at Hoboken. Many attempt to flee by crossing the near frozen river, and their screams of anguish are easily heard on the opposite bank. The wounded who initially survive the massacre are exterminated on the following morning. About eighty Indians are slain and another thirty are seized and transported to New Amsterdam. Other Indians at Manhattan (Corlaer's Hook) are also attacked. This inglorious slaughter of the Wappinger Indians causes other tribes in the area to form a coalition to drive the Dutch from the area. Retaliation by these tribes is unrelenting and fiercely delved out beginning with raids that strike settlements as distant as thirty miles to the north and northeast. The Dutch, insufficiently armed and lacking sufficient numbers, sustain terrible losses as the Indian strike ferociously, first by setting the houses afire and then killing the women and children as well as the men. The Indians, satisfied that they have avenged the atrocity then retire, but survivors are taken as captives. Other Dutch colonists, terrified by the raids, take flight and head for New Amsterdam. During April, the Indians seek and gain peace with the Dutch through the efforts of Roger Williams; however, shortly thereafter, during autumn, hostilities again break out. This conflict will then continue until 1645 and become known as Governor Kieft's War. About twenty tribes including the Hackensack and Tappan join forces.

1643 - Colonies - Anne Hutchinson is killed by the Indians. She had resided in Massachusetts, but had been banned. Later she moved to Pelham Bay (Bronx), N.Y.

March 1643 - Colonies - Roger Williams brokers a truce between the Indians and the Dutch.

April 1643 - Peace is agreed on by the Dutch and the Indians, but hostilities again erupt during autumn as the Dutch led by John Underhill, a refugee from New England reinitiate the war which ensues until August 1645. At New Amsterdam, the colonists erect a sturdy palisade at a location known later as Wall Street, to bolster the colony's defenses.

1643 - The Virginia assembly declares that no peace shall be made with the Indians.

Winter 1643-1644 - Colonies- New York - Indians - The Dutch attack a Matinecock Indian village, Matsepe and the Indians lose more than 100 men and an undeterminable number of women and children.

1643 - France - New France - Noel Chabanel, a Jesuit arrives in Canada from France and begins to work with the Huron Indians. He joins Father Charles Garnier who had arrived in New France during 1636. Both are murdered by the Iroquois during 1649.

April 18th 1644 - Colonies - In Virginia, Powhatan Indians, led by the aging Opechancanough, take advantage of the chaos in England and decide to attack the colony. The surprise raid massacres more than five hundred colonists and incites instant war with the Indians. The colonists retaliate and soon after capture the chief, who later dies of wounds that had been inflicted prior to his capture. His successor seeks an end to the conflict and agrees to cede all the land between the James and York Rivers. Hostilities terminate during Autumn 1646. In conjunction, the colonists will subsequently construct Fort James in the vicinity of Providence Forge (New Kent County) during 1645 as a result of this massacre.

April 1664 - Father Giuseppe Bressani, a Jesuit en route to a Huron Mission is seized by the Iroquois and taken back to Iroquois territory. During his imprisonment he is brutally tortured and his body is mutilated a common occurrence for white people captured by Iroquois and a step before the final act of a gruesome death by means of more torture. In Bressani's case, he escapes death after some Dutch Calvinists from Fort Orange (Albany) buy his freedom. Father Bressani embarks for France and arrives there during November of this year. He makes another trip back to New France during 1645 to again toil with the Hurons only to discover that while he had been in France, the Iroquois devastated the Huron village and killed hundreds of the Indians. Father Bressani then returns to Italy where he succumbs during 1672.

April 1644 - Colonies - New Netherlands (New York) - Indians - Gauwarowe, a Matinecock sachem concludes a treaty of peace with the Dutch. A term includes that his tribe is not to support the Marechkaieck and Reckonhacky tribes which are still hostile to the Dutch.

1644 - Maryland makes peace with the Indians.

1644 - Massachusetts gives her county courts authority to instruct the Indians instructed in religion. Thomas Mahew a missionary, works among Indians on Martha's Vineyard. In other activity, the English establish a fort at Gale's Head near Marblehead. Subsequently, it is expanded as a precautionary measure to bolster defenses against French encroachment. And again, following the American Revolution it is further expanded. In conjunction, during 1814, the fort is named Fort Sewall in honor of Judge Samuel Sewall.

1645 - (Indians) - The French and their allies, the Hurons conclude a peace at Three Rivers with the Five Nations (Iroquois Confederacy includes the Cayuga, Mohawk, Oneida, Onondaga and Seneca).

1645 - The Dutch and Indians make peace at New Amsterdam, but the colonists have not fared well through the hostilities. The Indians have greatly reduced their numbers and their settlements. Of

about thirty settlements, there now remains only five or six and combined they are hard pressed to be able to muster more than 100 men capable of serving as troops. In conjunction, this peace also rejects the harsh policies that Kieft had supported against the Indians. By the following year, Kieft who seemingly remains constantly at odds with either the ministers of the colony or members of the Dutch community, finds himself in an untenable position.

May-June 1646 - Father Isaac Jogues arrives in the American colonies from Canada on a mission to gain peace with the Iroquois. On 5 June after following the route he had earlier taken while a captive he arrives at Lake Horicon (Lake George) and he names it the Lake of the Blessed Sacrament. he is greeted cordially by the Mohawk Indians at Ossernenon, where several years ago they had nearly killed him. Jogues is able to consummate a treaty with the Iroquois and afterwards he returns to Canada. Soon after, his superiors reluctantly permit him to return to the Iroquois to work among them. During the latter part of September, he departs on the journey. In the meantime, the Iroquois sustain much sickness in their village and the fall harvest is poor. Before the party could reach the village, the Mohawks who blame their misfortune on the Jesuit, intercept him and Father Jean Lalande at Lake George; the remainder of the party except for one Indian (Huron) fled earlier. Both priests are tortured and taken to the village to await the results of a council. According to the chiefs, both are to be released and they are. Nonetheless, on October 18, Father Jogues is pounded by a tomahawk and his head is cut off. The Indians dispose of his body by dumping it in the Mohawk River, but his head is saved and hanged on a palisade. Father Jean de Lalande is spared until the following day and then he too is murdered. Consequently, war between the French and the Five Nations is reinitiated. Both Father Jogues and de Lalande are canonized as Saints (two of eight Martyrs of North America) during 1930 by Pope Pius XI.

August 1646 - Father Gabriel Dreuillettes, the first of the Europeans to journey overland from the St. Lawrence to the Kennebec in Maine, builds a chapel near the mouth of the river, where many Abenakis (People of the dawn) gather. Franciscans had already planted a lodge at the mouth of the Penobscot. This tribe of the Algonquin group also gathers in New Hampshire, Vermont and southern Quebec family resides in the wooded areas. The Abenaki Indians are the first tribe to voluntarily and somewhat enthusiastically become Christians.

October 1646 - In Virginia, the colonists make peace with the Indians.

November 1646 - The General Court of Massachusetts repudiates the paramount authority of the English Parliament. It passes an Act for the propagation of the gospel among the Indians, and John Eliot, of Roxbury, Massachusetts., the "apostle of the Indians." Eliot "the morning-star of missionary enterprise," initiates his work of spreading the gospel by spending his time with the Indians at Nonantum (now Newton), Massachusetts.

1647 - (Indians) Colonies - New York - The Hurons agree to an war alliance with the Susquehannocks, the latter in an attempt to intervene in the ongoing unfriendly relations between the Hurons and the Mohawks. No progress comes from the alliance. The Hurons also try unsuccessfully to split the Iroquois Confederacy by making treaties with individual tribes.

1648 - (Indians) Colonies New York - Hostilities begin anew between the Hurons and the Mohawks (Iroquois Confederacy). The Mohawks set up an ambush to halt a Huron party from passing through Mohawk territory with their trading goods. The Hurons break through, but at high cost. Also, the Iroquois engage the Neutrals. The Erie tribe declines giving support to the Neutrals. Consequently, the Iroquois become stronger.

March 16 1649 - France - Colonies - Mohawk Indians devastate the Jesuit missions at St. Louis and

St. Ignatius. Two priests, Fathers Jean de Brebeuf and **Lallemand** are seized at the former and forcible taken back to St. Ignace which had already been destroyed. The priests are savagely tortured and beaten to death. The Iroquois bludgeon them with stones and clubs then bind both priests to stakes while slashing their broken bodies with clubs and other weapons both are set afire. In addition the Iroquois Indians continue the barbarism by placing fire-heated tomahawk points around the neck of Father De Breuef, and forcing a rod down his throat. De Breuef suffers, despite the unimaginable pain in silence and simultaneously undergoes an Iroquois baptism to further insult Christianity by dousing his head with boiling water. Subsequent to the murder, the Indians continue to defile his body by slicing out De Breuef's heart and eating it during the afternoon. All the while, Father Gabriel Lalemant is forced to observe and await a similar fate. The Iroquois start on him during early evening and he expires on the morning of the 20th. Both priests are canonized as Saints (Martyrs of North America) by Pope Pius XI on 29 June 1930. Soon after, the Iroquois move against the village of **St. John's (Ste Marie)**, inhabited by the Tionontati (Tobacco Nation) which lies south of Nottawasaga Bay, Ontario. Two Jesuits, Fathers Noel Chabanel and Father Charles Garnier who spent their final hours on 7 December trying to comfort the Indians as they were being massacred. Garnier, was hearing the confession of one of the Indians when he was struck with the mortal blow. Both Jesuits are canonized (two of eight North American Martyrs) as Saints during 1930 by Pope Pius XI. In related activity, following the action that drove the Hurons and Tionontati from their lands they move to an area southwest of Lake Superior and by 1670, they are in the vicinity of Mackinac, Michigan. Eventually both tribes merge to become the Wyandots. Also, following the destruction of the Huron and Tionontati, the Iroquois focus on the Neutral tribe and within about two years, it too is destroyed.

1650 - Indians - Colonies - The Iroquois attack the Neutrals tribe, the latter again not getting support from its former ally, the Erie. By 1651, the Iroquois prevail and the surviving Neutrals that are able make it to the Erie lands. However, the Iroquois already have their sights set on the Erie.

June 10 1650 - At about this time, the Hurons several hundred in number move into Quebec from Sillery. The Jesuit mission is abandoned. More than fifty Frenchmen including thirteen priests accompany the Indians. In conjunction, during the following year, the Hurons again relocate moving to the nearby Island of New Orleans. In conjunction, later other Hurons who had been at or near the Three Rivers join the tribe.

1651 - Colonies - The settlement of "praying Indians" at Nonantum removes to Natick, Mass. The Massachusetts legislature prohibits persons, whose estate does not exceed £200, from wearing lace costing over 2s. a yard.

1651 - (Indians) - Two tribes of the Iroquois nation, the Mohawk and the Seneca engage in warfare with the Susquehannock a tribe in Pennsylvania. Meanwhile tensions continue to rise between the Erie and the Iroquois, the latter still attempting to get the Neutrals that previously joined the Erie.

1652 - Colonies - Maryland - Indians - At about this time, the Susquehannock Indians seek and gain a treaty with the English in the colony of Maryland.

1652 - Netherlands - Colonies - New Amsterdam is incorporated, but its citizens gain no genuine privileges. Also, the Dutch establish a village, named Esopus (present-day Kingston, New York). Subsequently, during 1655, Indians compel them to abandon it.

1653 - New France - Three Rivers is attacked by the Iroquois, The fort, commanded by Peter Boucher refuses to capitulate despite being manned by less than fifty men and after a period of about six months, the Indians relent, lift the siege and sign a treaty. In conjunction, Peter Boucher

is appointed governor of Three River to succeed governor Kerdo bot in recognition of his heroism at the fort. It is thought that the repulse of the Iroquois had saved all of New France, for if it had fallen, so too would have Quebec and Montreal.

1653 - (Indians) - The Erie tribe launches a raid against the Seneca (Iroquois). Annencraos, a Seneca chief is killed. To avoid full-scale warfare both sides agree to a parley; however, at the meeting, an argument erupts and one of the Seneca is killed. A donnybrook follows as the Iroquois then kill nearly all of the Erie representatives (several escape death), making war inevitable.

1653 - New Hampshire - Fort Star is established by the English on Star Island (previously Gosport) part of the Isle of Shoals composed of nine islands divided between the colonies (later states) on Maine and New Hampshire. Some of these diminutive islands hold unique names such as Smuttynose and Duck, both belonging to Maine and Lunging which is part of New Hampshire. Fort Star remains under British control until 1776 and it is frequently used during various outbreaks of hostilities with Indians, particularly during the wars at the latter part of the Seventeenth Century. In conjunction, a monument to John Smith remains on the island. The fort was torn down during the American Revolution.

1654 - (Indians) - The Erie tribe is attacked by the Iroquois, but unlike many of their foes, the Erie sustain the attacks and inflict punishment upon the Iroquois. The hostilities actually continue into 1656 before the Erie are vanquished by the combined forces of the Cayuga, Onondaga and the Seneca. In conjunction, by this time, the Iroquois have eliminated the Huron, Tonontati (Tobacco nation), Wenro, Neutrals and the Erie. Like the others before them, the Erie split for survival with some evading the Iroquois in Pennsylvania until the 1680s. In other activity, smallpox strikes the Susquehannock and the Mohawk tribes which compels both sides to slow the pace of the ongoing hostilities between them.

1655 - Colonies New Netherlands (New Jersey-New York) - New Amsterdam is attacked by Manhattan rim Indians igniting a conflict known as the "Peach War." Following the death of a Wappinger Indian woman (by a Dutch farmer in retaliation for the stealing of one peach), a band of Wappingers speed to Manhattan to seek justice from the farmer, but they also engage militia. Subsequent to the skirmish, the Indians cross the Hudson River and proceed to destroy Dutch farms in New Jersey including Pavonia and Hoboken. Dutch homes on Staten Island are also destroyed. The Dutch lose about fifty killed and another fifty captured during this incident. The captives are later freed by Peter Stuyvesant who pays ransom.

1655 - Indians - The Susquehannock, lacking any further aid from the Swedes and having sustained great losses from smallpox request a peace with the Mohawks. By the following year, peace is secured.

1655 - Colonies - Spanish Florida - By about this time, due to the Spanish Franciscan missionaries, there are more than 25,000 Indians (Apalachee, Timucua and Yamasee) that have converted to Christianity.

1656 - Western New York - The French establish Fort Sate. Marie in the vicinity of Syracuse near Onondaga Lake. The fort holds troops and Jesuits who work to convert the Indians to Christianity and remains active for about two years.

1656 - Colonies - Virginia - At about this time a group of Indians (origin unknown) establish themselves in the vicinity of the falls of the James River at Piedmont. These Indians become known by the Powhattan as Ricahecrian.

May 10 1656 - New France - Indians - Iroquois (Mohawks) attack the Hurons on Island of Orleans

in the vicinity of Quebec. The raid devastates the Hurons. More than seventy are either killed or captured and of the latter many are women. By the early part of the following month, the Hurons who had inhabited the island since 1651 again return to the security of Quebec. Subsequently, the Hurons sue for peace. The Mohawks grant peace with a stipulation that the Hurons by the following spring depart Quebec and relocate within Mohawk land.

Spring 1657 - New France - Indians - A group of Mohawks arrive at Quebec to seek the Hurons who the previous year agreed to relocate with the Mohawks; however, the Hurons (Clan of the Cord) in fear refuse to depart from the security of Quebec. The Rock Clan (Arendarrhonons) follow the Mohawks and inhabit the region of Onondage (New York) and the Bear-Hawks blend in with the Mohawks. In conjunction, the Rock-Clan (Christians depart Quebec for Montreal during June.

June 16 1657 - New France - Indians - About fifty Hurons (Rock-Clan Christians), leave Quebec for Montreal to be met there by Mohawks who will take them into their territory. Once there they depart Montreal on 16 July, accompanied by a Jesuit, Father Ragueneau en route for the land of the Onondagas, guided by Seneca and Onondaga. During August, Father Le Moyne accompanies a second group of the Rock Clan. Both parties are betrayed by the Mohawks.

1657 - The Oneidas murder three Frenchmen; the French retaliate by seizing Indians.

1658-1659 - Colonies - The corporation of Amsterdam by purchases from the Indians extends its jurisdiction to Cape Henlopen, Delaware; it governs oppressively, and the colonists in large numbers flee to the English colonies, leaving about thirty families within the Dutch territory.

1659 - Colonies - In New Netherlands, the ongoing argument about the west bank of the Delaware Bay still causes ill feelings between the Dutch and the English in Maryland. Maryland claims the land, but Stuyvesant is unrelenting, and claims the Dutch had a prior claim. In other activity, the Indians, having been introduced to liquor known as "poisonous fire water," by both purchase and by receiving an abundance of complimentary jugs, become unruly. Following the killings of some settlers by the intoxicated Indians, the Dutch seek retaliation. These incidents take lives on both sides and the skirmishes continue until peace is agreed upon during the following year. Subsequently, during 1663, the Indians, referred to as savages by the colonists, seek revenge for the previous incident when the Dutch sent captive Indians to the West Indies to be sold as slaves.

1659 - Colonies - New Netherlands (New York) - Hostilities break out between the Dutch colonists and Indians at Esopus (Kingston).

1660 - Colonies Maryland - Indians - Subsequent to an attack by the Oneida (Iroquois Confederation) against the Piscataways, war is declared by Maryland against the Iroquois. At this time, the Susquehannock are also friendly towards Maryland. All the while, the relationship between the Dutch and the English is less than friendly and this new conflict with a Dutch ally (Iroquois) does little to decrease tension. Essentially, the Iroquois intend to drive the Susquehannocks from the region and the English will enjoy nothing better than driving both the Iroquois and the Dutch from the area.

July 1660 - Colonies - New Netherlands (New York) - The Dutch sign a treaty with the Indians terminating a conflict which had begun the previous year (First Esopus War).

1661 - Colonies - Georgia - Indians from Virginia attack the mission of Santa Domingo de Talaje near present-day Darien, Georgia. The people who survive the raid move to St. Simon's Island near the border with Florida.

1662 - Indians - Hostilities break out between the Mohawks and Mahickans.

March 13th 1662 - The Yeopim Indians grant "Durant's Neck," (Wikacome) on Albemarle Sound,

North Carolina, to George Durant. This, his second purchase is acquired from a Yeopin named Kilcocanen. Durant and his wife Ann who have arrived here from Virginia call their Plantation Wicocombe. Durant, a mariner by trade, spends much time out at sea, but his wife Ann tends to the plantation. In conjunction, the Durant's home as a key part of the colony is often utilized as a court house during what is known as Carolina's proprietary period. The Plantation is also used to hold some meetings of the Assembly.

March 2nd 1663 - Colonies - In Massachusetts at Cambridge, John Eliot publishes the Old Testament (his translation) into the dialect of the Massachusetts' Indians.

1663 - (Indians) - The Iroquois, allied with the Dutch, launch a large attack against the Susquehannock who are allied with the English at Maryland. The Susquehannock (known in Pennsylvania as Conestoga) inhabit territory stretching from the northern part of the Chesapeake Bay through Maryland, Pennsylvania and the southern part of New York. The Iroquois, attack the primary village, Sasquesahanough in the Susquehanna Valley. The fierce attack is repelled, but the hostilities continue for about ten years. In conjunction, the Iroquois are also at war with the French.

June-September 1663 - New Netherlands (New York) - The Esopus attempt to evict the Dutch which ignites the Second Esopus War (1663-1664). The Massapequa Indians (less than fifty braves) support the Dutch against the Esopus. towards the latter part of the war. On 7 June, about two-hundred Indians attack the Dutch settlements at Esopus (Kingston) and a new settlement (New Dorp) there in Ulster County, New York. The New Village is devastated and afterwards the Indians already in Kingston ravage it, but only about twelve houses are destroyed.. In the meantime, many of the men who are working in the fields rush back to the area. Slightly more than twenty including four women and two children are killed with the demise of some of the women and children coming from being burned to death. The Indians also seize more than forty women and children and one man as captives. During early September, the a contingent of Dutch from Fort Wiltwyck attack the Indians at their positions and rescue about thirty "Christian prisoners.

1664 - Colonies - By this date many English from Connecticut have settled in New Netherlands, and as many Negroes had been imported, in proportion to population, as had occurred in Virginia. The new Dutch diet (board) demands protection against the Indians from Governor Stuyvesant. Also, the colony raises slight insurrection against the rule of the Dutch West India Company. Also, William Berkeley, the Governor of Virginia, threatens hostilities.

May 1664 - The Dutch consummate a treaty with the Esopus Indians ending the Second Esopus War.

September 5th 1664 - An English Armada, composed of three Ships and about six hundred troops, sails into New Amsterdam and demands surrender. Colonel Nichols, Colonel George Cartwright, Sir Robert Carr and Samuel Maverick, appointed commissioners, are with the Flotilla. Initially, Peter Stuyvesant protests, exclaiming that the land is Dutch territory, but Colonel Nichols repeats his surrender demand, explaining that to do otherwise would cause great loss of life. He attempts to raise resistance; however, the visible strength of the English seems sufficiently intimidating, even without firing a volley. Stuyvesant, having spent many years in the military, reluctantly capitulates, handing New Amsterdam to the English without a fight. The English extend no harm too the inhabitants and guarantee their liberties. New Amsterdam is renamed New York by the English in honor of James, the Duke of York. Dutch-held Fort Amsterdam is renamed Fort James. In conjunction, Peter Stuyvesant does return to Holland, but in awhile, he returns to New York and chooses to reside there. Colonel Nichols is appointed governor of New York. He becomes seriously

annoyed at the appointment of Carteret as Governor of New Jersey, believing Carteret would interfere with his authority. Also, settlers on Long Island at Hempstead claim title to the Matinecock lands, but Governor Nichols requires proof of their claim and none is forthcoming. Subsequently, the Indians still lose their land by selling what was not yet taken for an insignificant amount of wampum during 1676. The settlers gain the area bounded on the south by the Hempstead Plains on the north by the Sound and on the east and west by Oyster Bay Bounds and Muscoto Cove (Glen Cove) respectively. Afterwards, large numbers of the remaining Matinecocks join with the Montauks, Poosapatucks and Shinnecoeks.

1665 - Vermont - The French establish Fort St. Anne on the Isle La Motte on Lake Champlain near Hubbardton, Vermont across the lake from Ticonderoga, New York. The French utilize the fort until the following year as a defense against the Mohawk Indians. Subsequently, it is used by the English in Colonial times and the Americans hold it for a while during the time they hold Fort Ticonderoga.

1665 - France - New World - The French found Castine on Penobscot Bay, Maine. Also, the French have established a Fort on the site of Bangor. Also, the Company of the Hundred Associates founded during 1627 abandons its charter (New France), essentially terminating its rule. A new government is established in Canada. M de Courcelle becomes governor. In other activity, a party of French from Canada, under Governor Courcelle, reach Schenectady, New York. In other activity, Father Claude Allouez travels to Chegoimegon Bay where he establishes the La Pointe Mission in an area inhabited by the Chippewa Indians.

April 1665 - William Goulding and several others, with the approval of Governor Nicolls, obtain from the Indians a deed of the land that encompasses the area from Sandy Hook to Raritan River, N. J. Initially, it is named East Albania; three towns are soon begun. Also, the two proprietaries of New Jersey create a popular assembly. They grant lands at a quit-rent of 1/2d. an acre, not payable until 1670. Additionally, a bounty of 75 acres is offered on the importation of each able slave. During August, Philip Carteret is received as Governor. The capital is to be Elizabethtown (named after Lady Carteret); presently it contains four houses. Nicolls protests in vain against the division of his province, by the separation of New Jersey from New York. Also, Colonists from New Haven, Connecticut establish a settlement along the Passaic River and they obtain the Indian title to the site of Newark, N.J.

1666 - Colonies - Indians - The Metoac once a primary tribe in New York now numbers less than 1,000 on Long Island and these are being urged to relocate to reservations laid out recently by the English. Also, at about this time, the Senecas request that the French provide Jesuit missionaries. Later during 1668, Father Jacques Fremin at the Seneca villae of Totiakton.

1666 - New France - Father Pierre Claude Allouez arrives at the western tip of Lake Superior where he is introduced to the Sioux who inform him of the existence of the Mississippi River. Allouez also works among the Sauk, Fox and Illinois.

September 1666 - Vermont - A large contingent of French troops supported by Huron Indians depart Fort Ste. Anne aboard several hundred boats (canoes and bateaux) on a campaign to destroy the Mohawk Indians along the Mohawk River.

1667 - Colonies - Indians - The Iroquois conclude a peace treaty with the French. In conjunction, smallpox had again struck the Iroquois and this suspension of hostilities with the French give the Iroquois more warriors to engage the Susquehannock with whom hostilities continue.

1670 - New Mexico - The Ute Indians agree to a treaty with the Spanish, but relations between the Indians and the Spanish later deteriorate. By 1680, a major revolt occurs.

1672 - Canada - American Colonies - Louis De Buade Frontenac is made governor of Canada. He initiates the construction of Fort Frontenac (now Kingston) at the mouth of Lake Ontario. Two missionaries, Allouez and Dablon explore the country west of Lake Michigan (Wisconsin and Illinois). In conjunction, Frontenac is able to maintain a good relationship with the Iroquois Indians.

May - September 1673 - France - New World - Two Jesuit priests, Fathers Jacques Marquette and Louis Joliet following a journey on Lake Michigan arrive at Green Bay where the Folles-Avoines nation (Menomonies) inhabits the area. While traveling further they encounter other tribes. From Green Bay, they descend the Fox River (encounter Miamis and Kickapoo) to the Wisconsin River and to their surprise discover the northern Mississippi and the Des Moines Rivers (encounter Illinois Indians) into Iowa and from there to the mouth of the Pekitanoni Missouri to the Ouabouskigon (Ohio River). Continuing further they reach the Akansea also called Quapaw at the mouth of the Arkansas, but here the natives appear hostile. Following some apparently eloquent dialog, they are able to escape harm. About the middle of July, they head back, moving up the Illinois River to reach Green Bay, Lake Michigan during September. On the return trip, Marquette encounters the Kaskaskia Indians. Father Joliet then returns to Quebec to proclaim the new discoveries.

1674 - By this date the Pokanokets in Rhode Island have been corralled into the necks of land now called Bristol and Tiverton. They discover that by their own hand they have deprived themselves of their lands and been pushed to the sea "by their own legal contracts." King Philip, their chief, on the information of Sausaman that he is inciting the Indians to war is summoned by the colonists to submit to examination. King Philip appears at Plymouth and protests his innocence. This infuriates his tribe and in retaliation, the informer, Sausaman, is killed.

1675 - Colonies - Pennsylvania - Indians - The Susquehannock are driven out of Pennsylvania by the Iroquois terminating a conflict which began during 1663. In conjunction, the Susquehannock with the approval of the governor of Maryland relocate along the Potomac to the dismay of the colonists there. Subsequently, following some incident not proven to be done by the Susquehannock, militia arrive to evict them. To attempt to prove their non-violent status, some sachems are given to the militia as hostages. Nonetheless, again some settlers are attacked (no certainty of tribe involved) while the militia is en route to their land, prompting the militia to summarily execute the hostages. Consequently, the area again burst with violence as the Susquehannock retaliate and raid the colonists lands in Maryland and Virginia. In conjunction, the colonists then swiftly strike back against the Susquehannock and the Pamunkey and Occaneechee, the latter two allies of the English who also receive blame for the raids.

June 1675 - At Plymouth, those accused of killing Sausaman during the previous year are tried. The murderers are tried by a jury, half Indian, half white and finds them guilty. They are then hanged. Following this, some of the younger men of the tribe then set out and kill 8 or 9 colonists at Swansea, R. I.. Consequently, "King Philip's War" breaks out. It spreads to other tribes and continues for more than one year, all the while New England remains in a state a state of alarm and terror. The white population of New England is 55,000; the Indian, 30,000. Brookfield, Deerfield, and Springfield are burnt; but the Narragansetts are nearly exterminated by the colonists under Josiah Winslow, the Governor of Plymouth. During October, the war spreads to Maine in consequence of outrages committed by sailors against the Indians. Saco, Scarborough, Wells, Kittery, Oyster River settlement, Berwick, Salmon Falls, Dover, and Exeter suffer from depredations or the tomahawk.

1675 - Father Pierre Jacques Marquette travels to Kaskaskia (Illinois) to preach the Gospel to the

Indians. He establishes the initial mission in Illinois, the mission of the Immaculate Conception (Blessed Mother) at a site near present-day Utica, Illinois in La Salle County. During his return trip to Mackinaw, on the 18th of May, a river is discovered. Father Marquette pauses and while there says Mass. Afterwards, he is discovered dead where he had gone to pray for awhile. He is buried there in the sand near the mouth of the river. The river in Michigan is named "Marquette," Several years later, his body is transferred to St. Ignace. In conjunction, Fathers Allouez and Gravier respectively will follow Marquette to the mission in Illinois.

September 1675 - Maine Indians attack Saco Maine. Some settlers are killed, but recently established Phillips' Garrison commanded by Major Philipps repulses the assault. By the following month, militia from Massachusetts are ordered to move to Saco to bolster the area. In conjunction, Fort Jocelyn (Jocelyn House) at Blackpoint was not garrisoned by seasoned troops, rather the workers of Capt. Scottow and some settlers, but their force had been insufficient to advance in relief of the defenders at Saco. Scottow is blamed by some for not sending aid. In conjunction, to deal with the hostilities, Major Walderne deploys about sixty troops spread about three fortified houses (forts) in the area including Saco, Falmouth and Scarborough at Forts (or fortified houses) Scottow, Sheldon and Foxwell respectively.

September 2 1675 - Massachusetts - Indians under King Philip raid Northfield, Massachusetts. Slightly less than ten settlers are killed, but others make it to the safety of the fort. Reinforcements arrive near the settlement on the following day, however they are ambushed and more than twenty of the militia force are killed. The remainder escape. Several days later, a larger militia force moves to Northfield and the settlement is abandoned. The inhabitants move to Hadley. In conjunction, the Indians destroy the fort and soon after use the site for their operations.

October 1675 - Maine - Indians attack a small party near Scarborough. Two men are killed. In addition, another ambush occurs and a party is surrounded by more than eighty Indians. This ambush is broken when reinforcements on the opposite side of the river rescue them and drive the Indians away.

1676 - Massachusetts King Philip's War - Falls Fight - Colonists under Captain William Turner devastate a force of Pocumtuck Indians at Turner's Falls (later Bernardston). Turner is killed during the fighting near Deerfield Meadow and afterwards the colonists retire under Captain Holyoke and according to reports from the field, it is his leadership skills that prevent a general catastrophe. About thirty colonists including Turner are killed. Indian losses are estimated at about 200.

1676 - King Philip's War in New England is terminated by the defeat of the Indians. An expedition from Massachusetts, under Major Waldron, treacherously entraps 350 Indians at Cocheco (Dover), N.H., and ships them to Boston to be sold into foreign slavery. Canonchet, chief of the Narragansetts, is taken prisoner during April and he is executed. Shortly thereafter on the 9th of May at Turner's Falls, the Indians are defeated. Later on the 3rd of August, Philip's wife and son are captured, but Philip remains aloof. However, shortly thereafter Philip is shot by an Indian. Philip's son is sold into slavery and sent to Bermuda. John Eliot, a missionary, is able to save some of the tribes from extermination. Lancaster, Medfield, Weymouth, Groton, Marlborough, and Warwick had been burnt The total loss to the colonists is about 12 or 13 towns, with 600 houses, burnt, one family in 20 being burnt out. In addition, the colonists lose more than 600 men killed. The financial cost of the war had been \$500,000.

1676 - Maine - War with the Indians continues in Maine. The Indians destroy nearly one-half the

settlements. During August, one woman, Anne Brackett, seized by Indians at Falmouth (Casco), escapes from the Indians by sneaking across Casco Bay in a small boat. In other activity, Edward Randolph (agent of Mason and the Privy Council) arrives in New England with a royal message requiring submission and a demand that the colony dispatch representatives to England to respond to concern of the heirs of John Mason and of Sir Fernando Gorges. Massachusetts reluctantly yields, but it sends its agents to England to protest. In conjunction, Randolph retains a hostile attitude toward the Massachusetts Bay Company and he harbors a particular dislike of the Puritans.

1676 - Massachusetts - Maine - Fort Pemaquid (also known as Shurte's Fort) is destroyed by the Indians. The settlers had earlier abandoned it and escaped to safety. The fort is reconstructed and renamed Fort Charles. Later during 1689, it is destroyed by the French.

August 1676 - New Jersey is partitioned following an agreement reached between Philip Carteret and the Quakers of Salem. The northern section, "East New Jersey" goes to Carteret and the southern sector, "West New Jersey," is received by the Quakers. At the latter, the Quakers immediately find their relationship with the Delaware Indians as extremely friendly.

1676 - In Virginia, the colonists and the Indians continue to engage in warfare. The Indians still raid and destroy the Plantations. In other activity, a conflict between Governor Berkeley and the colonists in Kent County under Nathaniel Bacon leads to "the Grand Rebellion." The Colonists had without success requested more protection against the Indians and relief from extremely high taxes. The assembly passes encouraging legislation on the 4th of July, 100 years prior to the Declaration of Independence. During August, Berkeley retires across the Delaware River and is deposed. Sir Henry Chicheley is selected as Governor. In the meantime, Berkeley gathers a force of men in Accomack and returns to Jamestown on the 8th of September to regain power. However, the troops that accompany him desert, rather than fight. Consequently Bacon takes no chances; he burns Jamestown, a village composed of less than twenty houses. In conjunction, Bacon succumbs on the 1st of October and with his death, the insurrection ends. Royalists under Robert Beverley, defeat the rebels; Thomas Hansford a survivor is seized and hanged. In conjunction, during the hostilities, the colonists aligned with Nathaniel Bacon confiscate the home of the Allen family and turn it into their headquarters. In conjunction, the house, known afterwards as Bacon's Castle is later recaptured.

1677 - Colonies - Indians - The Esopus Indians conclude an agreement with the Huguenots trading land in New York for goods from Europe.

1677 - England-Colonies - The Privy Council decides against the claim of Massachusetts to Maine and New Hampshire, and revives the proprietary rights. However, during May, Massachusetts buys Gorges's rights in Maine for £1250. Meanwhile, France, under the Treaty of Breda, holds the district between the St Croix and the Penobscot Rivers and the Duke of York holds the territory between the Penobscot and the Kennebec. Consequently, Massachusetts now holds only the terrain between the Kennebec and the Piscataqua Rivers. In other activity, a fort (Fort Charles) is constructed at Pemaquid (Bristol), Maine, as further protection against Indians as the village was destroyed the previous year.

1677 - 1687 Illinois - Father Allouez arrives at the Mission of the Immaculate Conception in Illinois and continues to work among the Indians there until 1679 when Robert Cavalier Sieur de La Salle arrives and the mission is handed from the Jesuits to the Recollect priests, Fathers Gabriel de la Ribourde and Zenobius Membres. In conjunction, Indian attacks threaten the mission, particularly the Iroquois. However, Father Ribourde is killed by the Kickapoo and soon after the work of the

Recollects comes to an end there. Later during 1784, the Jesuits (Father Allouez) arrives again during 1684 and remains there until 1687.

1678 - Treaties of amity are ratified between the Quakers of West New Jersey and the Indians.

1678 - England - Colonies - Edmund Andros returns to New York from England with instructions to continue the customs duties and to enforce the Duke of York's (James, later James II) claim over New Jersey under the charter of 1674. As Governor of Sagadahoc, Maine, he makes peace with the Indians during April on terms satisfactory to the Indians, which acknowledge their superiority. He claims that East New Jersey Vessels should pay dues at New York; Philip Carteret refuses and Andros has him arrested; however, following a trial he is acquitted by a New York jury. Andros' agent at Newcastle, Delaware exacts customs of Ships heading to West New Jersey, but in these instances, the Quaker settlers remonstrate, and force the question, referring it to arbitration. Sir William Jones, a distinguished attorney, decides against the Duke of York and in favor of West New Jersey. At this time, the province of New York contains about 20,000 people, 8000 of them residing on Manhattan Island.

1680 - New Spain - New Mexico Region - The Indians under Spanish domination rebel (Pueblo Revolt). The Spanish are unable to quell the rebellion and instead are forced from New Mexico. Spanish forces no not return for more than ten years, and in the meantime, the various Indian tribes (Apaches, Comanches and Utes) begin to join forces against the Spaniards.

May - 1682 - William Penn publishes a frame of government for Pennsylvania, which remains subject to the approval of the colonists; he obtains from the Duke of York an assignment of his claims to Delaware, and the Swedish settlements at Tinicum and the surrounding area. Penn embarks from England on September 1st and arrives at Newcastle on the 27th of October. Upon arrival, he is heartily welcomed by the English settlers at Chester. Shortly thereafter, during November, while at Shackamaxon (now Kensington), he and the Lenni Lenape Indians sign a treaty of peace. Penn then lays the blueprint for the city of Philadelphia, which he founds during the following year.

1683 - Colonies - Indians - New York - The Wappinger Indians conclude an agreement with the Huguenots that calls for the trading of land for European goods.

1684 - Colonies - Scottish colonists at Stuarts Town in southern Carolina initiates friendly relations with the Yamassees under Chief Altamaha and later the Indians are supplied with firearms.

1684 - At about this time, Jesuit priests arrive at the St. Joseph River in the vicinity of Niles, Michigan to establish a mission there among the Miamis Indians. Later during 1691, a contingent of French troops arrive to construct a fort (Fort Joseph) due to the location which dominates the southern Lake Michigan region. The French also establish Fort La Baye in Green Bay (Wisconsin).

July 1684 - Colonies - In view of an approaching war between the French and the Five Nations, the Governors of New York and Virginia (Dongan and Lord Howard respectively) and the agent of Massachusetts meet the Indian sachems at Albany, and renew peace treaties.

1687 - France-Colonies - During January, Robert Cavelier Sieur de La Salle leaves twenty men at Fort St. Louis (Matagorda Bay, Texas) and departs with the remainder for Canada. While en route, a mutiny occurs during February and during the violent incident, La Salle and his nephew are slain while the party is traveling along the Trinity River during March. Shortly thereafter, Duhaut one of the men who killed La Salle and another mutineer are slain during a squabble over the spoils. The six surviving conspirators remain with the Indians. The remainder including La Salle's brother and Joutel continue the trek. They reach the Mississippi River near the mouth the Arkansas River on

July 24th and discover a conspicuous cross, which had earlier been constructed by Tonti, and another man who had descended the river, and established a post there. The party then continues on and while traveling up the river they discover a Garrison at Fort St. Louis on the Illinois River. In conjunction, nearly all of the twenty men who had remained behind at Fort St. Louis at Matagorda Bay are killed by the Clamcoet Indians.

1687 - Colonies - During January, Edmund Andros dissolves the government of Rhode Island. Subsequently, Indians attack Castine (Maine) which ignites war between the Colonists and the Indians of Maine. Also, during October, Andros travels to Connecticut and demands that the government surrender the charter; however, William Wadsworth, of Hartford, conceals the charter on the Wyllys' property (Hartford) in an oak tree known as "Charter Oak." Nonetheless, Andros assumes control of the government and writes the word "Finis" to the records of the colony. In conjunction, one man, Increase Mather, embarks for England to complain to the Crown about Andros' methods of governing. It is claimed that the "Connecticut Charter" was a blueprint for the Constitution of the United States. It was modeled after the "Fundamental Orders," written by a minister, Reverend Thomas Hooker and other colonists during 1639, following their relocation in Connecticut from Massachusetts.

1687 - Colonies - Spanish Florida - Hostilities again erupt between the Yamasee and the Spanish as well as the Christian Indians (Timucus and Apalachee). In conjunction, the Yamasee, apparently incited by the English, relocate into the southern part of the Carolinas; however, later during 1715, the Yamasee turn against the English. The English also use the Creeks to raid Florida. The Christian Indians are often seized and removed to the Carolinas where they are sold into slavery. While the Spanish deal with the Yamasee, the Timucus and Apalachee during the following year send a message affirming their loyalty to Charles II, King of Spain.

1687 - Illinois - The Mission of the Immaculate Conception (Utica) is abandoned by Father Alouez, a Jesuit when he is informed that the La Salle expedition is to arrive on its return trip from Texas. The mission remains unattended until the arrival of Father James Gravier, but he remains only temporarily, leaving the mission without a priest until 1692.

July 10-23 1687 - Colonies - Western New York - The French force composed of more than 1,500 French, nearly 1,00 allied Indians and at least several hundred French colonists arrive at Irondequoit Bay. Denonville leaves about 400 troops behind to establish Fort Irondequoit, while the main body moves towards a Seneca Indian village at Gannagaro in the vicinity of Victor. The Seneca village also known as the Genesee Castle lies about 15-17 miles from Rochester. En route, the French devastate villages and destroy many crops. The French attack the Senecas and inflict a severe defeat. However, the victory at Victor only prompts the Seneca to push themselves towards a close alliance with France's nemesis, England. During the following year, the Iroquois retaliate. An attack is launched from Irondequoit Bay. The Indians move to Montreal to extract vengeance for the Denonville Raid.

1690 - Maine - The French and their Indian allies attack Falmouth Neck (later Portland). Fort Loyall repels the assault initially, but pressure from the French and a five-day siege compels the garrison to capitulate. Despite being promised safety by the French (after surrender), the defenders are murdered by the Indians. The settlement remains abandoned for about ten years.

1690- Colonies - New York - The English establish a settlement (St. Anne's village) in Washington County near Lake Champlain. In conjunction, the area will subsequently be used by the military

during 1692 (King William's War) when a fort (Old Stone Fort) is constructed. English and colonial troops participating in an invasion of Canada move through it and shortly afterwards, during another campaign about two years later the fort is used by the English. However, Queen's Fort (Fort Schuyler) is not established here until 1709.

June 27th 1689 - Colonies - New Hampshire - Baron de St. Gastin, convinces the Indians in Maine to avenge the attack they had sustained during 1676. They massacre twenty-three people, including Major Waldron and they capture twenty-nine at Cocheco (Dover), New Hampshire.

August 1689 - Colonies - Maine - Indians from the Penobscot incited by Baron de St. Gastin attack and overwhelm Fort Charles (formerly Fort Pemaquid near Bristol). In related activity, the Iroquois capture Montreal on 25 August.

August 1689 - The Iroquois launch an attack against Montreal in retaliation for a raid by the French the previous year. The Indians swiftly strike and similarly to their other attacks, terror reigns and those that are captured sometimes fare worse than those who are killed on the spot. The Iroquois on this raid massacre about 200 including women and children and carry about 100 prisoners back with them when they leave the area. The captives are brutally tortured.

September 1689 - Colonies - The New England Colonists conclude a treaty of alliance at Albany with the Mohawks.

1689 - Colonies (Maine-Massachusetts) Fort Charles a wooden fortification at Pemaquid (Bristol), Maine is destroyed during an Indian raid. The fort is rebuilt, using stone, during 1692 and renamed Fort William Henry. Nonetheless, the more sturdy defenses last only about four years due to hostilities with the Indians and the French.

February 8 1690 - Colonies - New York - "Schenectady Massacre"- Governor Count Louis Frontenac, Governor of Canada decides to attack the English provinces. A force composed of Frenchmen and Indians, including D' Iberville seizes Fort Schenectady, a stockaded village composed of about eighty houses and 400 people. Subsequently, during 1704-1705, the English a new fort, named Queen's Fort (also known as Royal Fort) during 1705. Queen's Fort (later Fort Cosby) is reconstructed with stone during 1735. In conjunction, this Queen's Fort is separate from Queen's Fort established at St. Ann's (Washington County) during 1709.

1690 - Colonies - New York - Massachusetts - A French force, led by Hertel, departs from the vicinity of Three Rivers and destroys Salmon Falls village on the Piscataqua. At this point reinforcements arrive from Quebec permitting deeper penetration. During April, the French and Indians successfully assault the settlement and Fort on Casco Bay (Falmouth). Reaction by the Colonists is swift, but not especially effective. The General Court of Massachusetts calls for and receives a congress of delegates which arrive from other Colonies during May. The conference convenes in New York and it is decided that an offensive to seize Canada and Acadia, but friction on the execution of the plan creates division. An attack by sea is planned and executed, but the Commanding Officer, Sir William Phipps, lacks the skills to ensure success. Phipps' force arrives at Quebec on October 16th, but upon discovering that the French are prepared and expecting their arrival, he aborts the attack and retires without a fight.

1691 - Arizona - The Mission San Cayetano de Tumacacori is established at the *Pimeria Alta* by a Jesuit priest, Father Eusebio Francisco Kino. The appearance of the mission is at the request of the Pica Indians. Subsequently, during 1751, the Indians rebel due to mistreatment by the Spanish and soon after a presidio (Tubac Presidio) is established to protect the mission from any hostile Pica or Apache Indians. The Spanish (not the clergy) essentially had forced the Picas to labor in the

mines and on the Spaniard's property.

1691 - Florida - - The Spanish mission San Juan de Guacara along the Swanee River (Florida) is attacked and destroyed by Uchise Creek Indians, allies of the English.

1691 - Michigan - The French establish Fort St. Joseph, a trading post at Niles, Michigan. It remains under French control until 1761 when the British seize it.

1691 - New York - The English establish a fort (Fort Half-Moon) for the Schaghticoke Indians along the west bank of the Hudson River at Waterford (Saratoga County). It is located on or near the site of a previous fort constructed for the same purpose during 1669. The fort becomes dilapidated by the early 1700s and it is again partially reconstructed. Subsequently, during 1757, the fort is relocated nearby and constructed on pilings at a place, close to the convergence of the Hudson and Mohawk Rivers. The fort is inactive by the War for Independence. Fort Half-Moon is also in close proximity to Haver's (Pebble Island) Island, where the colonials establish positions during 1777. Also, the English establish a fort at Fort's Ferry near Mill Creek less than fifteen miles from Albany along the Mohawk River's south bank. The fort is known by several names, Fort Niskayuna, Fort Canastagone and Fort Nistigone. The fort becomes dilapidated and is abandoned about 1704. Also, Fort James (initially Fort George and later Dutch-held Fort Amsterdam until 1664 and temporarily Dutch-held Fort Willem Hendick 1673-1674) in New York City is again renamed. The British rename it Fort William Henry during 1691. In conjunction, during 1703 it receives another name, Fort Anne (Queen's Fort) and then, during 1714 it is named Fort George, which it retains until 1790, when the fort is destroyed during 1790.

January 1692 - Colonies Massachusetts - Maine - The French and Indians take York (Maine), and kill or capture the Colonists. The English rebuild Fort Charles (formerly Fort Pemaquid) at Bristol and again rename it, Fort William Henry. During 1696, the fort will again come under attack by the French. In other activity, the English conclude an agreement of peace with the Abenakis; however, the Indians, before a year passes, will reinstate hostilities. The Indians have reportedly been encouraged to wage war by the Jesuits. In conjunction, Father Rasles, a Jesuit missionary departs Maine for Mackinaw.

1692 - Colonel Benjamin Fletcher is appointed Governor of New York. He succeeds Henry Sloughter. The design is revived of extending N.Y. from the Connecticut River to Delaware Bay. N.Y. petitions the king that the other colonies should contribute to its defense against the French and Indians. William III. claims command of the militia as a part of the royal prerogative, and confers that of New Jersey and Connecticut on Fletcher. Penn, accused of being hostile to the English revolution, is deprived of the proprietorship of Pennsylvania, which is made a royal province with Fletcher as governor.

1692 - 1832 - Illinois - A Jesuit, Father Sebastian Rasle arrives at the Mission of the Immaculate Conception at Utica in La Salle County. The mission, empty since 1687, begins anew with the Jesuits working to convert the Indians. The mission is relocated at Kaskaskia along the Kaskaskia River about ten years after Rasle's arrival and he is remembered as the founder of Kaskaskia. Although he is slain by a Peoria brave during 1706, the Jesuits remain fully active until just prior to the American War for Independence, 1772 when the Jesuits come under duress by the French government. Subsequently priests other than Jesuits continue to work with the Indians until they relinquish their lands to Illinois during 1832 and are compelled to abandon Illinois for Oklahoma.

1693 - France - James Fitzjames, Duke of Berwick (illegitimate son of England's King James II), becomes a Lieutenant General in the French Army of King Louis XIV. He will later seize Nice

(French Riviera) from Eugene of Savoy during 1706, during the ongoing conflict (War of Spanish Succession) and be promoted to Marshal of France.

1693 - New France - Colonies - A Jesuit priest, Father Rasles departs Mackinaw for Illinois where he will remain for two years working as a missionary. Also, Father Gravier begins to work with the Illinois Indians and he later founds Kaskaskia.

July 18 1694 - Colonies - New Hampshire - A contingent of French and Indians led by de Villies crosses from Canada into New Hampshire and attacks the English settlements near the Oyster River. It is estimated that the raid (King William's War) inflicts about 100 casualties including killed and captured. The Indians devastate the area and destroy five Garrison Houses in Durham and a large number of homes.

1695 - New Spain - Arizona - Indians at Caborca and Tubutama rebel against the Spanish. The Spaniards crush the insurrection, but with extremely harsh pressure.

September 1695 - Massachusetts - Two young boys, Isaac and Joseph Whitaker are seized by Indians at Haverhill, Massachusetts and taken to New Hampshire. Later during spring of the following year, the older brother Isaac plans and makes good an escape. He and his brother arrive at Fort Saco in Maine during July.

1696 - Western New York - During a campaign against the Onondaga Indians in the vicinity of Syracuse, New York, the French establish Fort French, intended to last only until the termination of the campaign.

March 1697 - Colonies - In Massachusetts, a woman, Hannah Dustin, of Haverhill, Massachusetts, along with her child and her nurse are seized by Indians and taken to Concord, however, during their captivity, they escape after killing the guards and stealing a canoe.

January 1699 - France- Colonies - Pierre Le Moyne De' Iberville arrives off the coast of Florida. His force moves to Mississippi and erects some primitive housing on Ship Island, Mississippi. During February-March, he discovers the Pascagoula River. Subsequently, during April, his force advances to the Mississippi River. While on this expedition, a letter which had been penned by Robert Cavalier Sieur de La Salle during 1684 and given to Tonti is discovered. Fortunately, the letter has been preserved by the Indians. The expedition soon after returns to the Gulf. The town of Biloxi is established during May, initiating the future State of Mississippi. He also moves about Mobile Bay where he comes across an island which is named Massacre Island after the party discovers many skeletons. Subsequently, during 1707, the French rename the island calling it Dauphin Island. D'Iberville embarks for France, but he leaves his brothers, Sauvolle and Jean Baptiste le Moyne sieur de Bienville in command. Bienville explores the forks of the Mississippi River. His party descends the river and during September, his force encounters an English Ship of 16-guns at a spot later called "English Turn." At this time, the English, determining that the French had been there prior to their arrival, reverse course and depart the area.

Early 1700s - New Spain - Colorado - New Mexico - At about this time, the Spanish in New Mexico come under attack by Apaches and Comanche Indians. Subsequently, during 1706, a Spanish expeditionary force under Juan de Ulibarri moves into Colorado, but the raids are not eliminated. Later other expeditions move to end the Indian raids including 1716, 1720 and 1724, but all fail to terminate the hostilities.

1700 - Colonies - In New York, the Colonists are not too fond of Catholics, based on the concept that the Jesuits have been instigators that pushed the Indians into hostilities against the Colonists. The assembly passes a bill that legalizes the hanging of every Popish (Catholic) priest who arrives

in the province.

1702 - Colonies - Georgia - (Battle of Flint) - Florida - During May, a Creek force attacks Santa Fe de Teleco a Spanish mission in the north central part of Florida. Afterwards a group of about 800 Christian Indians and Spanish troops led by Captain Francisco Romo Uriza advance to strike the Creeks, under Achito, but en route at the lower Flint River near Bainbridge, Georgia in southwestern Georgia an ambush is sprung which devastates the Spanish-Indian force. The Spanish mission at A force of English and some Indian allies (Creeks led by Achito) engage and defeat a Spanish force under Captain Francisco Romo Uriza in the vicinity of Bainbridge, Georgia. The forces of Uriza lose more than 500 killed or captured, giving the English a solid victory in the Mississippi valley that puts the brakes on Spanish advances. Subsequently, the English from the Carolinas under James Moore strike the Spanish at St. Augustine. The mission there and those at Guale and Mocama are burned.

1702 - Colonies - New York - Colonel Schuyler establishes Fort Saratoga at Schuylersville (Saratoga County) on the Hudson River below Fish Kill Creek. The structure is constructed where a blockhouse known as Fort Vrooman was built during the Winthrop Expedition. The fort remains operational including reconstruction during 1721 until 1744 when it comes under the sweeping horde of French and Indians that advance towards the capital, Albany. Subsequently during 1746, a third fort, Fort Clinton is established here.

June 1703 - Colonies - The Abenakis confer with Governor Dudley of Massachusetts, at Casco, Maine, and they inform him that they are peaceful, however, within about six weeks, hostilities erupt as forces composed of both French and Indians launch strikes against Casco and every other garrison stretching from there to Wells.

March 1704 - Colonies - In Massachusetts, Hertel de Rouville, a Frenchman, leads Indians on a raid against Deerfield, Massachusetts. The town is torched and nearly fifty Colonists are killed. In addition, the Indians seize more than 100 captives.

December 15th 1705 - Colonies - Troops led Governor Moore of Southern Carolina, moves through Georgia and engages the Spaniards and Indians along the gulf in the vicinity of St. Mark's, Florida. The battle ends with a victory for the Carolinians and in addition, it isolates the Spaniards at St. Augustine, preventing them from hooking up with the French in Louisiana. In conjunction, France and Spain are allied against England and the others in the Grand Alliance (War of Spanish Succession in Europe). Moore's victory establishes England's claim to Georgia.

1706 - Colonies - Jean Baptiste Bissot, Lord of Vincennes, on behalf of France at about this time establishes a trading post at Kekionga (present day Fort Wayne, Indiana) in the territory of the Miami Indians. Catholic missionaries arrive later to attempt conversion of the Indians. During 1712, the French construct Fort St. Philippe (also Fort Miamis) along the banks of the St. Mary's River to defend against possible English incursions. After about ten years of cordial relations between the Miami and the French, the British influence had taken root and with it the Indians under Chief La Damoiselle are convinced to attack the fort. The fort is torched, but the most of the garrison escapes capture. A new fort will be built during 1750 as the French realize the importance of the control there of the three rivers there. The St. Mary's and the St. Joseph's Rivers converge to form the Maumee River; the latter flows northeast to Lake Erie. And from Lake Erie lies the route through the Great Lakes to the Atlantic Ocean. Fort St. Philippe also lies within close proximity to the tributary of the Mississippi River, the Wabash, giving the French access to the Gulf of Mexico.

1711 - Colonies - In Northern Carolina, due to the aid of Governor Spotswood of Virginia who

dispatched troops to aid Governor Edward Hyde, the rebellion (“Cary’s Rebellion”) which had begun the previous year under former Governor Thomas Cary is terminated. During September, German and Swiss refugees (Palatines) from the Rhine and Nectar who have emigrated to the Carolinas receive lands of the Tuscaroras from the proprietaries; however, the deed is not looked upon favorably by the Indians. New Berne (Chattooka) along the Neuse River is founded by the Swiss. During September, the agent of the refugees, De Graffenried has the unfortunate luck of being captured by Indians, along with another man, John Lawson. Lawson (surveyor) is killed and various reports differ on how he was killed, but there were no witnesses. In conjunction, the Tuscaroras and another Indian tribe, the Corees, attack the Huguenots (French Protestants) at Bath on Pamlico Sound. The Indians continue to go on the rampage and between the 22nd and 25th of September they strike additional settlements, including Roanoke and the colonies at both Pamlico and Albemarle Sounds. In conjunction, troops, under Barnwell, from South Carolina lend support by assaulting the Indian stronghold along the Neuse River (present day Craven County), but the Indians repulse the attack. Subsequently, the Colonists and the Indians reach a settlement and gain a truce, but it last only a while as the Soldiers from South Carolina ignore the treaty, prompting the Indians to again launch raids and massacre the Colonists who still remain in the vicinity of the Neuse River. Also, during the following year, Governor Spotswood is able to make progress with some of the Tuscaroras, which essentially splits them into factions. In conjunction, some Tuscaroras travel to New York and relocate there as a part of the Iroquois.

1712 - Colonies - In Detroit, a French colony, the Indians launch a strong attack, but it is repelled by the French.

1713 - Virginia - At about this time, Governor Spotswood establishes Fort Christanna, thought to have been named for both Jesus Christ and Queen Anne of England. It is constructed in the vicinity of Lawrenceville for added security due to problems with the Indians (Tuscarora) in neighboring North Carolina. In addition to providing security for the colonists, Fort Christanna also afford protection for various friendly tribes in the area. In addition, the governor establishes a school in which the Indians are taught about both English and Christianity, without any interference for teaching the latter by the government. The fort remains active until about 1720, when governor Spotswood decides it is no longer necessary. In conjunction, the tribes that gather at the fort are classified by Spotswood as the “Saponie Nation,” a term chosen by him. The tribes included the Saponi, Eno, Meherrin, Occaneechi and the Tutelo.

March - 1713 - Colonies - In Southern Carolina, Governor Moore leads troops into Northern Carolina and launches an assault against the Indians at a stronghold along the Neuse (Green County). The troops supported by Yamasee Indians, overwhelm the Fort and seize about 800 Indians. Subsequently the hostile Indians are pursued into Hyde County where some vanish into the swamps. In conjunction, during the previous year, then Governor Spotswood had succeeded in settling with a group of the Tuscaroras, but the others who remain hostile emigrate to New York and join with the Five Nations to become the Sixth Nation in the group. Also, the Indians who had been seized as prisoners are sold into slavery.

1714 - Colonies - Frontier - Tennessee - At about this time, a French party establishes a trading post (Charlesville) in Tennessee. The location later becomes known as French Lick the early name for the area around Nashville. This post is followed by others also established by the French who trade with the Indians. By about 1740, the area is abandoned by the French traders.

1715 - Massachusetts - Maine - Fort George is established by the English in the vicinity of Fort

Andros (earlier established about 1688) in the vicinity of present-day Brunswick. Fort George comes under attack by Indians during 1722, but it survives and remains active until about 1737 when it is demolished.

April 1715 - Colonies - The Spanish instigate the Yamassee and Creek Indians to raid the Colonists in South Carolina at Pocotaligo. About ninety Colonists are massacred during the raid. Following this surprise attack, the Indians attempt to overwhelm Charleston. The Colonists, led by the Governor, Charles Craven engage them at Lake Salke-Hatchie. The Indians are handily defeated compelling them to retire to Florida. Nevertheless, the war with the Indians and the nasty governing of the proprietaries sparks the Colonists, which now number only about 400 to rebel in an effort to attain self government, but the actual insurrection does not occur until 1719.

1715 - Colonies - In Northern Carolina, the Indians which have been allies of the Tuscaroras, which have remained in the area, are established as a single settlement in Hyde County. Also, the laws previously enacted by the first assembly of Northern Carolina during 1669 are reinstated.

1715 - The French at about this time establish Fort Phillippe Michilimackinac at the straits that link Lake Huron and Lake Michigan an area inhabited by Ottawa and Chippewa Indians. French presence had been here, but during 1707, Cadillac relocated the garrison to Detroit. The fort is in the identical area where Father Marquette founded a Jesuit mission (St. Ignace) during the period about 1683. The French utilize this fortification to enlarge their fur trade, but control of the fort is lost at the conclusion of the French and Indian War, when the British gain it.

1716-Fort Moore is established at Savannah Town (Beech Island) atop a bluff in the vicinity of the Westobou (later Savannah) River which dominates the western approach to the colony.

1716 - Colonies - In Massachusetts, Samuel Street becomes Governor. In conjunction, the General Court stretches its jurisdiction over Maine taking in the territory extending to the St. Croix. In addition, it reestablishes Fort Pemaquid (Bristol), situated east of the Kennebec River. The area between the St. Croix and the Kennebec Rivers had been claimed by the Abenakis and it is along the Kennebec that Rasles had established a village (Norridgewock) for converted Indians. The Abenakis in reaction to the attempts by Massachusetts to take the land, request the help of Governor Vaudreuil of Canada. The Indians are informed that the Treaty of Utrecht which had compelled France to relinquish much territory to the British did not include their lands. With this information from the French Governor of Canada, Vaudreuil, the Indians protest the claims of the Massachusetts' Colony.

1716 - South Carolina - Fort given new breech-loaded Springfield rifles.

1717 - Colonies Louisiana (Alabama) - The French establish Fort Toulouse (Toulouse aux Alibamons) in Louisiana (Alabama) at a site near the convergence of the Coosa and Tallapoosa Rivers. The fort was known as the Post of Alabama, named after the Indian tribe residing there. French Marines man the post which is used as a trading depot with the Indians. A legend unsubstantiated by fact is that the commandant of the fort, Marchand takes an Indian princess (Sehoy) as his bride during 1720 and from this union follows descendants including Willaim Weatherford (Red Eagle), the Creek warrior chief and another prominent Creek, Alexander McGillivray. The French also establish a frontier fort at Quiatenon (Lafayette, Indiana). Fort Toulouse remains under French control until the close of the French and Indian War when the English take it over (1763). Also, the original fort is rebuilt during 1749. In other activity, the English are operating in Alabama, but the Frenchman Bienville incites the Choctas along the Tombecbee River in Alabama to drive them from the villages.

1717- Colonies - In Massachusetts, the Colonists begin to found an Indian mission in Maine, but unlike the one founded by Rasles, the attempt does not succeed.

1718 - Mississippi - Old Spanish Fort is established by the French under Joseph Simon de la Pointe at Pascagoula. The fort remains under French control until the close of the French and Indian War when it reverts to the British who control it until it is retaken by the Spanish during 1799. In addition, Fort St. Pierre is established on the Yahoo River near Redwood in an effort to improve trade with the Indians that inhabit the area north of the Natchez. Later during 1729, during a conflict with the Natchez Indians, the fort is demolished and left to ruin.

1721 - Colonies - In Massachusetts, the government is holding some Chiefs of the Abenakis whom had been captured in Maine. The Indians react by insisting that the Colonists abandon the lands claimed by the Abenakis and that the Chiefs be immediately released. The demands of the Indians are ignored and in fact the Colonists also capture a half-breed, Baron St. Castin. Instead of compromise, hostilities will emerge.

January 1722 - Colonies-Indians In Massachusetts, Colonists raid the Indian village at Norridgewock, Maine, but there are no Indians in the village. While there, the Colonists confiscate many of Rasles' documents including his interpretive dictionary of the Abenaki language. The Indians strike back by attacking the Colonists at Brunswick, Maine. The situation continues to deteriorate as the government in Massachusetts offers an initial bounty of £15 for an Indian scalp and then boost it to £100 (British pounds).

July 1722 - Colonies - Massachusetts formally declares war ("Lovewell's War.") against the Indians of both Maine and New Hampshire.

September 1722 - Western New York - The British establish Fort Oswego, initially to be utilized as a trading post. Later the fortification, near Lake Ontario at the mouth of the Oswego River is bolstered beginning during 1724 to counteract the French installation, Joncaire's Blockhouse near Niagra. Again during 1727, the English construct a formidable stone house at the fort. The fort becomes known by different names as some refer to it as Fort Burnett, named for the governor at this time, William Burnett. It is his directive that mandates the stone building for a sturdy defense. Afterwards, the English work to further fortify the installation by constructing a stone wall around the perimeter during the early 1740s. Afterwards it also becomes known as Fort Pepperrell. Nonetheless, the fort by any name is not looked upon kindly by the French and it becomes a primary target of the French and their Indian allies during 1755 (French and Indian War).

1722 - French troops at Fort Toulouse, Louisiana (Alabama) attempt mutiny. The officers are confined, but later escape and supported by friendly Indians, the mutiny is thwarted. The troops are detained and transferred to Mobile for further action. Also, the French construct Fort Quiatenon at Lafayette, Indiana in close proximity to where they earlier erected a trading post during 1717. The French retain control until the British seize the fort during 1761.

1722- In Indiana, Miami Indians destroy Fort Philippe (Fort Miamis) at Kekionga (present day Fort Wayne, Indiana).

March 9th 1723 - Colonies - Colonists led by Westbrook attack and torch the Indian village along the Penobscot River, in the vicinity of Oldtown or Orono, above Bangor Maine. In related activity, the Indians raid Dover, New Hampshire.

August 1724 - Colonies - (Lovewell's War) - Dover, New Hampshire comes under a severe attack by Indians. In retaliation, troops from Massachusetts under John Lovewell move against Norridgewock, Maine on August 23rd, and this assault unlike the previous one finds the Indians and

Father Rasles, who had been running a Jesuit Christian Indian village. Rasles is slain during the assault. His demise also terminates the French domination over the Indians in Maine. In conjunction, Fort Drummer is established, supposedly within the limits of Massachusetts, on the Connecticut River at a point which today is Brattleboro, Vermont. Fort Dummer State Park, located in the Connecticut River Valley, has 217 acres of forest land just outside of Brattleboro, Vermont. The Fort is the initial settlement made by whites in Vermont, but its primary purpose will later be to intercept the French and their Indian allies if they advance upon Massachusetts. In the meantime, Fort Drummer, from its inception through 1725, is garrisoned by slightly more than forty English troops and about one dozen Mohawk Indians. In conjunction, the Fort built with the strong white pine logs passes the test of time. Fort Drummer meets its demise during the early part of the 20th Century when the Vermont constructs the Vernon Dam. The Fort which once stood as a formidable symbol of the Republic for nearly 200 years couldn't sustain its last assault, that of what is known as progress. The gem of Vermont now lies below the water line and in its place a lumber company holds vigil.

May 6th 1725 - Colonies - In Maine, in the vicinity of Lake Lovewell at Battle Brook (Fryeburg, Maine) the Indians spring an ambush on troops under John Lovewell and he is slain.

August 1726 - Colonies - In Maine, Indians make peace with the Colonists of Massachusetts. Consequently, the eastern boundary of New England is set at the St. Croix River.

June 1726 - Colonies - French troops from Fort Frontenac cross Lake Ontario to begin construction of a fort on the site of the trading post "Magazin Royale," but the French decide instead to build it on the site of former Fort Denonville. The Iroquois had given permission for a trading post, not a military fort. The fort's outward appearance resemble a trading post; however, the building confined inside the stockade is constructed of stone to provide protection from either Indians or the English and seems to be responsible for the coining of the phrase "French Castle," for the oldest building in Fort Niagara. The structure for the purpose of dealing with the Indians is referred to as a "House of Peace." Ironically, for awhile it does serve as a peacemaker as the English cannot attack because of the Iroquois and the French unwilling to launch assaults against the British in New York. The fort (Fort Niagara) on the east bank of the Niagara River will be again fortified during 1755. Meanwhile with its completion by 1726, the French dominate all of the Great Lakes. Earlier during 1679, La Salle had constructed a blockhouse there.

1728 - Colonies - Georgia - Florida - A force of English and Indian allies advance from the Carolinas to Florida and raid the Yamassee and Mocama Indian mission in the vicinity of St. Augustine. In conjunction, previously the Yamassee turned against the Christian tribes to fight with the English, but during 1715, they rebelled against the English and returned to Florida. Also, by about this time, the Timucua Indians have nearly been entirely eliminated. The Seminoles in their place have been relocating in northeastern Florida, west of the St. John's River in Clay County. In conjunction, by 1765, the Indians in this region cede the lands west of the St. John's to the English as well as the land lying east of the mouth of the Ocklawaha River to the north and south forks of Black Creek in the vicinity of Middleburg (Clay County) and from that point to the St. Mary's River.

1728 - Colonies - In Pennsylvania, the Shawnees initiate their move to the area in the vicinity of the branches of the Ohio River, the identical area which the Delaware tribe had earlier relocated.

November 28th 1729 - Colonies-Louisiana - At Fort Rosalie in Natchez, Monsieur du Choptart, the Commandant essentially issues an ultimatum to the Natchez Indians that their village is required to create a French Plantation, but the Indians don't take the request kindly, rather they execute a raid

and massacre every one of the French except for a few who are saved as prisoners. About 200 are killed and only two men and some women and children remain alive after the brutalizing attack. In conjunction, a Jesuit, Father Du Poisson travels from his mission with the Arkansas Indians to Natchez and the Indians murder him. The latter act infuriates the Arkansas Indians who swear to seek revenge and the French expeditiously make plans to avenge their loss. They bolster the defenses at New Orleans which at this time holds about 4,000 French and nearly 2,000 Negroes. In conjunction, New Orleans, subsequent to the hostilities with the Natchez during the early part of the following year, will become the capital of Louisiana.

January 29th - February 8th 1730 - Colonies-Louisiana - A force of about 700 Choctaw Indians led by the Frenchman, Le Sueur, launches an attack against the Natchez Indians on the 29th of January, and this stinging raid is followed by another which is launched on February 8th by a French force commanded by Lubois. The latter attack devastates the Natchez Indians and compels the survivors to retreat toward Natchitoches, on the Red River in Louisiana. In conjunction, the hostilities continue into the following year.

April 1730 - England-Colonies - A diplomatic envoy of King George II, Sir Alex Cumming, negotiates a treaty of peace with the Cherokee Indians at Nequassee (Tennessee Valley) in an effort to gain the Cherokees as allies. The treaty is extremely favorable to the English as it places the Cherokees on their side, but their new allies also stand between the English in their Colonies and the French in Louisiana. Subsequent to the successful negotiations, the Chiefs of the Cherokee nation travel to England to sign the treaty.

1730 - Canada-Colonies - Chabert Joncaire's, a Frenchman who had established the first trading post in Lewiston, New York, convinces the Chiefs of the Shawnee nation to travel with him to Montreal. By the following year, the Shawnees become more allied with the French. Fort Frederick, known as the Fortress of the French Crown, is constructed at Crown Point along Lake Champlain. The French succeed in maintaining a dominant role over the Shawnees, so much so that they place themselves under the wings of the French and the protection of the King, Louis XV against the English. Large numbers of Shawnee warriors head for Montreal. Also, the French construct Fort des Renards in McClean County, Illinois in the vicinity of Kickapoo Fort. The French at Fort des Renards defeat the Mesquakie Indians following a siege which lasts longer than twenty days.

1731 - Colonies - In Louisiana, the French again take action against the Natchez. They strike a devastating blow against the Indians at Natchitoches, along the Red River.

1731 - Pennsylvania - Pennsylvania recognizes the six Nations as the predominant group with sovereignty over the other Indian tribes in the colony.

1731 - Colonies - In South Carolina, a Swiss colony is planned and it is to be located in the lands of the Yamassees Indians along the Savannah River.

1731 - Vermont - The French establish a fort at Chimney point earlier settled by the English. The fort named Fort de Pieux (Fort of Posts), will contain a garrison of slightly more than thirty men including two officers.

1732 - South Carolina - Fort Frederick is established near Port Royal by the English to afford security against the Indians as well as the Spanish and French. It is abandoned during 1758. In conjunction, the site is located along present-day S.C. Rte 280 and some remnants remain within the compound of the U.S. Naval hospital there. (There is another Fort Frederick in S.C. established near Georgetown during 1731.)

April 10th 1732 - Colonies - In Louisiana, the French transport about 400 Natchez prisoners which

include the Chief, "The Great Sun," to Hispanola where they are to be sold into slavery. In other activity, the Frenchmen who hold the "Company of the West" relinquishes Louisiana to the French Crown.

1732 - Colonies - In Indiana, Francois Marie Bissot, sieur de Vincennes (also known as François Margane) establishes the town of Vincennes (Fort de Vincennes) at about this time along the Wabash River, which becomes the first European colony in Indiana. In conjunction, the Indian mission at this location had been established during 1702. The Basilica of St. Francis Xavier, reportedly the oldest Catholic Church in the Midwest now stands in Vincennes near where the mission was established. Vincennes is the son of the late Jean Baptiste Bissot, sieur de Vincennes, a Canadian explorer who had earlier established a Fort and Trading Post in the Miami Indian territory around Fort Wayne. Vincennes, like his father is respected and admired by the Miami Indians.

June 1st 1733 - Colonies - In Georgia, the Colonists conclude a treaty of alliance with the Muskogee Indians and they declare sovereignty over the Creek territory reaching as far south as the St. John's River in Florida. The Colonists also After establishing friendly relations with the Yamacraw, a branch of the Creek confederacy, who ceded their land for settlement, Oglethorpe begins to establish strong defenses, which include Forts, in the event of an attack by the Spanish.

1733 - Colonies - Frontier - Illinois - The French establish Fort Kaskaskia in the vicinity of Ellis Grove, Illinois. It remains under French control until 1764, when it is intentionally destroyed to keep it from British control.

January 1734 - Europe-Colonies - A congregation of Moravians from Salzburg, Austria embark from Dover, England for Georgia in response to an invitation from the English Society for Propagating the Gospel. The group establishes Ebenezer, just outside of Savannah. Later, Augusta is founded. Subsequently, the Chocta Indians and these Colonists initiate trade between themselves.

April 1734 - Colonies - James Oglethorpe embarks from Georgia for a visit to England. Tomochichi, Chief of the Yamacraws and some other Creeks join him on the journey. In Oglethorpe's absence, discontent arises in the Colony.

1735 - Florida - A Spanish post established nearly twenty miles from St. Augustine along the St. John's River becomes known as Fort Picolata. It is one of a trio of Spanish forts known as the St. John's River Forts, established to defend St. Augustine and to afford some protection from Indians along the route from to Apalache. Fort San Francisco de Pupo is another (completed about 1737). These are followed by Fort San Nicholas constructed about 1740.

1736 - Alabama - Fort Tombeckee is established by the French in Sumter County present-day Alabama as a precaution against the British traders and Indians (Chickasaws and Choctaws). It is located along the Tombigbee River near present-day Epes, Alabama. The fort remains under French control until the conclusion of the French and Indian War during 1763 when it passes to the control of the English and is renamed Fort York.. Later the Spanish regain it during 1783 to again rename it to Fort Confederacion. And during the Nineteenth Century (1802), the U.S. renames it Fort Tombigbee.

1736 - Minnesota - La Verendrye Massacre - A party from Fort St. Charles at Magnusson Island is ambushed by Indians as it passes across Lake on the Woods. Twenty-one men are killed.

1736 - Colonies - New York - The English establish a blockhouse (wooden) on the northern side of the Hudson River at St. Johnsville near Caroga Creek. The blockhouse known as "Harrison" remains in service through 1750.

February 1736 - Colonies - James Oglethorpe arrives in Georgia from England. About 300 emigrants, including some Moravians. Also, Charles Wesley becomes his secretary and John Wesley

as apostle to the Indians. Subsequently, they return to England and establish groups of Wesleyan societies (later Methodists). In other activity, Oglethorpe dispatches agents to St. Augustine to discuss the boundary that is to separate the English Colonies from those in the Spanish possessions. **February - May 1736 - Colonies** - In Georgia, James Oglethorpe selects St. Simon's, an island at the tip of southern Georgia, nudged close to Florida, as the location for Fort Frederica. It is strategically located and only about ten miles from Darien, Georgia. And Fort Simon is also built there, but it is destroyed by the Spanish during 1742. In addition, the English select another site along the Cumberland (Saint Mary's) River in Camden County for Fort Saint Andrew (1730s) and yet another, Fort Saint George (1755) along the St. John's River, Florida. And they construct Fort William on Cumberland Island. In other activity, the representatives sent to St. Augustine by Oglethorpe to negotiate a boundary with the Spanish had been detained. Oglethorpe in the meantime concludes pacts with the Uchees and other Indians tribes, but these allies are not necessarily needed as the English and Spanish settle the issue amicably without a fight. The English hostages are set free and the English agree to evacuate Fort St. George (Florida). However, the English retain the stronghold at Fort St. Andrews. In conjunction, the two sides subsequently agree to use the Saint Mary's River as the boundary. In other activity during 1736, the English establish Fort Augusta (later Fort Cornwallis) at Augusta, Georgia and they establish Fort Darien at Darien, Georgia near where Fort King George had previously stood. In addition, Fort Frederica is built on St. Simon's Island, Georgia, near the border with Florida. It remains under control of the English until 1758 when they abandon it.

February - May 1736 - Colonies - In Georgia, James Oglethorpe selects St. Simon's, an island at the tip of southern Georgia, nudged close to Florida, as the location for Fort Frederica. It is strategically located and only about ten miles from Darien, Georgia. And Fort Simon is also built there, but it is destroyed by the Spanish during 1742. In addition, the English select another site along the Cumberland (Saint Mary's) River in Camden County for Fort Saint Andrew (1730s) and yet another, Fort Saint George (1755) along the St. John's River, Florida. And they construct Fort William on Cumberland Island. In other activity, the representatives sent to St. Augustine by Oglethorpe to negotiate a boundary with the Spanish had been detained. Oglethorpe in the meantime concludes pacts with the Uchees and other Indians tribes, but these allies are not necessarily needed as the English and Spanish settle the issue amicably without a fight. The English hostages are set free and the English agree to evacuate Fort St. George (Florida). However, the English retain the stronghold at Fort St. Andrews. In conjunction, the two sides subsequently agree to use the Saint Mary's River as the boundary. In other activity during 1736, the English establish Fort Augusta (later Fort Cornwallis) at Augusta, Georgia and they establish Fort Darien at Darien, Georgia near where Fort King George had previously stood. In addition, Fort Frederica is built on St. Simon's Island, Georgia, near the border with Florida. It remains under control of the English until 1758 when they abandon it.

1736 - Colonies - In Louisiana, the belligerence between the French and the Chickasas cause war. The French dispatch a force under Jean Baptiste Bienville from New Orleans and another from Illinois moves under D'Artaguette, in anticipation of converging upon the Chickasaw territory (present day Lee County, Mississippi.). However, the plan does not unfold according to schedule. The expeditionary force from New Orleans fails to arrive, The other force, led by D'Artaguette arrives on the 9th of May. After a prolonged wait for the arrival of Bienville, and the possibility that his restless Indian allies will abandon the expedition, D'Artaguette, orders an assault. The Chickasas

repel the attack and the Indians which had accompanied the expedition take flight. The French sustain a humiliating loss and those who can retreat. The captives, including a priest Father Senat and the leader D'Artaguet, succumb to a tortuous death, but the Indians grant one prisoner a reprieve to relate the story. Meanwhile, Bienville is en route, but behind schedule. His force travels from New Orleans to Mobile and from there it moves up the Tombigbee River. Bienville, despite the loss of the other force, attacks the Chickasaw, but again the Indians repulse the French and inflict about thirty casualties. The survivors retire to Mobile. Later, during July, the Chickasaws send a party of about eighty braves to Georgia during July, but they arrive to seek a treaty, not hostility. Oglethorpe and the Chickasaws come to terms and agree to a treaty of peace.

1739 - Colonies - In Georgia, Oglethorpe travels to Cusitas, on the Chattahoochee River and holds talks with the Muskogees which conclude with a renewal of the alliance between the Indians and the Colonists. Also, the Muskogees authenticate his Indian title to the Georgia coast.

1739 - Colonies - Central New York - The English reconstructs the Hendrick Frey house which had been fortified back during 1702. It was garrisoned by the English from 1701-1713 (during "Queen Anne's War"). The new fort, constructed of stone stands on the north side of the Mohawk River across from Canajoharie (Montgomery County). The fort sees war duty again when the French and Indian War erupts.

November 15 1739 - Colonies - Georgia - Colonists at Frederica learn that some Spanish accompanied by Indians and Negroes had arrived at Amelia Island and the subsequent raid cost the lives of two people.

December 28 1739 - Florida - English troops numbering less than fifty, accompanied by friendly Indians attack Fort Picolata along the St. John's River. The force under Lt. Dunbar had been dispatched by General Oglethorpe of Georgia. Although defended by less than ten Spaniards, the attack thanks in great part to artillery is repulsed following a battle that lasts about seven hours. In conjunction, the English partially demolish the fort during the attack, prompting the Spanish to abandon the fort. Within about one week, the English again arrive at the vacant fort and put it to the torch. Subsequently, the force now commanded by Oglethorpe attacks nearby Fort San Francisco de Pupo. After a brief exchange, the Spaniards capitulate. Oglethorpe leaves a contingent behind to garrison the fort and afterwards returns to Georgia. Following the termination of the hostilities between the English and the Spanish, the forts again come under Spanish domination. Later during 1755, the Spanish reestablish Fort Picolata, but by this time, it serves no genuine purpose and soon after, the Spanish abandon it.

1740 - Pennsylvania - Settlers establish a blockhouse (Old Stone Fort) in Pennsylvania along the Delaware River at Matamoras near Fort Mifflin where the borders of New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania converge. In conjunction, this area is inhabited by the Lenape Indians and its copper resources attracted Dutch settlers. The Lenni Lenape Nation controlled the area between here and the Iroquois to the north.

March 1740 - Colonies - Jean Baptiste Bienville concludes a peace with the Chickasaws, whom the French have been unable to defeat. Subsequently, the Chickasaws continue to dominate the territory that lies between Baton Rouge and Illinois. Meanwhile, the French destroy Fort Assumption at Memphis and they also abandon another, Fort on the St. Francis River (Arkansas). In conjunction, the troops which had come to fight the Chickasaws discretely return to their respective origins. Jean Baptiste Bienville embarks for France.

1744 - Louisiana Territory - Kansas - At about this time (1744-1745) French Fort Cavignial, a trading post, is established by Joseph Deruisseau along the Kansas River near its mouth in the vicinity of present-day Kansas City. Deruisseau retains exclusive trading rights with the Indians; however, the post lasts only until about 1760 due to the outbreak of the French and Indian War. In conjunction at the time of its founding, Fort Cavignial is not in U.S. territory, but later, subsequent to the Louisiana Purchase, Kansas becomes U.S. territory.

1745 - Colonies - In New England, Indians allied with the French, raid settlements in Maine.

1745 - Colonies - In New York the French and their Indian allies raid Indian villages at Walden. Consequently, the Wappinger tribe, once informed of the tragedy relocates in Pennsylvania. By the following year, they return and their leader, Daniel Nimham, represents them at a peace agreement. Nevertheless, the Wappingers eventually lose their lands in the Hudson Valley (1778).

1747 Colonies - (King George's War) - The hostilities between the French and English continue. In New York, a combined force of French and Indians assaults and seizes Fort Massachusetts (Williamstown), which lies opposite Crown Point, Lake Champlain. In Massachusetts, the Colonists fare better as the French and their Indian allies are repulsed at Charlestown and at Concord. Other Colonies, particularly those that lie north of Virginia gather a large force that numbers about 8,000 troops to bolster the cause against the French; and support an attack to seize Canada; however, the Army is raised for naught because an anticipated British Fleet, required to transport the troops fails to arrive from England.

1747 - Colonies- In Pennsylvania, the threat of the French and Indians causes concern. Benjamin Franklin and others take action to meet any crisis which might occur. The Colonists form a Militia composed of about 12,000 troops.

1747 - New Spain - New Mexico - The Spanish come under Indian attack at Abiquiu and are compelled to abandon the settlement. In conjunction, the Spaniards had seized the town from the Utes during the previous year. It will be regained by the Spanish during 1748.

1748-In Pennsylvania, the English at about this time dispatch a German settler, Conrad Weiser, to negotiate with the Indians at Logstown (Loggs Town), located slightly less than twenty miles below Pittsburgh on the north side of the Ohio River. Weiser as a young boy lived among the Indians and was familiar with their language and customs. Weiser had earlier made it known that the Indians had become dissatisfied with the French traders, leaving an opening for the British to increase their trading and to begin to gain more influence with the tribes. Weiser secures a treaty with the Indians which gains them trading rights from Loggs Town to the Mississippi River and in the region stretching from the Ohio River to Michigan.

1749--In Georgia, during January, a large force of Creek Indians led by Empress of the Creeks, Mary Musgrove advances upon Savannah to seek compensation for her services to Oglethorpe during the War of Jenkins' Ear. No warfare erupts. The colonists apparently give the Indians some token gifts and a substantial amount of rum to enjoy while they are there. The empress is also compensated after the colony forwards her demands to England. Later, she receives £2,100 and title to Saint Catherine's Island (Georgia). **In New York** - Sir William Johnson, the commander of all troops in New York, establishes Fort Johnson. This is the second stone home constructed by Johnson. He earlier resided, about 1739, in the vicinity of Amsterdam at a place known as "Mount Johnson." In conjunction, this fort is separate from Fort Sir William Johnson which is established during 1763 at Johnson Hall at Johnstown. In other activity, a French priest, Father Picquet establishes a mission (La Presentation) at Oswegatchie (present-day

Ogdensburg). The mission intent, aside from converting Indians to Christianity is to aid the French in Canada by interrupting the ongoing friendly relation between the Iroquois and the English. Father Picquet, had previously accompanied the French force that reduced Fort Edward during King George's War and it was initially his suggestion to launch the attack. The Governor of Canada also encourages Father Picquet to instigate the destruction of Oswego by the Indians to achieve domination of the Great Lakes for the French.

The mission at Oswegatchie is supported by a force of French troops who construct a fort with palisades and a saw mill. During the period between wars, the mission expands and several Indian villages spring up in the vicinity of the fort. During this same year, the bishop from Montreal visits the mission and more than 130 Indians are baptized. Some of the more prominent Indians are taken to Quebec and while there, they take an oath, swearing allegiance to the French king. Father Picquet continues to gather the Iroquois for the French cause; however, through the efforts of William Johnson, the English are able to retain friendly relations with other Indians in the region. Johnson had emigrated from Ireland and settled in the Mohawk Valley during the latter 1730s on a large tract, known as Warrensbush, at the convergence of Schoharie Kill and the Mohawk River, which had been awarded to his uncle, Captain Sir Peter Warren (Royal Navy). Johnson familiarizes himself with the Mohawk language within two years after landing in New York and he is befriended by them due to his many kindnesses. The Mohawks who basically have an invitation to his residence name him Warraghiyagey

The Mohawks devise a plan and habitually select something belonging to Johnson and tell him that they dreamed that the particular item was given to them by him. He usually goes along with the ruse, but after awhile, he informs the Mohawks that he also had a dream and as they inquire about the dream, he informs them that he dreamed that they gave him a large tract of their land. The Mohawks ponder the consequences of the Johnson's dream and afterward, they responded: "You must have it, if you dreamed it, but don't dream any more." In conjunction, Johnson's efforts with the Indians did pay dividends. He is able to keep the Mohawks, the Oneidas and the Tuscaroras aligned with the British and he is able to persuade the Cayugas, Onondagas and Senecas to remain neutral in the dispute between the French and English. Nevertheless, the great majority of the Iroquois in Canada align with the French. Other tribes of the Susquehannas, the Delawares and Shawnees also remain mostly aligned with the British, but some take up the hatchet and join with the French. Also, Johnson, born in Ireland has more than a casual relationship with the Indians. A few years after arriving in the colonies, William marries a German (or Dutch) woman, Catherine Weisenberg, but she dies several years after their marriage, leaving three small children.

Subsequent to Catherine's death, William brings in an Indian woman, Caroline, a niece of Chief Hendrick. Together, they have two children, Charlotte and Caroline; however, during 1753, his wife dies at childbirth. In conjunction, his daughter Charlotte, about two years before the start of the American Revolution, marries Henry Randall, a subaltern in the King's Royal Provincial Regiment. Once the conflict begins, Randall resigns his commission and joins the American militia and serves in Philip Schuyler's regiment. Meanwhile, subsequent to the death of his first wife, Caroline, Sir William becomes involved with yet another Indian, Molly Brant, the sister of Joseph Brant (later chief) and together they have eight half-breed children. The Mohawks recognize Johnson and Molly as being married; however, the English refer to her as "the brown

Lady Johnson.” In Western New York - The French establish Fort La Presentation at present-day Ogdensburg near the rapids of the St. Lawrence River. The fort is essentially a French mission established by Father Francis Piquet, from where the Jesuits can work to convert the Indians to Christianity. However, after the completion of the fort, the Mohawks attack (during the fall) and the fort is destroyed. Nevertheless, the French quickly regroup and the installation is reconstructed with the work being completed by 1751. The French retain the fort until 1760 when it is captured by the British and reestablished under the English colors as Fort Oswegatchie, the name of the village at the time, prior to becoming Ogdensburg.

Also, a French force under Pierre Joseph Celoron, Sieur de Blainville, under orders from the governor of Canada, departs Fort Niagara, New York and advances into the Ohio Valley to reclaim it for France. During August, while the force is in Wheeling (Western Virginia) on the 13th, it is reported that Father Joseph P. De Ronnecamps, who accompanies the expedition, celebrates the first Mass in what later becomes West Virginia. In Western Pennsylvania--The English establish Gist's Post at Mt. Braddock in the vicinity of Stewart's Crossing at Connellsville, Pennsylvania. In conjunction, the post is destroyed during 1754 by the French. **In Western Pennsylvania-** Fort Bingham is established at Port Royal. It will be used by militia. In Vermont - In New England, new settlements occur in territory west of the Connecticut River which later becomes Bennington and Burlington, Vermont.

1750 - In Indiana, the French rebuild Fort Philippe (Fort Miamis) at Kekionga (present day Fort Wayne, Indiana), which had been destroyed by the Miami Indians during 1722. The fort rises on the bank of the St. Joseph River, one of the three rivers (St. Mary's River which converges here with the St. Joseph River to form the Maumee River).

1750-In Indiana, the French rebuild Fort Philippe (Fort Miamis) at Kekionga (present day Fort Wayne, Indiana), which had been destroyed by the Miami Indians during 1722. The fort rises on the bank of the St. Joseph River, one of the three rivers (St. Mary's River which converges here with the St. Joseph River to form the Maumee River).

1751-- In Arizona, the Spanish are compelled to deal with rebellious Pica Indians in the region around the Santa Cruz River near the Jesuit-Mission, San Cayetano de Tumacacori caused by mistreatment of the Indians by the Spanish. The incident is terminated after additional troops arrive from Tucson. Subsequent to the uprising, the Spanish establish the Tubac Presidio to provide security for the mission against hostile Picas or Apaches. In addition, the Spanish rename the mission. It becomes the Mission San Jose de Tumacacori. In Maryland, Frederick Calvert becomes proprietary of Maryland, succeeding his father Charles, who had succumbed. In Other activity, the Nanticoke Indians remaining in the eastern part of the province of Maryland relocate. The Nanticokes were initially contacted by John Smith during 1608. The Nanticokes have been steadily leaving the area since the arrival of the white settlers. They travel up the Susquehanna toward the territory of the Iroquois and some move even further into Canada. The Nanticoke tribe literally vanishes by about the middle of the 1800s. **In Canada** (Nova Scotia), the French begin construction of Fort Beausejour at the head of the Bay of Fundy as a buffer against Fort Lawrence, which had recently been built on the opposite side of the Missiquash River by the British. The Missiquash separates Acadia from British-held Nova Scotia. In India, the British and the French area at odds as both powers clash in a contest for domination. The French, under Charles Joseph Pattisier Bussy-Castinau, dominate the area of the Deccan (Southern India) and in the Carnatic region, the French under Joseph Dupleix control the area; however, the British, led by Robert Clive strike the French and gain Arcot on the Palar River in

southeastern India. This strategic victory by the British fortifies their position against the French in the southern sector of India.

May 18 1751 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, George Croghan, the Indian trader, accompanied by Andrew Montour, a half-breed, again visits Logstown and they have brought goods (presents from the provincial government) for the Indians on the Ohio River. Two days later, Joncaire a French officer, accompanied by one other Frenchman and about forty Indian braves (Six Nations) enter the town, then on the 21st, Joncaire calls for a conference with the Indians in Logstown to convince them to halt trading with the English. Joncaire stated that “their father, the governor of Canada desired his children on the Ohio to turn away the English traders from among them, and to discharge them from ever coming to trade there again, or any of the branches, on pain of incurring his displeasure.” The Indians are not impressed, nor intimidated. One of the chiefs responds, saying: “You desire we may turn our brothers, the English, away and not suffer them to trade with us again. I now tell you, from our hearts, we will not, for we ourselves brought them here to trade with us, and they shall live among us as long as there is one of us alive. You are always threatening our brothers what you will do to them, and in particular that man (Croghan). As the chief points toward Croghan, he continues his response saying: “Now if you have anything to say to our brothers, tell it to him, if you are a man, as you Frenchmen always say you are, and the head of all nations. Our brothers are the people we will trade with, and not you.” Subsequently, Croghan spoke directly with Joncaire and informed him that the French could not achieve his goal with the Six Nations except by force. Later on 29 May, Croghan holds a meeting with the Indians to offer his thoughts on the English reaction. He states during the meeting: “Now, brothers, we have been considering- what the French mean by their behavior, and we believe they want to cheat us out of our country; but we will stop them. And, brother, you must help us; we expect that you will build a strong house on the River Ohio, so that if we should be obliged to engage in a war, we should have a place to secure our wives and children, as well as our brothers that come to trade with us. We will take two months to consider and choose out a place fit for that purpose, and then we will send you word. We hope, brothers, as soon as you receive our message you will order such house to be built.”

April 29 1752 (Wednesday)–In New Hampshire, John Stark (later colonel and afterward major general during the American Revolution) is seized by St. Francis Indians while on a hunting trip. The Indian transport Stark and another, Eaton to Canada. One man in the party, Stinson, had been killed during the ambush, but the others, including John’s brother William, escape and make it back to Rumford, later Concord, New Hampshire. A relief party later finds the body of Stimson who had also been scalped. During the following July, John Stark and Easton are ransomed, the former for one hundred and three dollars and the latter for sixty dollars.

Summer 1752–In Pennsylvania, subsequent to a treaty being consummated between the Indians and Christopher Gist at Logstown on the Ohio (less than 20 miles below Pittsburgh), some settlers including Gist, establish a settlement at a tract located between the Monongahela River and the Youghiogheny River. In conjunction, the Indians agreed by the treaty to deliver no harm to settlers residing on lands of the Ohio Company. Nevertheless, during the summer more than 200 Indians, led by two Frenchmen move into the area of the Miamis to coerce them into surrendering the six English traders to them. At the time of the arrival of the French, most of the Miamis warriors are away on a hunting trip, but the king of the Miamis still declines giving up the English and he refuses to denounce the recent alliance made with the Ohio Company. The small force of Miamis is overwhelmed by the French Indians and the king of the Miamis is captured and afterward killed. The French Indians then cook the chief and he is eaten as a meal.

The invading Indians also hoist the French flag over the abandoned fort. In conjunction, the Miamis, staunchly aligned with the English had forewarned of the attacks and requested that the English build a military fort on the Ohio, but the English procrastinated. England dealing from a position not as strong as they believed, had declared the Ohio Valley as a section of Virginia; however, they send only a few guns to the colonies and contend that the Virginia militia would be able to defend the claim against the French.

September 1752 –In England and the colonies, on 2 September, 1752, changes with the calendar occur as the Gregorian calendar (“New Style”) is adopted. In conjunction, eleven days are deleted from the calendar, as September 3rd becomes September 14th. Also, in England, Parliament changes the start of the calendar from March 25th, to January 1st. In addition, Robert Dinwiddie is appointed Lieutenant-Governor of Virginia on 4 July, as the successor to William Gouch (Gooch). **In Arizona** during March (6 - 22), the Spanish governor, Ortiz Parilla dispatches an officer, Captain Joseph Diaz del Carpio with a contingent of troops to attempt to gain peace with the Indians. Later while encamped at Tubac, new orders arrive from the governor, which instruct del Carpio to send out another party to direct the Indians to surrender. Their leader, Captain-General Luis Oacpicagigua later does agree to capitulate. By 22 March, the revolt which began during the previous year is terminated. The Indians who had fled to the Catalina Mountains begin returning to their land and the force under del Carpio departs from Tubac for San Ignacio. In conjunction, the cessation of hostilities apparently works well for both sides as the over-matched Indians would most likely have lost their ability to withstand pressure from other tribes such as the Apaches and the Yumas in California if they continued the struggle. In turn, the Spanish who are extending their hold in Mexico and California as well, would have in all probability been too greatly hindered with a Pima War to make steady progress in other areas. The friendly relations with the Pima Indians that is cultivated greatly aids the Spanish and the Americans, who later follow the trails across the Colorado and Gila River towards the West Coast. In Georgia during June, the trustees relinquish their charter for the province. At this time, only three towns, including Savannah, exist in the region. Savannah at this time contains only about 150 residences and of these, most are scanty. In related activity, colonists at Dorchester, South Carolina relocate to Georgia and establish a settlement along the Medway River. In New Hampshire, Colonel Benjamin Bellows establishes a garrison house at Bellowstown (later Walpole). Bellows, born during May 1712, had moved from Lunenburg, Massachusetts. He also establishes a government for the town. However, settlers do not initially arrive in great numbers. Up until 1759, only four families reside there. **In New Mexico**, the Spanish and the Utes begin to have talks to bring about the end of hostilities in the region. At this time, the Utes are also in conflict with the Navajo. In Pennsylvania, during June, Benjamin Franklin’s perpetual curiosity gets him involved with yet another experiment. Convinced that lightning is an electrical current, he decides to test his theory and see if he can prove it. He uses a kite upon which he has fastened a metal key. The flight of the kite indeed proves his theory as it catches the electricity. From this successful experiment, he develops lightning rods to protect buildings and further research by him leads to many terms regarding electric that remain in use today. **In Canada**, the governor, Marquis de Duquesne dispatches a band of Indians, composed of both Chippewa and Ottawas to destroy the posts and seize the American traders who had established trading posts along the Ohio River at a point less than twenty miles below the forks and at Picawillany (Piqua, Ohio), in the Indian village of chief Unemakemi, known as Old Britain by the English. The French are eager to gather information on the plans of the English and believe the traders can provide intelligence. However, the traders are slain and legend has it that chief Unemakemi (Old Britain)

was killed, then boiled and eaten as a meal. In conjunction, France and England lay claim to the land that lies about 200 miles south of Lake Erie where the Monongahela and Allegheny Rivers converge to form the Ohio River. The French base their claim on La Salle's explorations of the 1670s and the English claim it based on Virginia's Royal Charter of the Jamestown settlers who consider it part of its western border. The French in order to bolster their claim establish two forts during early 1753, Fort Le Boeuf and Fort Presque Isle, the former at Waterford, Pennsylvania and the latter at Lake Erie, Pennsylvania.

January 16 1753 (Tuesday)–In the Ohio region, a band of about 70 Indians (Cahnawagas, also known as French praying Indians) from the St. Lawrence River area capture seven English fur traders along the south bank of the Cantucky (Kantucqui) River, which converges with the Allegheny River. The point of capture is about 25 miles from Blue Lick Town (present-day Kentucky). The traders are: Jacob Evans; David Hendricks; Jabez Evans; Jacob Evans; Thomas Hyde; William Lowry; Alexander McGinty (McGenty) and James Powell. Lowry escapes, but he is thought to have died while in the wilderness. The others are eventually taken to French-held Fort Niagara in New York. Subsequently, during April, the captives are transported to Montreal. In conjunction, McGinty, who receives brutal torture survives and he is ransomed for a large sum of money after he sends a letter to the mayor of Albany. McGinty reaches Philadelphia during autumn of this year; however, he is without funds. The assembly grants him six pounds to help him get some clothes and make his way back to his home in Cumberland County, Pennsylvania. Jacob Evans and James Powell are sent to Quebec from where they were taken to France. There is no information on the fate of the others.

Early Spring 1753–Autumn 1753--In Pennsylvania, despite strong protests from the English, Marquis Duquesne the governor of Canada remains determined to establish new forts to prevent the English from advancing any deeper into French territory. A French force of several hundred troops led by Monsieur Babier arrives in the Ohio Valley at Chadakoin Creek. Construction begins, but the project is aborted. Afterward, another French force, is dispatched by Duquesne. Monsieur Marin afterward arrives and assumes command, but the work is not resumed. In conjunction, Marin, an infantry captain has spent most of his career in the wilderness. Marin is accompanied by the engineer, Chevalier Le Mercier. Marin initially departs for Niagara, while the rivers are still covered with some ice, in command of a vanguard of about 260 troops. However, Duquesne later sends a larger force, command by Michael Jean Hughes Pean to join with Marin. Pean becomes second in command under Marin. The French instead of remaining at Niagara, move to the vicinity of Erie, Pennsylvania and establish Fort Presque Isle (known also as Fort de la Presque Isle du Lac Erie). The post is built at Lake Erie. The construction which begins during April is completed during August of this year and it contains a stone magazine.

After the garrison is assigned, the French penetrate deeper and begin construction on another post along the Belle Riviere near where it converges with the River Aux Boeuf (French Creek). The Indians have their own name for the latter post, Fort de la Riviere aux Boeufs. Fort Le Boeuf is assigned a garrison, leaving both forts manned; however, the main body returns to Canada for the winter (1753–1754). The French had also intended to build a third fort close to Ganagarahare (Franklin), but the post (Governor's Fort) is not built. The guns to be deployed at the post, are deployed at Fort de la Riviere aux Boeufs (Fort Le Boeuf). In conjunction, the commander who oversaw the construction of the forts, Paul Marin de la Malgue, dies while at Fort Le Boeuf to lead a large force into the Ohio Valley to establish forts to ensure France holds on to the territory claimed for the king. In many later works by English authors, the name of Paul Marin gains

variations, including Morin, Morang, Marrain and Murray.

In a peculiar, but not unheard of occurrence throughout history, Pean's selection as second in command, had come about because of lust. Bigot, the powerful politician at Quebec brought it about because of his relationship with Pean's wife, Angelique Desmeloizes (Madame Pean). In addition, the contingent under Pean, which departs Canada during April, arrives with huge amounts of merchandise and a bountiful amount of Spanish wines, all purchased from the king's treasury, in a scheme initiated by Bigot. At this time, Pean is one of the most affluent men in Canada. Governor Duquesne, persuaded by Bigot, to send Pean on the mission, instructs Pean (orders issued on 16 June) that after his work in the Ohio Valley, he is to traverse the Illinois country as far as Detroit and construct a fort at Sandusky (Ohio) before returning to Montreal though Niagara. In conjunction, Pean is the son of Ives Jacques Hugues Pean, Sieur de Livandiere and his wife, Marie Francoise Pecody Pean, the daughter of Antoine and Jeanne de St. Ours, of Montreal. Pean's father, Ives, had been appointed commandant of Fort Frontenac during 1724 and later during 1727, he was appointed commandant of Fort Chambly. Afterward, during 1733 he was transferred to Detroit, where at the time, the entire garrison amounted to only 17 soldiers.

July 7 1753 (Saturday)–In New York, Michael Jean Hughes Pean's French contingent arrives at La Galette (Ogdensburg, New York). Pean encounters a large number of Indians who pressure him for food. Pean distributes some of his provisions, but afterward, he is compelled to send an urgent request for more provisions back to Montreal.

July 18 1753 (Wednesday)–In Canada, Michael Jean Hughes Pean arrives at Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario Canada). Pean expects to acquire provisions; however, the advance party under M. Repentigny had left supplies behind at Frontenac; however, due to the poor condition of the sacks containing the food, it has all spoiled. Apparently, some chicanery has been involved. The pork in the sacks had vanished from the barrels and replaced with rocks. The brandy barrels had also been discovered to be only half full. The barrels that contained the brandy and wine had been resealed in such fashion that the storekeeper at Frontenac had not noticed that tampering had been involved. Nonetheless, the missing provisions causes great concern for Pean, particularly the lack of flour. Pean is compelled to delegate about 100 of his men to wash Indian corn with lye. Afterward, the Indian corn is laid out to dry and then it is used as part of the rations. In addition, Pean is confronted again by Indians who demand food as a contingency for their allegiance. He acquiesces. After spending about ten days at Frontenac, he arrives at Niagara. In conjunction, soon after arriving at Niagara, Pean receives word from Governor Duquesne informing him that there is little flour that can be spared.

August 14-15 1753–In Pennsylvania, the French (Marin, Pean, and the engineer Le Mercier) hold a conference at Presque Isle. The discussions continue into the following day. It is decided to cut their force down to 1,360 men, including Indians. In addition, 80 men are assigned to garrison Fort Presque Isle; however, later, Marin adds another 60 men at the post for duty in bateaux on Lake Erie until autumn. In addition, 18 men are to garrison Anjou (Fort Venango) and 10 at Fort Le Boeuf. The French garrison at Fort Duquesne will be 180 men and another 100 will be posted on the Scioto. The remainder, including the sick will be sent back to Montreal. However, 50 troops will be kept for service between Fort Presque Isle and Fort Niagara. In conjunction, the officers send a joint letter to Governor Duquesne stating: "Have no anxiety; we are prepared for any emergency. If it is necessary to fast, we will do so without sorrow, and the retrenchment will be made as soon as necessary. All goes well, and our zeal will furnish means

for overcoming everything, having nothing more at heart than the success of the General's project.”

August 17 1753 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, M. Paul Marin’s French force departs Presque Isle for Niagara. He remains there until early September when he returns to Presque Isle. Meanwhile, he continues to lose men to sickness and he encounters some difficulties with the Indians. By the time the autumn rains occur, most of the Indians, tired of the exhaustive work simply disappear. By the latter part of September, his men die at an alarmingly high rate. The situation becomes so much of a crisis that the French bury two and sometimes three men in one grave. By 1 October, of the 2,300 men that departed from Montreal, only about 850 are fit for duty.

October 31 1753 (Wednesday)–In Virginia, George Washington and a small contingent departs from Williamsburg, Virginia carrying a message to the French at Fort Duquesne at Pittsburgh (Pittsburgh), insisting that they must abandon their positions in the Ohio Valley, including Forts Presque Isle and Le Boeuf. Washington pauses in Fredericksburg and persuades a French-speaking Dutchman, Jacob Van Braam (a fencing master and French interpreter) to accompany the expedition. Another man, John Davidson, makes the trip as the Indian interpreter. Soon after, on or about November 13th-14th, the party reaches Wills’ Creek (later Cumberland, Maryland) and it is joined by a Mr. Christopher Gist and four others, including two traders. From there, they embark on an arduous journey that takes them along unruly streams that challenge their fragile rafts and beyond to the wind-blown, snow-bound Allegheny Mountains, which they slowly navigate. The party finally reaches the forks of the Ohio River (Pittsburgh) on November 23rd. From there, the party, accompanied by Shingias (Shingiss), a Chief Sachem of the Delaware Indians, advances to Logstown (Beaver County, Pennsylvania), where Washington and the chiefs of the various tribes hold a parley to inform them of why he has come into the area. The Indians provide guides. Three chiefs including Half-King (Tanacharison) and one brave escort them on the journey of more than 100 miles, each mile more cruel and perilous than the last, but they conquer the elements and reach an outpost of the French at Venango (French Creek) on December 5th. Initially, the French attempt to detain the Indians, but Washington prevails in great part because of the congeniality of the commandant, Joncaire. The party is permitted to advance to Fort Le Boeuf. In conjunction, during this mission, one of the Seneca guides is Gwaysuta, who is not well known at this time; however, the name Gwaysuta signifies terror during 1763, when he becomes the primary leader in Western Pennsylvania during Pontiac’s War (1763). In conjunction, Washington in his notes, refers to Gwaysuta as the “hunter.” Washington afterward even visits Gwaysuta at his residence along the Allegheny River and claimed he was received with “great kindness.” Gwaysuta’s home later became the Darlington estate, which was near Sharpsburg. He was interred on a tract of land that retained his name.

November 24 1753 (Saturday)–Major George Washington and Christopher Gist, accompanied by two friendly Indian leaders, King Shingiss and Lawmolach proceed to Logstown to speak with the Indians chiefs there during the evening. After the parley, the colonists return to their camp and on the following day, the chiefs arrive at the camp.

November 26 1753 (Monday) Friendly Indians arrive at Washington’s camp near the Allegheny River. Chief Half King had arrived on the previous day. Washington delivers his message to the chiefs. In turn the Indians state that they would move out for the French positions on the 29th. In conjunction, Chief Half King arrived from Logg’s Town, where his village is located near the Ohio River, slightly less than fifteen miles below Pittsburgh.

November 29 1753 (Thursday)–The Virginians under Major General George Washington, in

camp at the Allegheny River since the 23rd, are prepared to move out and head for the French positions; however, the Indians stall, claiming they will not be prepared to move until the following day.

November 30 1753 (Friday)—Major George Washington, having acquiesced to the proposal of the Indians to hold up his advance to the French positions to this day, finds that the Indian braves had not arrived, as promised. Nevertheless, accompanied by Chief Half King one young warrior and two older men the Virginians break camp and move out and advance about 15 miles to a town named Murthering, located on a branch of Great Beaver Creek. While there, the party procures some corn and some dried meat.

December 1 1753 (Saturday)—In Pennsylvania, the party under Major George Washington arrives at a crossing of Beaver Creek from the Kaskuskies to Venango. Washington establishes his camp and the party remains there until the 3rd. The accompanying Indians are able to go on the hunt and on the 2nd, they kill two bucks. Meanwhile, the weather is beginning to get more nasty and for much of the time, it rains. The party departs the camp on the 3rd and reaches one of the head branches of Great Beaver Creek later that night. In other activity, a French contingent under Captain Joncaire arrives at the residence of a trader, John Fraser, however, Fraser had already abandoned his place at Venango for the area near the Monongahela. Joncaire after arriving there from Niagara, establishes his headquarters on the Fraser property. Joncaire hoists the French flag.

December 4 1753 (Tuesday)—Major George Washington and his party arrive at Venango where they encounter the French. They are met by Monsieur Philip Thomas Chabert de Joncaire, the interpreter for the Six Nations. Chief Half King and his accompanying Indians spend much time on the following day in talks with the Delawares. Four Indians, including Scarrooyady (Half King) are with Washington and Half King is familiar to Joncaire. In addition, his white companions are a man named Davison, who also speaks French, a Dutchman named Vanbraam and Christopher Gist. In conjunction, at this time, the French have not yet constructed their fort at Venango. Paul Marin had been tasked with building the post; however, he died before its completion. In addition, although the French refer to the location as Venango, they call the fort when completed, Fort Machault (Machaud). The English name it Fort Venango.

December 6 1753 (Thursday)—Major George Washington, Christopher Gist and the remainder of the party, accompanied by a small French contingent advance toward Sugar Creek. Joncaire had attempted to persuade the Indians with Washington to remain behind; however, Gist, also an able interpreter, is able to ensure that the Indians do remain with the party. On the 7th, they encamp on Sugar Creek about five miles from Venango. Gist describes in his journal, the scene at the creek: “The creek being very high we were obliged to carry all our baggage over on trees, and swim our horses. The Major and I went first over, with our boots on.”

December 8 1753 (Saturday)—Major George Washington’s party, guided by a French officer, Captain Benois La Force, advances about 25 miles to an Indian town, Cussewago where they make camp for the night. On Sunday, the 9th, they resume the march and on the following Tuesday, the 11th, following some difficulty with high water on the creeks, the party arrives at the French fort (Le Boeuf) at about dusk. On the previous day, the Indians had bagged a bear and at one creek, they had to use a tree to make it across to the opposite side and it was the tree that was used to get the supplies across the unruly creek. A party of French troops meets Washington at the creek.

December 13 1753 (Thursday)—Major George Washington delivers the letter to the French commander Jacques Legardeur de St. Pierre. He afterward discusses it privately with Le

Guardier Repentigny. Washington requests that the French reply expeditiously. Several days later, a response is given to Washington. St. Pierre's letter informs Governor Dinwiddie that the letter from him (Dinwiddie) will be forwarded to the Marquis Duquesne and that he will continue to remain at the post, pursuant to his orders. Meanwhile the French hold separate talks with Chief Half King and the other Indians.

December 16 1753 (Sunday)—The party under Major George Washington having concluded the mission, departs for home. Washington had been prepared to depart since the 13th, but the French managed to delay the Indians. The party heads home in two canoes, one carrying the colonists and the other, the Indians. The horses had earlier been sent to Venango to await the arrival of the canoes. In the meantime, concern was growing regarding the buildup of ice on the waterways. Washington's party joins with the Indians at their camp on Monday the 17th. While waiting for Washington, the Indians had bagged three bears.

December 18 1753 (Tuesday)—By this day, the waters become more navigable, but one of the Indians had not yet returned from the hunting trip. Consequently, the men with Washington depart to take advantage of the lower water levels, leaving the Indians at the camp. By Thursday the 20th, the party is held up by ice that had formed, compelling the men to take a circuitous route on the 21st, by carrying the canoe across the terrain and replacing it in another part of the creek.

December 21 1753 (Friday)—The Indians, along with three French canoes, catch up with Major Washington; however, one of the French canoes had been lost to the elements, along with the powder and lead that it had been carrying. By day's end, Washington makes camp about twenty miles above Venango.

December 27 1753 (Thursday)—**In Pennsylvania**, Major George Washington and Christopher Gist depart the Indian cabin where they had spent the night and resume the journey, advancing to the Indian town, Murthering, located on the southeast fork of Beaver Creek. Washington and Gist encounter an Indian and Gist is convinced he had seen the Indian at the French fort, but he keeps it to himself; however, he is convinced that the Indian is untrustworthy. The Indian feigns friendliness, but Gist's suspicions prove accurate and Washington, himself comes to the same conclusion as the day progresses. The Indian begins to probe, asking why they traveled on foot from Venango and he inquires as to where they left their horses. Nevertheless, the Indian agrees to guide them toward the forks of the Allegheny, but after traveling about eight-to-ten miles, it becomes apparent that they are not moving directly toward the river and instead, they are heading too far to the northeast. Washington becomes extremely tired, although his pack is being carried by the Indian, but when it is decided to halt and make camp, the Indian insists that they must keep moving due to Ottawa Indians in the area, placing their scalps in danger. After moving about an additional two miles, supposedly toward the Indian's cabin, they come upon a snow covered meadow. As they reach the meadow, suddenly the Indian fires, but neither Washington nor Gist are hit. Gist goes to liquidate the Indian, but Washington intercedes as Gist describes: "I would have killed him; but the Major would not suffer me to kill him. We let him charge his gun; we found he put in a ball; then we took care of him. The Major or I always stood by the guns; we made him make a fire for us by a little run, as if we intended to sleep there. I said to the Major, As you will not have him killed, we must get him away, and then we must travel all night." Upon which I said to the Indian, I suppose you were lost, and fired your gun." He said, he knew the way to his cabin, and twas but a little way. "Well," said I, "do you go home; and as we are much tired, we will follow your track in the morning; and here is a cake of

bread for you, and you must give us meat in the morning.” Afterward, Washington and Gist, using a compass, set a course, move throughout the night and reach Piney creek on the following morning (28th).

December 28 1753 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, Major George Washington and Christopher Gist, traveling alone, continue their journey back to Virginia following the meeting with the French at Fort Le Boeuf in western Pennsylvania. At a point after dusk, they observe tracks left by an Indian hunting party and decide to split up and meet later at a designated spot where they camp for the night. The rendezvous occurs and no hostile Indians are encountered.

1754–In Connecticut-Pennsylvania, the colony continues to claim possession of territory west of the Delaware River, based on their authorization from England and the consent of the Connecticut Legislature to acquire the Indian title to the Wyoming Valley. In contrast, Pennsylvania asserting its rights under its charter, claims that the territory in dispute is in fact Pennsylvania land. Shortly after Connecticut settlers acquire land in Wyoming from the Indians, Governor Robert H. Morris dispatches John Armstrong to Connecticut to try to settle the dispute with the Susquehanna Company. The dispute continues until the Revolutionary War period. **In Maine** - Fort Halifax is established at the convergence of the Kennebec and Sebasticook Rivers near Winslow and nearby Fort Western is established at Augusta to support Halifax and act as a supply depot. In addition, Fort Frankfort, later Fort Shirley (established about 1752) is at present-day Richmond along the Kennebec. It also remains active until after the close of the French and Indian War. The three forts are known as the Kennebec Forts. Fort Halifax is abandoned subsequent to the termination of the French and Indian War, but about 1775, the Americans revitalize it. Fort Western is also abandoned after the conflict. The Americans however, do use it during the struggle for independence. In New York, the English establish Fort Hendrick, named in honor of Mohawk chief, Hendrick. It is established at the site of a former fort (Canajoharie) built by the English for the Indians during 1747. Fort Hendrick, is constructed at a place south of the Mohawk River and east of Nowada Creek in the vicinity of Danube (Herkimer County). The construction is completed by August of 1755. The fort remains operational until 1760. In conjunction, the fort’s namesake, Chief Hendrick, is killed several months after the fort is finished while he fights alongside the English at Lake George during 1755. **In New Hampshire,** an epidemic breaks out that lasts during 1754-1755. The disease hits children with a type of “throat distemper” that takes the lives of many children under the age of ten. Doctors are unable to beat the epidemic; however, one man Doctor Josiah Bartlett does find a cure. The epidemic strikes his family and when none of the available remedies help, he discovers an anecdote. Doctor Bartlett also serves in the militia. Later, during 1776, Doctor Bartlett becomes the first man to sign the Declaration of Independence. **In North Carolina,** Richard Caswell is elected to the colonial House of Delegates as a representative of Johnston County. Caswell, a lawyer does not serve in the military during the French and Indian war; however, he remains in the legislature and later joins the militia with the rank of colonel against the Regulators. Caswell later becomes a brigadier general (1776) and he becomes governor of North Carolina. Also, at about this time (1754), Robert Howe (later, major general during the American Revolution) enters the military as a captain of the Blair County militia. Later, during 1760, Captain Howe is elected to the general assembly. **In Pennsylvania,** Fort Northkill is established in Berks County (Tulpehocken Township at a site near Blue Mountain, less than three miles from Strausstown. Also, the English establish Fort Burd in the vicinity of Brownsville. Fort Redstone is also constructed in Brownsville. Fort Redstone is manned by Virginia militia, but it is later burned by the French. During 1759, Fort Burd relocates to the site

of Fort Redstone, which then becomes Fort Burd. In conjunction, Fort Burd, a trading post and settlement again changes during 1796 when a fortified castle (Nemacolin Castle) is built there. **In West Virginia**, settlers establish Ruddle's Fort at a midway point between Lost River and Lost City in Western Virginia. Other forts established this year include: Thomas Parker's Fort (known also as North River Stockade) near Pleasant Dale, Fort Edwards at Capon Bridge, Warden's Fort at Baker, Kuydendall's Fort (at an unknown date) close to Romney and Fort Pearsall also near Romney. In addition, Mendinall's Fort near Martinsburg. Other forts established this year include: Redstone Fort near present-day Brownsville and Fort George in Grant County.

March 16 1754–In Western Pennsylvania, a French force, composed of about 600 men, including Indians sets out for the Forks of the Ohio to dislodge a party of Virginians, who are in the process of constructing Fort Prince George. The French intend to take over the construction to build Fort Duquesne to solidify their claim on the region.

April 17 1754 (Wednesday)–In Maryland, the Virginia Regiment, commanded by Lt. Colonel George Washington arrives at Will's Creek. Captain Adam Stephen joins them there. **In Pennsylvania**, a French force under Monsieur Contrecoeur that had recently departed Venango, seizes the contingent of the Virginia Regiment under Ensign Ward and the fort under construction at the Forks of the Ohio, set to become Fort Prince George is taken by the French. The diminutive unit is overwhelmed by a force, reported by Washington, of amounting to about 1,000, including Indians. In addition, the force carries "eighteen pieces of cannon, sixty batteaux, and three hundred canoes." The French permit Ward and his men to depart and they receive permission to take their tools. Ensign (later major) Edward Ward (brother-in-law of Captain Trent) had been in temporary command of the troops assigned to protect the workers building a fort for the Ohio Company. The French contingent is commanded by Monsieur Claude Pierre Pecaudy de Contrecoeur, who had succeeded St. Pierre, whom had been called back to Canada to prepare for a spring campaign. At the time of Ward's surrender, Captain William Trent and Lt. Frazier are absent from the fort. Also, Contrecoeur, once in control of the seized fort, begins to complete the task. The engineer in charge of the project is Francois Marc Antoine le Mercier, who is also an artillery officer. Mercier had also built Fort Le Boeuf. In conjunction, the governor of Canada, Marquis Duquesne, has retained intentions of linking Canada with Louisiana and he had previously informed the governors of New York and Pennsylvania that the French would seize any English traders who venture into what the French claim as their territory. At this time the French have strong forces in Quebec and Montreal. They also have forces on the frontier at Louisbourg, and Cape Breton as well as their forts at Lake Champlain, Niagra, Crown Point, Ticonderoga and other strong points including Pittsburgh. It is the French intent to prohibit the English from expanding their settlements west of the Allegheny Mountains.

April 23 1754 (Tuesday)–In Maryland, at Will's Creek, Lt. Colonel George Washington pens an address to the Indians who are aligned with the British: "To the Half-King, and the Chiefs and Warriors of the Shawanese and Loups our Friends and Brethren. I received your speech by Brother Bucks who came to us with the two young men six days after their departure from you. We return you our greatest thanks and our hearts burn with love and affection towards you, in gratitude for your steadfast attachment to us, as also your friendly speech, and your wise counsels. This young man will inform you where he found a small part of our army, making towards you, clearing the roads for a great number of our warriors, who are ready to follow us, with our great guns, our ammunition and provisions. I cannot delay letting you know the

thoughts of our hearts, I send you back this young man, with this speech, to acquaint you therewith, and the other young man I have sent to the Governor of Virginia, to deliver him your speech and your wampum, and to be an eyewitness of the preparations we are making, to come in all haste to assist you, whose interest is as dear to us as our lives. We know the character of the treacherous French, and our conduct shall plainly show you how much we have it at heart. I shall not be satisfied if I do not see you before all our forces are met together at the Fort which is in our way, wherefore, I desire with the greatest earnestness, that you and Scrune-yattha, or one of you, should come as soon as possible to meet us on the road, and to assist us in council. To assure you of the sincerity of my speech, and of the good will we bear you, I present you with these strings of wampum, that you may remember how much I am your Friend and Brother. Signed Go Washington Conotocarious.” In other activity, it is decided by Washington and the other officers of the regiment to continue with their mission. Despite new intelligence that the French hold the Forks of the Ohio, they intend to construct a road from Will’s Creek to Redstone Creek, the latter at Brownsville, Pennsylvania on the Monongahela. Construction on the road to carry the regiment over the mountains begins on 25 April.

May 1 1754 (Wednesday)- Lt. Colonel George Washington departs Will’s Creek, Maryland to avenge the capture of Captain Trent’s party and to regain the fort which the French had seized at the forks of the Ohio River. He departs with a force of about 159 troops, but he is aware that reinforcements under Colonel Fry will be trailing. The force advances to a point about thirty miles from Fort Du Quesne and sets up positions there at the junction of the Monongahela River and Red Stone Creek (Brownsville, Pennsylvania) on May 24th. There has been bad relations between the English and the French due to the perception of the English that France has encroached upon Nova Scotia, the Ohio Territory and Virginia. This seizure of the English party by the French triggers the French and Indian War, which essentially is a war between France and England with Indians used as allies.

May 18 1754 (Saturday)–In Maryland, Lt. Colonel George Washington pens another letter to Governor Dinwiddie, informing him of the difficulty being experienced in constructing a road leading toward Redstone Creek (Brownsville, Pennsylvania). Washington states that on the following day, he will lead a small party on the Youghiogheny River in search of a water route. However, the party, composed of Washington, along with an officer and five men encounter an insurmountable obstacle, the falls and rapids at Turkey Foot (vicinity of present-day Ohiopyle, Pennsylvania) that forbid and journey by water. In New York, a man, Hitchen Holland, at Oswego, has frequently been sending reports to the governor in Albany, about French troops traveling in canoes and moving toward French-held Fort Niagara at Youngstown. On this day, his report states: “This morning past three French canoes towards Niagara, but can’t tell where bound as nobody here spoke to them.” On the 16th, he sent another message: “Yesterday (15th) past here in French canoes, with colors flying and drums beating, which seemed to be well manned and were bound towards Niagara.” About one week later, Holland reports: “Sir: The same day after my last report to your honour of the 15th instant arrived here a Frenchman drummer to the party I then reported, who deserted from them the same evening and reports that that detachment consisted of !50 men, all of the militia, excepting 18 soldiers of the regular troops and also that 400 more were to follow, chiefly soldiers, besides 100 Indians, that were to set out in a little time after, all bound to the river Ohio & that the place of rendezvous was to be at Niagara, till they all got in a body & from thence to the place of there destination; which report I believe to be true as yesterday past this toward Niagara 15 French canoes and this day 15 more.” In conjunction, the French have controlled Fort Niagara since 1726 and with it the

French also control the Great Lakes; however, they focus on fortifying it and the effort is accelerated during 1755.

May 27-29 1754 - Colonies - George Washington, on the 27th, receives word from Christopher Gist that a contingent of French had been discovered. In conjunction, one of the Indians under Chief Half King, known as Silverheels, arrives at Washington's camp with intelligence from Chief Half King that informs Washington of the location of the French that had been detected. Afterward, Washington and a contingent of forty troops, guided by Silverheels, move out on the night of the 27th to join with Chief Half King. The contingent departs from the camp during the night of the 27th. The French hold concealed positions in a ravine and while they rest, Washington's force advances during an incessant rain storm to investigate the suspicious French force, which is essentially on a search for the English.

Early on the following morning, at about dawn, an attempt is made to make contact with the French, who have not taken the precaution to post any sentries. Meanwhile, after getting lost on a few occasions, the contingent finally locates Half King and 12 warriors that accompany him. At about 0700, the French camp is encircled and just as the French are awakening, they spot the English. A shot is soon after fired, but by whom remains unknown; however, the English immediately commence fire. The French attempt to return fire, but of the 32 troops under de Villiers, some move to break out and find themselves running directly into Chief Half King's contingent, which seals their escape route. After the short-lived firefight is ignited, it concludes within about fifteen minutes. The French commander, Joseph Coulon de Villiers Sieur de Jumonville is among the ten fatalities. One other Frenchman is wounded and 21 are captured. The French contingent had earlier been dispatched from Fort Duquesne to locate the English.

One Frenchman escapes and treks about sixty miles back to Fort Duquesne to reveal the presence of the English and to bring news of the loss. One of the captured French officers, M. La Force, after being taken to Virginia, escapes two years later, but he is afterward recaptured and placed in a dungeon in Williamsburg and he is restrained further by being placed in chains. Subsequently, he is exchanged. Later La Force serves at Fort Niagara when it is seized by Sir William Johnson; however, he is on Lake Ontario when the fort falls. Consequently, he escapes capture.

On the 29th, the force under Washington, after marching back to Great Meadows (vicinity of Uniontown, Pa.) establishes Fort Necessity, a circular stockade, situated in near-untenable positions dominated by wooded hills. in anticipation of a French attack. Meanwhile, the French captives are taken to eastern Virginia. This skirmish, in which one Virginian is killed and two others wounded, becomes the initial contest of the French and Indian War; however, the earlier incident when Captain William Trent's party had been seized by the French, still is regarded as the first hostile act of the conflict. The war runs parallel to the conflict in Europe where the war between France and England is known as the Seven Year's War. Subsequently, the Colonies begin to contribute financially; Maryland's legislature authorizes £6,000 and New York £5000 in aid of Virginia. To further bolster the cause, the British Government dispatches another £10,000. Also, the Crown appoints Governor Sharpe of Maryland as Commander-in-Chief of the English Colonial forces.

May- June 1554--In Pennsylvania, the militia under Major George Washington hold the newly constructed Fort Necessity. During the latter part of May, the remainder of the regiment arrives with the Commanding Officer, Colonel Joshua Fry; however, he succumbs at Will Creek on May

31st. Following the death of Fry, Washington assumes command of the regiment, which is composed of slightly less than 300 men. Shortly thereafter, an additional contingent of about 100 British troops under Captain James MacKay arrives from South Carolina to bolster the garrison. Once the reinforcements from South Carolina arrive at the fort, Colonel Washington and his regiment reinitiate the construction of a road leading to an English settlement at Redstone Creek, but during the operation, information arrives that a huge French and Indian force numbering more than one thousand men is advancing toward the regiment. Soon after, the mission is abandoned and the Virginians return to Fort Necessity, arriving there on July 1st.

June 1754 - Massachusetts - New Hampshire - A scouting party led by Captain Peter Bowers and Lieutenant James Stevens departs Concord, Massachusetts on a reconnaissance mission to move into the region of the upper Coos River to gather intelligence on the French intentions regarding the Connecticut Valley. The mission fails. St. Francis Indians (Algonquin) intercept the group and only some make it back to Massachusetts. Consequently, the failure prompts the Americans to bolster the defenses. A fort will be established at Northumberland, New Hampshire the following year.

June 19-21 1754–In Pennsylvania at Christopher Gist’s plantation in the vicinity of present-day Dunbar, Colonel Washington confers with Chief Half King and other friendly Indians in an attempt to gather all of the tribes aligned with Chief Half King to join in the expedition to expel the French. Simultaneously, Washington is aware that the French have not yet moved to retaliate for their loss to the Virginians on 28 May. Consequently, he is focused on building his strength; however, the Indians are not persuaded. They remain reluctant to align themselves to what many believe will be the losing side in the confrontation. The council ends on Friday, 21 June, but Washington continues to remain confident that he can repulse a French-Indian assault against Fort Necessity. In conjunction, Colonel Washington also believes that the Indians’ reluctance to join him also occurred because he was unable to present them with sufficient gifts. Nonetheless, Washington shows no signs of aborting the mission and returning to Virginia. In conjunction, at this time, the South Carolina troops under Captain Mackay still remain at the fort, while the Virginia Regiment is temporarily deployed on Gist’s plantation while they continue to cut the road to Redstone Creek (Brownsville, Pennsylvania).

June 19-July 11 1754–In New York, the Albany Conference convenes and it continues into the following month. The sessions which are held nearly every day until 11 July, are held at the court house in Albany. The representatives discuss various methods of unifying the colonies, but none seem to be acceptable to all. The northern colonies that send representatives include Connecticut, Maryland, Massachusetts, New Hampshire, New York, Pennsylvania and Rhode Island. Neither New Jersey or Virginia send representatives to the conference. The purpose of the meeting is to discuss establishing a Union of the colonies; however, there are also discussions with the Six Nations to get their support to bring the Iroquois and other tribes in the fold of allies to the British. In addition, they representatives seek to find a plausible mechanism to meet the threat of the French. One suggestion comes from Richard Peters who proposes that each colony should raise one company composed of 100 men and that the 13 companies should form the Union Regiment, which would remain active as long as the French threat continues. Peters’ proposal also suggests that the regimental officers be selected by King George II. Peters’ plan also for the construction of naval vessels and a chain of forts along the strait of Niagara.

Benjamin Franklin, a representative of Pennsylvania proposes that the Colonies establish a union; however, the plan which calls for a president, appointed by the English crown and a

Grand Legislature appointed by the colonists adopted on 10 July, is rejected by the legislatures of some of the colonies, who see the plan as an invasion of its authority. The plan proposed by Benjamin Franklin finds more favor than that of Peters. Franklin proposes a Grand Council which would have the authority to build forts and raise an army and a large amount of other practical items to thwart the schemes of the French. One of the items suggested creating two formidable settlements at locations between the Ohio River and Lake Erie. Franklin's plan includes a stipulation that the Crown would cover the expense of dislodging the small French forts erected by the French on English territory and that the king sanction a strong fortress close to the Falls of Niagara, along with a small flotilla of vessels to cruise the lakes to establish a sphere of security along the frontiers. The fort at Oswego also comes under Franklin's proposal. He suggests that it be more heavily fortified. In addition Franklin believes the English should also build vessels to operate on Lake Ontario. Nonetheless, although the conference attendees adopt Franklin's proposal, the king rejects it because he believes it takes from his power and hand too much power to the colonies.

Meanwhile, the plan intended to centralize the colonies under one government causes worry in England when the king becomes concerned that the union would become a threat to England. During the meetings, on 6 July, a treaty (Treaty of Albany) between the colonists and the Six Nations is consummated. The treaty with the Indians is due primarily to Sir William Johnson, the other man besides Franklin, who dominates at the conference. The Indians arrive at the conference but not in the numbers expected. Only about 150 attend. They are not impressed with the recent actions of the British in response to the activity of the French and they make the fact known. Chief Hendrick, a Mohawk and staunch ally of the English, states: "Look at the French! They are men. They are fortifying everywhere; but, we are ashamed to say it, you are all like women - bare and open without any fortifications." Upon learning of the sentiments of the Indians, the other commissioners rely on Johnson to retain the confidence of the Six Nations.

July 24 1754–In Canada, M. Varin in a letter to M. Bigot, regarding the surrender of the English at Fort Necessity in Pennsylvania states: "I have the honor to inform you that Mr. du Sable has just arrived from the Beautiful river, where the English, to the number of 500, surrendered by capitulation on the 3rd or 4th of this month, to M. de Villiers, seconded by Mr. Le Mercier, after an engagement of 10 hours, although they were in a fort covered by an intrenchment, with 9 pieces of cannon. The capitulation, whereof a copy is hereunto annexed, will show the glory our Canadians have acquired on that day, and the humanity with which the English have been treated. We lost on that day 2 Canadians (one) of whom [was] 8ieur Desprez' oldest son, and have had 70 wounded, the majority or them slightly; of these, two are Indians. Mr. Pean's Panis has been also killed. The English, on their side, have had 80 or 90 men killed or mortally wounded. Mr. Le Mercier has had their 9 pieces of cannon broken, and the English, who took to their heels after the capitulation, have abandoned even their flag..."

June 27 1754 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania near Dunbar, at Gist's plantation, Colonel Washington receives news regarding the French when an Indian messenger arrives with intelligence that the French had assembled a large force at Fort Duquesne at Pittsburgh and that they are preparing to advance upon the colonial positions. Washington reacts immediately. He postpones the work on the road to Redstone Creek and he sends word back to Fort Necessity, requesting that Captain Mackay and his South Carolinians repair to Gist's plantation. The South Carolina contingent joins with Washington on the 29th.

June 28 1754 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, a French column, led by Captain Coulon de Villiers,

the brother of Joseph Coulon de Villiers (French commander who was slain at the recent confrontation on 28 May), departs Fort Duquesne. His force is composed of about 600 French Marines, bolstered by Canadian militia and by about 100 Indians drawn from various tribes (Algonquins, Abenakis, Delaware, French Iroquois, Huron, Nippissing, and Ottawa).

July 1 1754 (Monday)- Colonies - Colonel George Washington and his regiment of Virginians, having abandoned their operation to build a road to reach an English settlement on the Ohio River, arrive back at Fort Necessity on 1 July, with a French and Indian force not too far behind. The 13-mile March, which has taken more than two days to complete had further exhausted the troops, but their options are few. Too exhausted to re-cross the mountains and retreat to Will's Creek, it is decided to attempt to bolster their defenses by digging trenches in front of the palisade. Washington sustains an unexpected complication when one of the Virginians, John Ramsay, deserts and after contacting the French, he further betrays the troops by describing the weakened condition of the garrison troops. While the desertion of Ramsay stings the colonists and increases their apprehension, the intelligence he hands over to the French invigorates the commander who accelerates the pace. While en route, some of the Indians have second thoughts about moving into English territory and they abandon the French and return to Canada; however, many others continue the march.

July 3-4 1754 –In Pennsylvania, prior to dawn on the 3rd, the French quickly advance toward the colonial positions at Great Meadows, where the Virginians and South Carolinians have formed a defensive line in the trenches around Fort Necessity. The contest erupts at about 1100 and continues until dusk, with Washington's force engaging the French and fighting the nonstop rain that continues to fall into the trenches and forcing the defenders to return fire from water-filled positions. Throughout the day's fighting, Washington is unable to draw the French into the meadow where they would become lucrative targets. The French remain in control of the heights overlooking the fort and they dominate the woods where they are deployed behind trees, which provide some protection from the rain and prevent casualties from a frontal attack, while Washington's force remains in the trenches getting soaked by the pelting rain.

Nonetheless, despite the huge advantage, Washington's defenders maintain their lines throughout the day, while taking fire from all points. Captain De Villiers, at about dusk, retains his position that a frontal attack would be costly and decides to instead seek a surrender from the English. Nonetheless, the Virginians endure and attempt to forestall defeat. Both sides incur casualties; however, Washington's command sustains the greater loss. By mid-evening, it is apparent that the French hold the upper hand. They initiate talks for a truce at about 2000 and before midnight, with terms acceptable to Washington, it is agreed to surrender the fort. The French under Captain Louis Coulon de Villiers, present the agreement in writing, using French, with a second copy in English. Colonel Washington and Captain Mackay both affix their signatures to the surrender papers, which permit the English to retire and to keep their arms, except for some artillery which the French retain for their own use. On the morning of July 4th, Washington and the command, including Mackay's South Carolinians march out of the fort and return to Wills Creek, from where they head for Virginia. In conjunction, Fort Necessity is torched by the French and then they, along with their Indian allies, move back to Fort Duquesne. Along the return trip to Fort Duquesne, the French torch every building they pass, including Gist's plantation. This is the first time that young George Washington is compelled to surrender to a foe, however, it is also the final time that he will surrender for the duration of his long distinguished career.

While the English are retiring, they unexpectedly become surrounded by a large force of Indians, which had been arriving to support the French. These Indians relieve the English of their supplies and threaten them with other unpleasantries, but none occur. The column then continues the long march back to Williamsburg. Two of the English officers, Captains Robert Stobo and Jacob Van Bramm, remain with the French as bargaining chips to ensure that the French captives seized on 28 May by Washington are released in Virginia and returned to Fort Duquesne. In conjunction, Stobo, while detained at Fort Duquesne, uses the time in captivity to absorb information about the fort and the troops' activity. Captain Stobo details the plan of the fort and he draws a map, while documenting troop strength and other intelligence. Afterward, he risks his life by trusting an Indian (Moses the Song) who is aligned with the British and gives the intelligence to the Indian, who smuggles the information out of the fort during July (19th) of this year. The letter also contains information on the French prisoners. Stobo determines that they are important to the French and he suggests in his letter that they not be released. On the following day (20 July), Stobo sends out yet another letter, which he gives to a friendly Indian, known as Delaware George. Both letters are delivered to the British at Will's Creek, Maryland. In conjunction, during the struggle, Colonel Washington loses his journal and it is discovered by the French. Also, Tanachrisson (Chief Half King) and his Indians escape capture; however, later this year, during October, he dies from pneumonia.

July 6 1754 (Saturday) –In New York, during the Albany Congress, the colonies consummate a treaty (Treaty of Albany) with the Six Nations, consisting of the Cayugas, Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagoes, Senecas and Tuscaroras. In conjunction, the chiefs of the Six nations sell a vast tract of land on the “west side of the Susquehanna from the Blue mountains to a mile above the mouth of Kayarondinagh (Penn's) Creek, thence northwest by west to the western boundary of the Province, thence along the western boundary to the southern boundary, thence along the southern boundary to the Blue mountains, and thence along those mountains to the place of beginning.” The deed is dated this day. The Indians, however, decline selling any land east of the Susquehanna and they are aware that the colonists in New England and in Pennsylvania each covet the land. Nonetheless, the Indians set aside Wyoming and Shamokin and the adjoining land on the river as a hunting ground and as a place for the Indians, who choose to leave French-held land. In addition, within a few days, on 9 July, the Indians and the Pennsylvanians agree to concur with the earlier covenant of 1736, which dictates that no land in the province of Pennsylvania would be sold to anyone except to the proprietaries of the province.

July 22 1754 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, the citizens in Paxton and other locations express grave concern about the French and Indian incursions in a petition to the governor that requests help. The petition: “The humble petition of the inhabitants of the townships of Paxton, Derry and Hanover, Lancaster county, humbly sheweth: that your petitioners, being settled on and near the river Susquehanna, apprehend themselves in great danger from the French and French Indians, as it is in their power several times in the year to transport themselves, with ammunition, artillery, and every necessary, down the said river; and their conduct of late to the neighboring Provinces increases our dread of a speedy visit from them, as we are as near and convenient as the Provinces already attacked, and are less capable of defending ourselves, as we are unprovided with arms and ammunition, and unable to purchase them. A great number are warm and active in these parts for the defence of themselves and country, were they enabled so to do, (although not such a number as would be able to withstand the enemy,) we, your petitioners, therefore humbly pray that your Honor would take our distressed condition into consideration, and make such provision for us as may prevent ourselves and families from being destroyed and ruined by such

a cruel enemy; and your petitioners as in duty will ever pray.” Fifty-six men sign the petition.

August 16 1754 (Friday)–In Maryland, the Indian known as Delaware George arrives at George Groghan’s trading post after completing the trip from Fort Duquesne. He delivers the letter, written by Captain Stobo, which he smuggled out of the fort. Croghan after receiving the intelligence makes copies and gets them distributed to the proper parties in Maryland, but also in Pennsylvania and Virginia. A copy is later received by General Edward Braddock as he prepares to launch an offensive to seize Fort Duquesne. In conjunction, another of Stobo’s smuggled letters arrives later on the 28th when Moses the Song, a Mohawk arrives with the letter given to him by Stobo at Fort Duquesne. Stobo had trusted both Indians at great risk to himself and both remained loyal to the British and delivered the respective intelligence.

August 28 1754 (Wednesday) - Colonies - New York - The town of Hoosick, slightly more than thirty miles from Albany, is attacked and burned by the French and their Indian allies.

August 29 1754 (Thursday) –In New Hampshire, Indians raid Charlestown and capture James Johnson along with his family. Colonel Benjamin Bellows arrives at Westmoreland on the 31st and writes a letter to his brother-in-law, Colonel Joseph Blanchard; “Sir: We have the news from Charlestown, that on Thursday morning, the 29th of this instant, the Indians came to the house of James Johnson, and broke in and took sd Johnson, his wife and three children, and a maid and one Ebenr (Ebenezer). Farnsworth and one Labbaree, and they suppose they have carried them all off; they have not found any of them killed. The people are in great distress all down the river, and at Keene and at Swanzey, and the few men sent will not more than supply one town, and the people can not secure their grain, nor hardly keep their garrison, etc.” Bellows adds a P.S. “I have got no further than Westmoreland when I wrote this, and got all the men safe there.” In conjunction, Colonel Bellows had married Abigail Stearns, the sister of Reverend Stearns of Lunenburg. Colonel Joseph Blanchard had married one of Abigail’s sisters and another sister had married Colonel Josiah Willard of Lunenburg. **In New York**, a contingent of French and Indians raid a village named Sancoick (White Creek) in the vicinity of Hoosick.

August 30 1754 (Friday)–In New Hampshire (part of Massachusetts at this time), Indians raid No. 4 and capture the James Johnson family, two days after they had raided Dutch Hoosuck. Soon after on 12 September, Colonel Israel Williams writes in a letter to Governor Shirley about the raids and mentions: “It’s now open war for us.” In conjunction, at the time of the raid, 32 families reside at No. 4; however, although there is a fort, no soldiers are deployed there.

August 31 1754 (Saturday)–In Massachusetts at Northfield, word of the attack against No. 4, on the previous day reaches Northfield this day. The town, which had its forts dismantled during the previous year, recognize that it had been a mistake. The town’s selectmen issue a summons on the following morning and call for a meeting to be held on 2 September. At the meeting it is decided to construct four new forts which are: Captain Ebenezer Alexander's; Rev. Hubbard's; the widow’s (Lydia Doolittle's) and the fourth at Samuel Field's property. Each fort is to include pickets. All four forts are completed by the following spring. In related activity, Colonel Israel Williams, who also is a captain of militia, orders out his company. Lt. John Hawks, with 29 men deploy at Colrain. Ensign John Burk in command of 15 men moves to Fall-town. Another contingent of 14 men under Sergeant James Patrick moves to Greenfield and Ensign John May moves to Charlemont with a command of 22 troops. Also, a contingent of 13 men under Sergeant Noah Strong deploys at Southampton. One other contingent, composed of 9 men under Corporal Preserved Cap is sent to Huntstown. Also, a garrison is stationed at Fort Massachusetts.

Late August 1754–In Massachusetts (Later New Hampshire) a band of Indians attacks the home of Captain James Johnson. They silently enter the town (Fort at No. 4, known also as Township 4 and Charlestown, as well as Fort Stephens). The Indians hover near the Johnson home and when a neighbor arrives to begin work, he (Peter Labaree, a carpenter) knocks on the door, but when Captain Johnson opens the door, he hears the warning, Indians, Indians!” But in a flash, the Indians burst inside the house. The people in the house, include Johnson’s three children, Sylvanus (six), Susanna (four) and Polly (two, also Mary). In addition, Susanna’s sister, Miriam Willard, a maid, about fourteen years old and two workers, Ebenezer Farnsworth and Aaron Hosmer are at the residence. However, Hosmer conceals himself in the house and the Indians fail to discover him. Hosmer escapes harm and warns the garrison at the fort.

Nonetheless, the garrison does not mount a chase due to fear that the Indians might massacre the captives. Two days after being captured, Mrs. Johnson gives birth to her baby.

Later the captives arrive at the Indian village of St. Francis. Mrs. Johnson receives a master, the son-in-law of the great sachem. The others are taken to Montreal and sold to various Frenchmen. Captain Johnson is taken by a prominent Frenchman. Susanna is bought by three French ladies and Polly (Mary) is bought by the mayor of Montreal. Miriam Willard is acquired by the Duquesne family. And later, the Duquesne family also acquires Mrs. Johnson. In addition, Farnsworth and Labaree are acquired by other Frenchmen. Also, Polly (Mary) is later reunited with her mother and Mrs. Johnson’s infant, is baptized and given the name Louisa Captive. In conjunction, Mrs. Johnson remains a prisoner for about four years. She returns to her settlement during fall of 1759. Captain Johnson is returned during 1758. He participates in the Tioga campaign; however, he is killed during that action. Also, Sylvanus is held for about four years, but he too is reunited with his mother. Israel Putnam is responsible for returning Sylvanus from his captivity. Susanna arrives back during the summer of 1760. She returns with the Joseph Willard family of Lancaster. The Willards, including Mrs. Willard and their five children had been captured several months before the Johnsons had been seized. Mrs. Johnson later marries John Hastings. From her two marriages, she has fourteen children. Her daughter Susanna marries Captain Samuel Wetherbee. Together, Susanna and Captain Wetherbee have fifteen children. Polly (Mary) marries Colonel (later brigadier general during American Revolution) Timothy Bedell. Also, Louisa Captive marries Colonel George Kimball of Charlestown. Miriam Willard marries Reverend Phineas Whitney. In addition, Labaree and Farnsworth also return from captivity and they both return to their previous lives as farmers. Farnsworth was ransomed and Labaree had escaped.

September 1754–In Pennsylvania, Conrad Weiser, an agent of the government arrives at Aughwick, where a number of Indian tribes are overseen by George Croghan, the Indian agent. Weiser’s arrival follows the murder of some settlers by an unknown Indian and part of his task is to retain the friendship of the Indians with the English. However, the situation is deteriorating in the region. Indians aligned with the French continue to arrive in the region causing great apprehension. Croghan is particularly concerned about maintaining peace with the Indians in the area. In conjunction, on 27 September, Croghan writes to the governor. The letter in part: “Since Mr. Weiser left this, an Indian of the Six Nations, named Israel, killed one Joseph Campble, an Indian Trader, at the house of one Anthony Thompson, at the foot of the Tuscarora Valley, near Parnall's Knob. As soon as I heard it; I went down to Thompson's and took several of the chiefs of the Indians with me, when I met William Maxwell, Esq. The Indian made his escape before I got there. I took the qualification of the persons who were present at the murder, and delivered

them to Mr. Maxwell to be sent to your Honor, with the speech made by the chiefs of the Indians on that occasion, which, I suppose, your Honor has received. I have heard many accounts from Ohio since Mr. Weiser left this, all of which agree that the French have received a reinforcement of men and provision from Canada, to the fort. An Indian returned yesterday to this place, whom I had sent to the fort for intelligence; he confirms the above accounts, and further says, there were about sixty French Indians had come while he staid there, and that they expected better than two hundred more every day; he says that the French design to send those Indians with some French, in several parties, to annoy the back settlements, which the French say, will put a stop to any English forces marching out this fall to attack them. This Indian says that the French will do their endeavor to have the Half-King Scarrayooday, Capt. Montour and myself, killed this fall..." Croghan also tells the governor that he was informed by Colonel Innes that French Indians had arrived at Will's Creek and that he believes the friendly Indians will join with the French and if so, "then all the back settlements (Maryland and Virginia) will be left to the mercy of an outrageous enemy."

September 1 1754 (Sunday)–In New England, the recent Indian raid on No. 4, in New Hampshire has caused the alarms to spread quickly. Nevertheless, there are not a large number of soldiers posted to protect the settlers. Many families begin to abandon their farms to seek shelter at blockhouses and forts. The families that live near Vernon, Vermont and Hillsdale, New Hampshire move into the respective town for safety at Fort Dummer in Vermont or Fort Hinsdale in New Hampshire, on the Connecticut River, across from Fort Hinsdale. Colonel Ebenezer Hinsdale had established a trading post there during 1741. In addition, at Northfield, Massachusetts, there is an active militia company. Captain Samuel Hunt is its commander and the lieutenant at Northfield is Seth Field.

September 8 1754 (Sunday)–In Canada, the governor, having earlier received Colonel Washington's journal after the French found it at Fort Necessity (early July), believes it can be useful to the French, while they prepare for the British, whom they expect to move against Fort Duquesne. The governor of Canada (Marquis de Menneville Duquesne) dispatches a packet to Fort Duquesne's commander. It includes a translated copy of Washington's journal. In the letter to the commander, Contrecoeur, the governor states: "You will see that he (Colonel George Washington) is the most impertinent of men, but that he is as clever as he is crafty with credulous Indians. Besides, he lies a great deal in order to justify the assassination of Sieur de Jumonville, which has recoiled upon him, and which he was stupid enough to admit in his capitulation (at Fort Necessity)."

October 2 1754-4 January 1755--In Pennsylvania, a band of about 12 Indians arrives at the home of Peter Williamson, a man who while a boy (8 years old) had been stolen from his parents in Scotland and sold into slavery in the colonies. Later in the colonies as a man, Williamson's wife is away from the house when the Indians arrive. He is aroused at about 2300 by the screeching war cries. In response, Williamson reaches for his musket and as he later records, states: "I threatened them with death, if they did not retire." Nevertheless, they are too great in number against one man. The Indians inform Williamson that if he surrenders they will not kill him and he finally agrees to capitulate after one of the Indians stated in English "that if I did not come out they would burn me alive, adding, however, that if I would come out and surrender myself prisoner they would not kill me." Williamson continues stating: "they rushed on me like tigers, and instantly disarmed me. Having me thus in their power, they bound me to a tree, went into the house, plundered it of every thing they could carry off, and then set fire to it, and

consumed what was left before my eyes. Not satisfied with this, they set fire to my barn, stable, and out-houses, wherein were about two hundred bushels of wheat, six cows, four horses, and five sheep, all which were consumed to ashes.” On the day following his seizure, the Indians again torture Williamson. They tie his arms around a tree and forced his fingertips to bleed. Afterward they apply burning coals and sticks flaming with fire at the ends, holding them to my face, head, hands, and feet, and at the same time threatening to bum me entirely if I cried out.” Shortly thereafter, the Indians resume their trek and within a day or so arrive near the Appalachian Mountains (or Blue Hills) where they enter yet another house, that of Jacob Snider. The Indians scalp Jacob, his wife and their five children, then after pillaging the home, it is set on fire, while the victims remain inside.

However, the Indians spare the servant and they use him, as Williamson to carry a load. The servant, unlike Williamson, is unable to endure the punishment. While he complains to Williamson, one of the Indians ends his complaining. The servant is knocked to the ground with a tomahawk, then he is scalped and left to die. By that time, Williamson begins to lose track of the days. Nonetheless, after about one week, the Indians arrive at the Susquehanna River and reach the home of John Adams, who lived with his wife and four children. The Indians immediately scalp Mrs. Adams and their four children, while Jacob is forced to watch; however, the Indians go beyond murder and scalping. Jacob and Williamson are also witness to some unspeakable atrocities done to Mrs. Adams. However, the Indians spare Mr. Adams and despite his conspicuous feebleness, he too is used as a packhorse. Before departing, the Indians also burn the home and the other structures. The barbarous Indians then advance to the “Great Swamp,” where they remain for more than one week. During the stay at the swamp, the Indians inflict cruelties on old Mr. Adams.

At times, Adams is tortured by flames and they strip his clothes from his body and cover it with paint and they even pull out his gray hairs. All the while the Indians threaten Adams with death, while telling him he was a “fool for having lived so long.” During the time at the swamp another band of Indians arrive. They boast of their 20 scalps and of the three prisoners, which they seized at an Irish settlement (Conogocheague) along the Susquehanna. The new captives detail some of the grave atrocities they had witnessed. The three new prisoners are extremely weak; however, according to Peter Williamson they are able to escape. Nonetheless, the men are unfamiliar with the terrain and they have no food. Other Indians capture them and take them to their original captors. The Indians take two of the three who “were tied to a tree, and a great fire made round them, where they remained till they were terribly scorched. and burnt; when one of the villains with his scalping-knife ripped open their bellies, took out their entrails, and burned them before their eyes, whilst the others were cutting, piercing, and tearing the flesh from their breasts, hands, arms, and legs, with red-hot irons, till they were dead.”

Although the third prisoner had not been tied to the tree with the other two, his life does not last much longer and the Indians do not spare him from a more tortuous demise. He, according to Williamson: “His arms were tied close to his body, and a hole being dug deep enough for him to stand upright, he was put into it, and earth rammed and beat in all round his body up to his neck, so that his head only appeared above ground; they then scalped him, and there let him remain for three or four hours in the greatest agonies; after which they made a small fire near his head, causing him to suffer the most excruciating torments; whilst the poor creature could only

cry for mercy by killing him immediately, for his brains were boiling in his head. Inexorable to all he said, they continued the fire until his eyes gushed out of their sockets.” The man endured this agony for about two hours before he finally died. Nonetheless, as soon as he breathes his last breath, the Indians cut off his head. Peter Williamson, who observes all of the atrocities is then ordered to dig the graves for the mutilated corpses. By the time the last of the captives had been killed, the Indians depart during a snowstorm and trek about 200 miles back to their territory.

Williamson, who remains alive, is dragged along. In conjunction, Williamson remains captive into the following spring when the Indians, now numbering about 150 return to the Pennsylvania frontier. Williamson finally makes a break, despite being completely naked and after a harrowing journey, nearly being recaptured a couple of times, he reaches the home of an old friend, John Bell. After scaring Bell’s wife, half to death, he is recognized. The Bells comfort him for a few days and supply him with a horse and some clothes. Afterward, he arrives at his father-in-law’s house on 4 January 4, 1755. After getting over the shock of seeing William, thought to be dead, the family was overjoyed; however, Williamson’s great joy is suppressed when he discovers that his wife had died during the previous November.

October 4 1754 (Friday) – In Pennsylvania, Tanacharisson (Chief Half King), a Seneca chief and ally of the English who had accompanied George Washington on his earlier journey to Fort Le Boeuf dies after contracting pneumonia. He succumbs at John Harris’ Ferry (later Harrisburg). In conjunction, Chief Half King is sometimes confused with another Chief Half King, a Huron chief from Ohio. On the following day, John Harris writes a letter to Governor Hamilton informing him of the chief’s death. Harris also informs Hamilton that the Indians at his residence blame Chief Half King’s death on the French, stating: “...These Indians that are here blame the French for his death, by bewitching him, as they had a conjurer to inquire into the cause a few days before he died; and it is his opinion, together with his relations, that the French had been the cause of this great man's death, by reason of his striking them lately, for which they seem to threaten immediate revenge, and desired me to let it be known. All the Indians that are here are in great trouble, especially his relations. I have sent an account to Conrad Weiser, at Shamokin, this day, who I expect will be down upon notice. I humbly presume that his is a very great loss, especially at this critical time.” He is interred on Harris’ property. In conjunction the chief’s family remains with Harris until at least December of this year.

October 26 1754 (Saturday)–In Canada, the two hostages, Virginian Captains Robert Stobo and Jacob Van Braam, seized at Fort Necessity arrive at Quebec. They languish there due to Lt. Governor Dinwiddie’s refusal to exchange his French prisoners for them. Nonetheless, although Van Braam remains in captivity for the duration of the conflict, Stobo eventually escapes and joins General Wolfe in the expedition against Quebec. **In Pennsylvania,** Indians arrive at the home of John Lewis, near the Susquehanna River. The entire family, his wife and three children are scalped and massacred. Afterward, the homestead is destroyed by fire. These Indians afterward join with another band at the Great Swamp who are holding Peter Williamson and John Adams captive.

October 28 1754 (Monday)—In Pennsylvania, a band of Indians arrives at the homestead of Jacob Miller. They scalp and massacre the entire family, which includes his wife and six of his children Two days later, the Indians massacre the family of George Folke (nine members). The Folke family, after being “scalped and murdered are chopped into pieces and fed to the swine.” During this same rampage, a trader is seized when he encounters the band. They scalp him, but that does not satisfy their grotesque whim. The Indians take the trader, while he remains alive

and they roast him , “then, like cannibals, for want of other food, eat his whole body, and of his head made, what they called, an Indian pudding.” This band after consuming their meal, move out and encounter the Indians holding Peter Williamson and John Adams.

1755-In New England, a contingent of Colonists bolstered by Indian allies, led by the Governor of Massachusetts, Governor Shirley, moves to western New York (June 28 1755) to seize French-held Fort Niagra, but the expedition is unsuccessful. Shirley apparently losing ground to the winter decides to return to Albany. The expeditionary force, however, constructs two forts in Oswego. Shirley is replaced during spring of 1756 by General Abercrombie; he holds command until Lord Loudoun arrives. In conjunction, William Alexander (Later Lord Sterling), having been commissioned as a major, becomes Governor Shirley’s aide-de-camp and his personal secretary. William travels to Albany with the governor and later this same year, he travels to Virginia where he becomes a close friend of George Washington. William and his mother had been operating a business (started by his mother’s first husband) that led to getting contracts with the army and opened the relationship between William and the governor. In other activity, John Adams graduates from Harvard; however, he does not enter the military. He becomes master of a grammar school in Worcester, but by the following year, 1756, he begins to study law. During November 1758, he is admitted to the bar. Adams later, during 1760, becomes one of the first Patriots to openly oppose British policies. **In Georgia** - The English establish Fort Apalachicola in the vicinity of Desser, Georgia. **In New Hampshire**, Based on conditions in the area and intelligence gathered about French intentions for the Connecticut valley, New Hampshire’s governor, Benning Wentworth, orders Captain (later Major) Robert Rogers of Roger’s Rangers to establish a fort at Northumberland. The fort located at the convergence of the Ammonusoosuk and Connecticut Rivers is named Fort Wentworth. At about this time or shortly thereafter, Jacob Bailey (Bayley) joins the New Hampshire militia. Bailey, the eighth of nine children, serves for the duration and rises to the rank of colonel. He becomes a general officer from Vermont during the American Revolution. **In New York**, Cole’s Fort is established at Port Jervis (Orange County) in the Minisink Valley. Fort Augusta is also established at about the same time. Another post, Fort Miller (later Fort Amherst) is established at Seven Mile Post at Queensbury in Warren County. The English establish Seven-mile post (also known as Halfway Brook Post) at Quennsbury (Warren County). The garrison also constructs a stockade fence here. This facility stands at about the mid-point between Fort Edward (initially Fort Lyman) and Fort George, each of which is established this same year near Lake George. Subsequently, during 1757, the post is transformed into a fortified camp (later Fort Amherst 1759). Also, The English establish Fort Lyman (later Fort Edward) in Washington County at present-day Fort Edward. This fort is constructed at the southern end of the route (Great Carrying Place) that extends for about eleven miles from the Hudson River to Fort Anne near the forks of Wood Creek and Lake Champlain. Earlier English fortifications had also been established here. They include Fort Nicholson (1709), Fort Lydius (1732-1745). During the following year, the fort is heavily destroyed by a fire. Subsequent to the disaster, the fort is reconstructed, further fortified and renamed Fort Edward. In an effort to bolster these defenses, the English build fortifications including the Royal Blockhouse on nearby Rogers Island to safeguard the channel to its west. In addition, The English establish a blockhouse with palisades (east side of the Hudson) at a position (Moses Kill) just south of Fort Lyman (later Fort Edward) in Washington County. The post, known as Fort Misery remains active until 1764; however subsequent to the outbreak of war between America and England, the colonial militia occupy it to protect the route to Fort Edward. New York - Fort Miller is established by the English at a site south of Fort Edward and north of Fort

Hardey on the Hudson River across from the town of Fort Miller. According to reports, it is thought that the initial Fort Miller had been constructed during Queen Anne's War along the "west side portage of the Upper Falls" by troops under Colonel Peter Schuyler, while the Nicholson expedition was underway. At the opposing banks of the river, there are two markers, one notes that Fort Miller was built during the French and Indian War by Colonel Miller and on the other bank, the marker reads, Fort Miller built during the French and Indian War (1755) on the opposite side of the river. It is not known when the fort was deactivated, but it is used during the War for Independence by the colonial troops. Also, Fort Hardy, named in honor of Sir Charles Hardy, royal governor of New York, is established (August 1755) by General Phineas Lyman at Schuylerville in Saratoga County. The fort stands at a strategic point where the Fishkill and Hudson River converge and is used against the French by General Johnson during the campaign against Carillon (Crown Point). In conjunction, the British had earlier fortified this area and the posts included a supply depot known as Flatts Stockade established about 1715. The post consisted of a loop-holed structure with a stockade fence that stood atop a high cliff south of Fish Creek. **Central New York** - Fort Gumaer is established at Deerpark in Orange County. The fort provides security to more than 10 settlers during the Indian raids into the area during both 1778 and 1779. The fort remains active until 1765. - Cole's Fort is established near the Delaware River at Port Jervis (Orange County) , which is at this time is New Jersey. The region (Minisink Valley) is actually claimed by Pennsylvania as well. The fort is erected on the property of Wilhemus Cole. In conjunction, it is thought that the fort would again become active after the French and Indian War during the War for Independence (1778). Fort Augusta is established near here at about the same time. **In Western New York** - Fort George is established at Oswego (Oswego County) along with Fort Oswego and Fort Ontario (also known as Fort Rascal and West Fort respectively). **In North Carolina**, Fort Johnston, originally established during 1748 is reconstructed this year (1754) in the shape of a star. The post is located close to the mouth of the Cape Fear River at Smithville (later Southport) to guard the approaches to the settlements further up the river. Governor Arthur Dobbs appoints James Moore as captain (later brigadier general during the American Revolution) and places him in command of the post. Moore later participates in a campaign that dispatches his command into South Carolina to defend it. **In Pennsylvania**, the English continue to fortify the regions. Forts that are established this year include: Fort Manada near Grantville. In addition, Forts Hamilton and Depuis (both near Stroudsburg), Fort Lehigh (Lehigh Gap), Fort Allen (Weissport) and Fort Croghan (Cumberland County) are established. Another post, Fort Penn, is also established near Stroudsburg during the war, but the exact time is unknown. Also, Fort Henry, an anchor fort for Fort Swatara and Fort Manada is established near Bethel in Berks County and Fort Hunter near Harrisburg. In Pennsylvania, the Legislature appropriates £50,000 to provide for a sturdy defense of the frontier, but some in the assembly are Quakers and they protest due to their anti-war beliefs; several resign their positions in the assembly and some others terminate their service at the end of their terms. Consequently, Quaker domination in the Pennsylvania assembly ceases. In conjunction, Pennsylvania had been founded by William Penn, a Quaker. In other activity, Fort Granville is established at Lewisburg and Fort Patterson (Richfield-Juniata County) is built. In conjunction, another Fort Patterson had been built earlier (1751) at Mexico, Pennsylvania also in Juniata County. Also, Fort Shirley known also as Fort Aughwick, is established at Shirleysburg. Also, Samuel Patterson (later brigadier general during their American Revolution) serves as a captain in the Delaware militia during this conflict. Although Delaware has had its own legislature since 1702, it is considered a part of Pennsylvania until the American Revolution.

Also, Caesar Rodney (Signer of the Declaration of Independence) joins the military and serves as a captain of the Delaware militia of Dover Hundred. Later, during 1758, he is appointed as an associate justice. **In other activity in Western Pennsylvania** - The English establish Fort Morris in Shippensburg and Fort McDowell near Bridgeport. The Pennsylvania militia forms the garrison, which is a sister-fort of Fort Franklin, established during 1740. In addition, the English establish Fort McCord at present-day Fort Loudoun. In conjunction, the English during 1756 establish Fort Loudoun at a point less than five miles from Fort McDowell. Also, a fort, actually a fortified church (Steel's Fort) is established by settlers at Mercersburg along the west branch of the Conococheague Creek. Other posts. Fort McCormick and Maxwell's Fort (also known as Fort McField) are each established at Welsh Run Pennsylvania. Yet other forts established in western Pennsylvania this year, include Allison's Fort at Waynesboro and Coomb's Fort at Warfordsburg, the latter located close to the border near Hancock, with Maryland; it is garrisoned by Maryland militia. **In Pennsylvania**, Coomb's Fort is established at a place south of Warfordsburg. Militia from Maryland support the defense of the fort, along with Pennsylvania militia. Also, the house of Samuel DuPui, which is close to Stroudsburg, is changed from a civilian home to a settler's fort. Also, Fort Chambers is established at Chambersburg. In addition, Fort Croghan is established in Cumberland County. Fort Delaware is established along the Delaware River opposite Cohecton Post in Central New York. In addition, Fort Granville is established near Old Town (Lewistown). In yet other activity, Fort Henry is established near Millersburg. Fort Henry is sometimes referred to as Busse's Fort after commander of the post. In conjunction, sometimes the post is erroneously called Fort Swatara; however, they are two separate posts. Also Fort Lebanon is established in Berks County east of the Schuylkill River and less than ten miles beyond Blue Mountain. In conjunction, later , about 1758, Fort Lebanon becomes known as Fort Williams and at times is also referred to as Fort Schuylkill. In addition, Fort Robinson is established south of Tuscarora Mountain (Perry County). In yet other activity, Fort Shirley is established near Augwick Creek (Huntingdon County; however, it is uncertain whether the post was built during 1655 or 1756. Also, Harris' Blockhouse is established near Harrisburg. Others include Hess' Blockhouse in Lebanon County; Fort Hunter at Harrisburg; Maxwell's Fort; Ralston's Fort (some conflict about the year); Reynold's Blockhouse; Spycer's Stockade, near Stouchburg; Yet another fort established this year is Fort Steel (known also as Reverend (John) Steel's Fort, which is located about 5 miles of Fort Loudoun. Waddell's Fort and William Allison's Fort. In Virginia, Fort Dinwiddie is established in Bath County. The fort is also known as Byrd's Fort and William Warwick's Fort. Also, the government of Virginia issues paper money; however, the value quickly declines. In Virginia and Maryland the assemblies appropriate £40,000 and £6,000 respectively, to provide for the defense of the Colonies against the French. Also, Fort Vause (Fort Vaux) is established near the Roanoke River in Montgomery County. **In Western Virginia** - Settlers continue to construct fortifications along the frontier to defend against attack. Fort Ashby is constructed in western Virginia in present-day Mineral County by order of George Washington, who has planned on a series of forts to defend against Indian attacks against settlers. Other forts constructed this year include: Bingaman's Fort near Pansy (Grant County), Fort Ogden (New Creek Blockhouse) (Grant County) Fort Maidstone at Falling Waters,, Great Capacon Fort at Great Capacon, Hedges' Fort at Hedgeville and Cox's Fort near Paw Paw. Others include: Fort Green Bryer is established by Virginia militia at Huntersville, Fort Welton near Maysville Holland's Fort (Lynch's Fort) built by settlers near Moorefield. Also other forts built this year include Cocks' Fort known also as George Parker's Fort at Headsville, John Parker's Fort at Springfield,

Shepherd's Fort at Shepherdstown and Fort Ashby, the latter to guard the route between Fort Loudoun, Virginia and Fort Cumberland, Maryland. Another fort, known as Evans' Fort at Big Spring is remembered mainly for its defenders, all women, during 1756, when the site comes under attack by Indians. Also, Neally's Fort is built by settlers at Martinsburg and it is remembered mostly due to an Indian attack during 1756 that costs the lives of the men, while the women and children are dragged away by the Indians. In addition, Baughman's Fort is established near the mouth of Muddy River. This same year, Indians attack the fort and the settlers there are killed. Also, Fort Ashby is established on Patterson Creek near Frankfort (later, Alaska) and Fort Forman is established in Hampshire County. Also, Fort Neally is established close to Martinsburg. Also, Thomas Shepherd's Fort is established at present-day Sheperdstown.

to thwart the French and Indian threats. **In Massachusetts**, the forts either constructed or defended include a settlers' fort built at Ashefield. Ebenezer Smith, following his service at Lake George arrives at Ashefield. He and others construct a fort that includes a blockhouse (Chileab Smith's) and a tower, in which eight men can be stationed. Colonel Israel Williams with a contingent of militia garrison the fort from June of this year (1755) until the conclusion of the war. The settlers also construct another fort, known as Ellis and Philip's Fort in the same area. In New Jersey, the colonial government authorizes the establishment of four blockhouses in Sussex County. Nonetheless, by 1757, the number increase to six; however, the number rises again to more than 12 forts in northwestern New Jersey. They include: Fort Redding also Reading); Van Campen's House (Abraham Van Campen's Fort, used also as an inn. Count Pulaski used it as headquarters during the Revolution); Fort Cole (New Jersey. Later New York); Fort Johns (also known as Headquarters Fort); Fort Nominac (also Nominack and Normanack); Fort Shipeconk; Fort Walpack; Adam Dingman's Fort; Fort Shapanack; Ellison's Fort (also Allison's Fort) and McMurtie's (McMurty's) Fort. In conjunction, New York, New Jersey and Pennsylvania also established a series of forts in the Minisink Valley.

March 8 1755 (Saturday)–In Canada, M. Duquesne, in a letter to M. Drocour states: “A circumstance occurred at the Beautiful (Ohio)River which seems to promise me that there will be less difficulty in consolidating our new post (Fort Duquesne). The Chouanons, who compose the strongest Nation in that. quarter, have attacked the English, taken seventeen scalps and made ten prisoners, whom they have distributed among different tribes who have taken up the hatchet. Nothing could be so advantageous under existing circumstances, for there are no barriers equal to such defenders; but with such fine gain (for my movements are the same) the Indians must be sustained, as they would soon let go did they think that all the work was left to them. I have, in consequence, sent off a detachment on the ice, and shall, at the opening of the 'navigation, cause (others) to march by brigade, as usual.”

Spring 1755–In Pennsylvania, a party of four Frenchmen and six Shawnee Indians raid the home of Thomas Jemison near Marsh Creek. At the time, some neighbors, a Mr. Buck (Thomas or William) and his sister-in-law, the latter having brought her three children. The Indians initially kill Buck, then they secure Thomas before entering the house where all others are seized, including two younger sons of Thomas. Mary's two other brothers evade capture by hiding in a hollow log. After departing with their ten captives, the Indians suspect that they are being pursued. Consequently, they kill eight of the captives: Thomas' daughter Mary and a young son of Mrs. Buck are spared. The mangled bodies of the others are later discovered in a swamp, but the Indians are not caught. They make it to Fort Duquesne. Mary is adopted by the

Indians and given the name, Dickewamis. Mary marries a Seneca Indian and subsequent to his death, she marries an older Indian, named Hiakatoo. Mary is 20 at the time and her husband is 55 year old. Nevertheless, the 48-year marriage brings about six children, two sons and four daughters, in addition to the son, Thomas, from her first husband. Subsequently, during 1764, when Colonel Bouquet arrives in the Ohio country and demands that all white prisoners be handed over, Mary refuses to return. During 1833, the wife of a missionary visits with Mary at a mission in or near Buffalo. Later when she dies during September, 1833, she receives a Christian burial.

May 1755–In Massachusetts-Maine, Indians initiate raids against the settlements in New Boston (Gray), New Gloucester and North Yarmouth. The Indian raids threaten the region (Maine) until autumn of 1758. **In New York**, the English establish Fort Bull (Wood Creek Fort) and Fort Williams. The former is located close to Rome on the Oneida Carry between Schenectady and Oswego. Fort Williams, also located near Rome (separate from Fort Williams at Lake George and Fort Williams at Salem) is constructed on the Mohawk side of the Carry. Both forts support Fort Oswego, which is located very close to French-held territory.

June 1755 -Despite the lack of a declaration of war by either antagonist, fighting breaks out in North America between the English and French. These hostilities actually initiate the final contest between the two for domination of North America. In the colonies militia units begin to quickly form. **In Connecticut** Israel Putnam raises a company and it serves at times with Roger's Rangers. Israel participates at the Battle of Lake George and in the Ticonderoga campaign. When hostilities first erupted with France (1755), Israel raised a company of militia, and although not officially, the unit was referred to as rangers. Putnam had received the rank of captain from the Connecticut legislature. Putnam's contingent at times serves with Roger's Rangers. During spring of 1756, in recognition of "extraordinary services and good conduct in ranging and scouting, the winter past for the annoyance of the enemy near Crown Point," Israel is awarded 50 Spanish milled dollars. Another man, Captain Noah Grant, for identical reasons, receives 30 Spanish milled dollars. In Massachusetts, Indians launch an attack against settlers near Rice's Fort. Captain Moses Rice is among the killed. Initially, he survives; however, the Indians then scalp him. He dies later on the same day. One of Rices grandchildren (Asa Rice) and another child are taken captive. Young Asa is later freed. Another nearby fort (Taylor's) is not attacked; however, when reinforcements from there arrive at Rice's Fort, the Indians, along with their captives had vanished. **In Virginia**, Indians launch a raid against the Upper Holston Valley. The Stalnaker family is attacked. Samuel Stalnaker is captured, but his wife and son, Adam are killed. Samuel later escapes and returns to his home, thought to be close to Seven Mile Ford in the valley.

June 5 1755 (Friday)–In Maine, Indians attack Burton's Fort (Captain Benjamin Burton) located in the vicinity of Cushing. In this region, only the Tarratine Indians are friendly to the English. During the raid, the Indians kill 5 men who are close to the fort. In addition to the militia defenders, Captain Burton has Newfoundland dogs that are trained to stay out in front of patrols to warn of Indians. In conjunction, the Indians mount another attack during March of the following year, but it is repelled. The defenders lose 2 men killed and 1 scalped. Later, during 1757, Captain Thomas Bradbury assumes command of the post. His garrison is composed of only about 41 men; however, the year passes without any attacks. Subsequently, while the war is beginning to subside, Captain Burton, after having a disagreement with Captain North, decides to depart from the fort. He heads to his "float,"(anchored raft); however, he is unable to cross the river, which is frozen. Later, his body is found. He had frozen to death. The exact date of

Burton's death is uncl

June 6 1755 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Governor Robert H. Morris, concerned about an ongoing drought that has lasted between two and three months, designates June 19 as a day of prayer and abstinence for the province. At this time, General Edward Braddock is making final preparations to depart Will's Creek (Cumberland), Maryland on the expedition to reduce French-held Fort Duquesne in the vicinity of Pittsburgh (Pittsburgh), Pennsylvania. Braddock has been informed of the cunning ways of the Indians aligned with the French and when asked to supply escorts for men cutting a road, he declined, saying that the province might provide protection, but he had no troops to spare. Braddock found it peculiar that many of the colonists had a fear of the Indians and this fueled his beliefs that the colonial troops and officers are inferior to the British regulars. It had also been explained to him that without friendly Indians and colonial rangers (on horse and foot), that his expeditionary force would not reach Fort Duquesne, but Braddock ignores the advice. ear, with 1762 and 1763 being cited.

June 6 1755 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Governor Robert H. Morris, concerned about an ongoing drought that has lasted between two and three months, designates June 19 as a day of prayer and abstinence for the province. At this time, General Edward Braddock is making final preparations to depart Will's Creek (Cumberland), Maryland on the expedition to reduce French-held Fort Duquesne in the vicinity of Pittsburgh (Pittsburgh), Pennsylvania. Braddock has been informed of the cunning ways of the Indians aligned with the French and when asked to supply escorts for men cutting a road, he declined, saying that the province might provide protection, but he had no troops to spare. Braddock found it peculiar that many of the colonists had a fear of the Indians and this fueled his beliefs that the colonial troops and officers are inferior to the British regulars. It had also been explained to him that without friendly Indians and colonial rangers (on horse and foot), that his expeditionary force would not reach Fort Duquesne, but Braddock ignores the advice.

Braddock's condescension is not well concealed, nor is his overconfidence in himself and the British regulars. His feelings regarding the provincial troops and their ability to fight like his regulars borders on contempt as does his views on the French-aligned Indians' ability to impede his progress. Braddock becomes especially annoyed at the provincials who have no genuine interest in learning how to fight Indians by British methods, which had been used to fighting typical European warfare in which the opposing sides fight from standard formations and Braddock has no intention of changing tactics to fight a cunning enemy who uses guerrilla-type tactics. He boasts to Benjamin Franklin: "I shall hardly need to stop more than three or four days at Fort Du Quesne, then I shall march on to Niagara, and from there to Frontenac." Franklin responds by agreeing that his "fine troops, so well provided with artillery, that place, not completely fortified, and, as we hear, with no very strong garrison, can probably make but a short resistance." but afterward, Franklin inserts the threat of the Indians, saying, "The only danger I apprehend of obstruction to your march is from ambuscades of Indians, who, by constant practice, are dexterous in laying and executing them and the slender line, near four miles long, which your army must make, may expose it to be attacked by surprise in its flanks, and to be cut like a thread into several pieces, which, from their distance, cannot come up in time to support each other."

Nevertheless, according to Franklin, Braddock merely "smiled at his ignorance," and states: "These savages may, indeed, be a .formidable enemy to your raw American militia; but upon the

King's regular and disciplined troops, sir, it is impossible they should make any impression.” In addition, Colonel George Washington, along as a volunteer confers with Braddock and urges him to bring 100 Indians under George Croghan (interpreter) to neutralize the French Indians, but yet again Braddock ignores the advice and simultaneously incenses the Indians who reject his attempts to humiliate them and leave the encampment. In addition, Braddock pens several letters for delivery back in England and in these too, he describes his opinion of the provincials, stating: “...have little courage or goodwill. I expect almost no military service from them, though I have employed the best officers to drill them.” In conjunction, there is conflicting information regarding Thomas Sumter (brigadier general during the American Revolution). Some sources claim he participates in General Braddock's expedition; however, William Martin, the son of Brigadier General Joseph Martin, presented evidence that his father and General Sumter joined the military together during 1756. In conjunction, no evidence exists to verify that General Sumter was with Braddock.

June 11 1755 (Wednesday)--In Massachusetts, war is declared against the Indians east of the Piscataqua by the provincial government due to the enormous amount of Indian attacks that have been ravaging the colony. The government moves to entice the enlisted men to take action. A bounty of £ 250 in provincial paper is offered for each Indian captured; however, a bounty of £200 is offered for each Indian scalp taken. The offer is exclusively for enlisted men. The offered bounties for un-enlisted men is £ 110 for a captive and £100 for an Indian scalp. In other activity, Indians attack a work party at the settlement at Charlemont. Captain Moses Rice and Phineas Arms, a soldier from Deerfield, are killed. The Indians also capture two of the party, both boys, Moses' son Artemus and his grandson, Asa are captured, however, Artemus is able to escape and reach Taylor's Fort.

June 14 -July 13th 1755--In Maryland, a force composed of about 2,000 troops, half of whom are British, commanded by General Edward Braddock, departs Cumberland, Maryland (Wills Creek) on 14 June to engage the French at Fort Duquesne in the Ohio Valley (Pittsburgh). On the 16th, Braddock's forces arrive at Little Meadow. Another contingent under Sir John St. Clair and Major Chapman had arrived earlier and constructed a fort there. The colonial forces include two New York companies, commanded by Captain Horatio Gates. Braddock has decided to trace the route that Colonel Washington had earlier carved out to reach Great Meadows, but the route has its pitfalls as it is narrow and not well suited for the accompanying artillery. Nevertheless, the force advances, eventually splitting into two contingents, the trailing units commanded by Colonel Dunbar.

During the early part of July (8th) the English vanguard approaches the forks of the Ohio River, but this contingent, of about 1,200 men under Braddock has only a few pieces of artillery with it. In the meantime, the French had become aware of the approach of the English. There had been thoughts of abandoning the fort because it was thought there was insufficient strength to hold it, but a suggestion by Captain De Beaujeu to send out a contingent to intercept the British is accepted by the Commander, M. De Contrecoeur. The French receive Indian reinforcements (Chippewa, Huron and Ottawa) that arrive by canoe from Michilimackinac with Charles de Langlade. Braddock, having reached his bivouac area continues to receive warnings about French tactics and the great possibility of encountering an ambush; however, he totally rejects the advice, but retains his over-confidence in the abilities to thwart any interference that the French might place in the way of his regulars.

The advance force, composed of about 850 Canadians under Daniel Hyacinth Mary Lienard de Beaujeu (a Canadian by birth) and a supporting force of about 6–700 Indians led by Athanse (Lorette Indian) and Pontiac, depart the fort early on the 9th of July. The intent is to deploy at the Monongahela before the English arrive there; however, the British cross the river before the French reach the river, which compels the French to modify their plan. Instead they establish positions in the woods and the ravines from where they remain invisible to the advancing troops. De Beaujeu, a seasoned veteran who also speaks the language of the Indians intend to impede the progress of the overwhelming British force to buy time for Contrecoeur to safely abandon Fort Duquesne.

In the meantime, the 9th of July, the English move across the Monongahela River and advance with their bright scarlet uniforms glistening, while their colors are flying and the drums are banging. Braddock, upon approaching the narrows, crosses back to the opposite bank and then advances to a point about five-seven miles distant, then re-crosses the river at about 1300. The first division to cross had been under Lt. Colonel Thomas Gage and he informed Braddock about tracks and the possibility of French forces being close. However, Braddock's anticipation of being confronted by the French at the ford fails to materialize because Beaujeu had been delayed due to some difficulties with his Indians. Nonetheless, the vanguard, Gage's contingent, moves toward Frazer's Run to reach and secure the plantation of James Frazer which is located nearby. Gage encounters no opposition; however, as Braddock's force crosses, the footprints discovered earlier by Gage prove his theory. The second division (the contingent devoted to cutting the road), composed of about 200 troops under St Clair crosses, followed by Braddock's force and the artillery in the 3rd division. Meanwhile, Gage's contingent begins to ascend what appears to be a benign slope with a ravine on either side, both of which seem tranquil, however, Indians and French troops hold concealed positions at both ravines.

Braddock advances prudently. Six Virginians on horseback and several guides hold the point, followed by a forward detachment of the vanguard, with the remainder of Gage's contingent in the rear. Squeezed in between the vanguard and Braddock's main body, there is a detachment of men assigned to use their axes to ensure passage and with them two artillery pieces, ammunition wagons and a contingent acting as rear guards. To the rear of the guards, the convoy trails, accompanied by some troops on horseback and several artillery pieces, along with another work party. Although there are no visible signs of the French, spotted either by the column or the troops on either flank, each yard gained increases the tension. Nevertheless, the troops at the point suddenly begin to fall back, just as the main body approaches the ravine. The fall back occurs just as the guides spot a man who is wearing Indian garb, but he also is wearing an officer's gorget, a piece of armor to protect his throat. The Indian (thought to be Beaujeu) essentially does an about-face, while waving his hat, the signal to attack. But still, the English are unable to locate any other enemy troops. Nonetheless, they immediately hear the boisterous war cries of the invisible Indians. While the advance troops are retreating, others are pushing forward.

Gage's contingent forms to defend, but they can only guess at where the French and Indians are deployed. British fire is aimed toward the sounds of the French weapons, however, the return fire of the British is too effective for the Canadians. About 100 Canadians (militia), approximately one-half on the white French troops lose their nerve after being fired upon and are known to

have run away in “tears,” due to their fears. They return to Fort Duquesne. In the meantime, during the third volley fired by the British, Bejeu is slain. Shortly thereafter, the Indians due to their great fear of artillery, retreat to positions out of range of Gage’s artillery. While the artillery fire descends on the woods, confidence returns to the Red Coats who resume the advance, while raising cheers and bellowing: “God save the king.” One contingent under Sir Peter Halkett (44th Regiment) awaits the word to advance, while the engineers under Harry Gordon are retiring. The situation becomes chaotic and still, the British are unable to see their foe. Halkett moves forward ahead of his command, but he is shot from his horse and killed. His son James arrives and he too is killed. Halkett’s oldest son, Peter succeeds him to become Sir Peter Halkett. He succumbs unmarried during 1779.

In the meantime, Jean-Daniel Dumas, successor to Bejeu, remains in the field, but with only his regulars; however, he and the other officers pull back from the brink of disaster by rallying the Indians. During the menacing exchange, General Braddock bolts for the front of the line with about 400 troops following. By then, Dumas orders the Indians to attack the British flank and shortly thereafter, led by Charles Langlade, the charge is initiated, placing the British in extremely bad positioning as incoming fire is originating from every direction and seemingly from behind every rock and tree. The enfilade inflicts heavy casualties upon the British. The English troops that are familiar with fighting Indians request permission to break formation to take positions in the woods, but Braddock, adamantly opposes the idea and refuses to modify the typical European tactics of maintaining a rigid formation. His decision seals the fate of his command and to further complicate the morale of his own troops, he swings his sword at some and calls them “cowards.”

Shortly thereafter, the advancing British again find themselves being greeted by the French who unleash another enfilade of fire from concealed positions. The sudden thunderclap of fire originating in the woods is seemingly in cadence with the voluminous shrieking yells of the French and the Indians who lurk behind the trees in the thicket. The whirlwind of pernicious fire and the ominous clouds of smoke drive the advance units of the British back, but many fall. Return fire is made, but there is no focus as the enemy positions still are not revealed. The British, despite the incessant fire, continue to remain in rigid traditional formation and the sheets of fierce continue to descend upon them. The trailing British units speed to support the advance troops, but the menacing fire drains the concentration of the British who begin to lose their discipline.

The English Colonists repeatedly request permission to break ranks and fire from less regimented positions to neutralize the irregular warfare they are facing, but Braddock, insists that they retain strict formations, those which they have so often used successfully against their European foes. Nonetheless, the seasoned Virginians, accustomed to the fighting methods of the Indians, remain focused and take to protected positions to return fire and preserve their numbers. Some of the British attempt to follow suit, but Braddock forbids them from breaking formation. It is a costly mistake, but the British stubbornly continue this practice for years. In the meantime, the rear elements of the column continue to advance and as the retreating units enjoin the main column even more disorganization befalls them and still they can not identify the positions of the enemy, making it nearly impossible for them to return accurate fire. By this time, many of the officers have been taken out, but the English continue to hold the line carrying the

battle for several hours. Due to the far superior positions of the French, the British inflict only small numbers of casualties on the French and the Indians. Nonetheless, every mounted English Officer except George Washington has been felled and one of the incoming shells inflicts a mortal blow upon General Braddock, the latter having had five horses shot from under him before the mortal blow. Braddock's aide, the son of Governor Shirley is also killed.

The British regulars, upon seeing Braddock removed from the field, lose their will to resist. They become completely demoralized and begin a hurried disoriented retreat, haunted by the ominous smoke and invisible enemy which they have yet to discover. However, the colonials perform well despite the circumstances. They recapture the artillery, but because the wagoners deserted, they are forced to leave it behind for the French, due to a lack of horses and wagons. The English sustain catastrophic losses during this one-sided confrontation, losing about 900 either killed or wounded from the force of about 1,200-1,400 of the troops under Braddock. The 50-man contingent of the Royal Artillery under Captain Ord (drawn earlier from Nova Scotia) is decimated; however, Captain Ord is not among the casualties. The survivors retire to join with Colonel Dunbar, but when the force is united, Dunbar believes the force insufficient to launch an attack. He orders a retreat to Will's Creek (Cumberland, Maryland). In addition, the French are able to seize most of General Braddock's baggage and his papers. Among the papers, the French find the map and other intelligence detailed during the previous year by Captain Stobo who had been retained as a captive at Fort Necessity. At this time, Stobo remains in French hands and his name is on the information. Consequently, the French place him under tighter control in Quebec.

The French and the Indians initiate pursuit prompting the English to accelerate their retreat out of fear that if captured, their scalps would surely be hung in the tee-pees of the Indians. In conjunction, there have been reports that a colonial soldier, Thomas Faucett, had upon watching the slaughter, shot Braddock because he would not let the troops fire from behind trees to save the remainder of the force. Faucett never denounces the story and in fact he notes that the action saved the remnants of the army. The British make it to positions in close proximity to the former site of Fort Necessity at Great Meadows (Uniontown, Pennsylvania) on July 13th. Later on this day, General Braddock succumbs and on the following day he is given a Christian burial under the illumination of torches, while George Washington reads the Episcopal Church's funeral rites at a site along the highway that his troops had widened to accommodate the wagons and Artillery. The exact spot of the grave is concealed by the army prior to its return to Virginia. In conjunction, General Braddock's last Will and Testament, drawn up during the previous November, was given to an actress, George Anne Bellamy (Covent-Garden Theatre). The will names General Braddock's friend a woman named Mary Yorke and a man, John Calcraft, the husband of Mrs. Bellamy, "essentially Braddock's goddaughter" as his sole beneficiaries. In conjunction, Braddock at the time is apparently unaware that George Anne considers Calcraft as a scoundrel. In her memoirs, printed during 1766, George Anne refers to him and in one instance states that he "transcends every other mortal; for you (Calfcraft) have pride equal to Lucifer, though you want his spirit; to which are added the turbulence of Moloch, and the avarice of and the avarice of Mammon--You see I am still desirous of introducing you into good company..."

Christopher Gist and his two sons, Nathaniel and Thomas, all survive the battle. Christopher afterward begins to raise a company of scouts, drawn from men in Maryland and Virginia. Once

formed Gist known by that time as Captain Gist operates on the frontier. Later during 1756, he travels to the Carolinas to enlist Cherokees into service for the English and for a while, he serves as an Indian agent; however, he does not survive the war. During 1759, while in the south (either Georgia or South Carolina) during the summer months, Christopher comes down with smallpox and dies. His son, Richard, serves in the American Revolution and is killed at the Battle of Kings Mountain. Christopher's son Nathaniel serves during the American Revolution as a colonel in the Virginia line. Subsequent to the close of hostilities he moves to Kentucky. Also, William Maxwell (Lord Stirling, later a brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in this campaign. Maxwell, later a colonel during this war, also participates under General Amherst at Ticonderoga and it is thought that he also participates in the campaign to seize Quebec.

During the engagement, the British inflict only about 60 casualties upon the French and Indians. However, the English-Colonial force sustains nearly 1,000 killed including more than sixty officers. George Washington, had been repeatedly struck, but not wounded. He later states in a letter to his brother: "By the all-powerful dispensation of Providence, I have been protected beyond all human probability or expectation; for I had four bullets through my coat, and two horses shot under me, and escaped unhurt, although death was leveling my companions on every side of me." The list of British officers killed or wounded: General Braddock (mortally wounded); Braddock's aids-de-camp Captain Robert Orme (wounded) and Roger Morris (wounded); Braddock's secretary William Shirley (killed); Sir John St. Clair, Deputy Quartermaster General (wounded); Lt. Matthew Leasley Asst. To Quartermaster General (wounded). 44th Regiment: Colonel Sir Peter Halket (killed); Lt. Col. Thomas Gage (wounded); Captain Charles Tatton (killed); Captain-Lieutenant Richard Gethins (killed); Lt. William Litteler (wounded); Lt. William Dunbar (wounded); Lt. James Halket (killed); Lt. John Treby (wounded); Lt. James Allen (killed); Lt. Andrew Simpson (wounded); Lt. Robert Lock (wounded); Ensign Daniel Disney (wounded); Ensign Quinton Kennedy (wounded); Ensign Robert Townsend (killed); Ensign Francis Nartlow (listed as killed, but his name does not appear on the list of officers of the 44th Regiment); Ensign George Penington (wounded). 48th Regiment: Lt. Col. Ralph Burton (wounded); Major William Sparks (wounded); Captain Robert Chulmley (killed); Captain Richard Bowyer (wounded); Captain Robert Ross (wounded); Lt. Theodore Barbut (wounded); Lt. William Wideman (also Widman, killed); Lt. Henry Gladwin (wounded); Lt. William Edmiston (wounded); Lt. Percival Brereton (killed); Lt. John Hart (killed); John Montreseur (wounded); Ensign Alexander McMullen (also, McMullen, wounded); Ensign Richard Crow (wounded); Ensign Robert Sterling (wounded). Artillery: Captain Lt. Robert Smith (killed); Lt. Francis James Buckhannon (wounded); Lt. William McCloud (also, McCleod, wounded); Lt. Patrick McCuller (wounded). Engineers: Peter McKellar (also McKellar, wounded); Robert Gordon (wounded); Adam Williamson (wounded). Seamen attached to Braddock: Lt. Spendelow (killed); Mr. Haynes (killed); Mr. Talbot (killed). Also: Captain William Stone (General Peregrine's regiment, killed); Captain Scot Floyer (Major General Hugh Warburton's regiment, wounded). Independent Companies of New York: Captain Horatio Gates (wounded); Lt. Simon Sumain (killed); Lt. Howarth (Captain Demaris' regiment, wounded); Lt. Robert Gray (Captain Demaris' regiment, wounded). Virginians: Captain Adam Stephen (later general, wounded); Captain William Poulson (killed); Captain Peronie (also, Peyrone, killed); John Hamilton (killed); Carolus Gustavus de Splitdorff (killed); Walter Stewart (wounded); Edmund Wagoner (killed).

Doctor Craik, who was at the battle, later relates that fifteen years after the rout, an Indian chief, who had been engaged, traveled to the Forks of the Kenhawa and Ohio Rivers in search of Washington. The Chief is of the belief that Washington has special protections. He claims that during the fighting he personally selected Washington as a target and with his rifle, fired at him no less than fifteen rounds and he had also instructed his braves to fire at Washington, but none could slay him. Continuing, he states that he believed that “the Great Spirit protected the young hero and ceased firing at him.” Adding to the mystique of the incident, others too had noticed the unusual circumstances of Washington remaining unscathed. About one month after the battle, Reverend Samuel Davies, while speaking to a company of volunteers, states: “I can not but hope Providence has hitherto preserved him in so signal a manner, for some importance to his country.” Also, Daniel Boone participates with Braddock’s expedition as a Wagoner. It is thought that he also participated with the subsequent attack against Fort Du Quesne led by General Forbes during 1758. Boone a former resident of Pennsylvania had emigrated to North Carolina during 1750.

Colonel Dunbar after returning to Will’s Creek, takes most of the force (about 1,200 men) to Philadelphia to establish winter quarters there, but he does direct the independent companies to garrison Will’s Creek and protect the frontier, as well as about 400 wounded, but west of the Allegheny Mountains, the French and their Indian allies dominate. Colonel Dunbar remains in the colonies only a short while. Once word of Braddock’s defeat arrives back in England, Dunbar is recalled. Afterward, he is appointed Lt. Governor of Gibraltar. Later during 1760, he is promoted to lieutenant general in the royal service.

Subsequent to the death of General Braddock (13th), Governor Shirley of Massachusetts, succeeds him as commander of the British forces in America. Also, James Ewing (brigadier general during American Revolution) participates in the campaign. Subsequently, prior to the close of hostilities about 1758, he is promoted to the rank of lieutenant. Another future major general (American Revolution), Charles Lee participates in this campaign with the rank of lieutenant. Following the defeat, Lee’s regiment moves to Albany, New York. Also, Captain Andrew Lewis (later brigadier general during the American Revolution). In addition, Charles Scott (later brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in this campaign. Subsequently, Scott serves as a non-commissioned officer (later captain) under Colonel Washington and later under Colonel William Byrd’s (Burd) campaign against the Cherokee. Another future brigadier general during the Revolution, Evan Shelby who participates in this campaign joined the military as a private. Later he participates in General Braddock’s failed campaign, followed by participation during General Forbes’ campaign, which seizes Fort Duquesne. At the latter, Shelby held the rank of captain. In conjunction, Evan Shelby is the father of General Isaac Shelby. Also, Adam Stephen (later major general during the Revolution) is among those that make it back to Fort Necessity. He is promoted to the rank of colonel by the following December and given command of Fort Cumberland (Maryland). Subsequently, during 1759, Colonel Stephen and his Virginians are relieved of responsibility for Fort Cumberland. Following a meeting in Philadelphia, the responsibility is transferred to Maryland. Colonel Stephen also serves during Pontiac’s War (1763).

June 15 1755 (Sunday)–In Massachusetts, Governor Shirley requests of Sir William Johnson that he confer with Colonel Peter Schuyler, Colonel John Henry Lydius and the field officers of the regiments of Shirley and Pepperell about the “proper measures to be taken for conveying the

troops destin'd for the Strait of Niagara in the expedition under my command from Schenectady to Oswego." He had also stated at or about this time: "You are to acquaint the Indians of the Six Nations, if you shall judge it from the temper you find them in, proper to do so, with his Majesty's design to recover their lands at Niagara out of the hands of the French." Shortly thereafter, on the 19th, Johnson writes to Goldsboro Banyar stating: "Mr. Lyddius showed me a commission he has from Governor Shirley as Collo of all the Indians, who may go with him to Niagara. I find Shirley thinks of himself and little of any body else." In conjunction, Colonel Lydius, attempts to bypass Johnson to solicit the support of the Indians for the Niagara campaign; however, the Indians report the incidents to Johnson who afterward puts a stop to the chicanery. He forbids Colonel Lydius and his interpreter from initiating any further private negotiations with the Indians.

June 16 1755 (Monday)–In Maryland, General Edward Braddock's force en route to Fort Duquesne in western Pennsylvania, arrives at Little Meadow. Subsequent to conferring with Colonel Washington, Braddock decides to retrace the route earlier taken by Washington. On the following day, a vanguard, composed of about 1,200 troops under Sir Peter Halket, Lt. Colonel Thomas Gage, Lt. Colonel Burton and Major Sparks. Afterward, on the 18th, Sir John St. Clair departs Little Meadow with about one-third of the force. Later, on the 19th, General Braddock with about 800 men departs, Meanwhile, the remainder of the force under Colonel Dunbar and major Chapman to follow. Along the march, several incident occur. The French spot Scarrooyady (Oneida chief) and capture him, but they in turn also allow him to escape. Meanwhile, the large contingent under St. Clair encounters a French force of about 200-300, and repels an attack launched by them and their Indian allies. The march continues at a slow pace as St. Clair's troops toil to stabilize the road by leveling rough spots and by constructing bridges to provide passage for wagons and artillery, which permits the column to average only about 12 miles in four days. In conjunction, Washington becomes ill and he is compelled to remain behind, but he does join up with Braddock on 8 July.

June 19 1755 (Thursday)–In New York, Goldsboro Banyar (clerk of the New York council) in a letter to Sir William Johnson states: "I hope you'll take care that at least 3,700 men be left for Crown Point, and that even none be sent to Niagara (if you can prevent it) unless you see proof of the consent of all the Governments concerned." Banyar is of the opinion that the French cannot sufficiently fortify Niagara against the force under Shirley that is moving against it. Banyar also states: "Niagara in a general view, or system, is no doubt of very great Importance, but my Skin is nearer to me than my Coat, and I had rather be subjected to the inclemency of the Weather, than have my skin stript over my Ears." Also, at an undetermined time, Jacobus Swartwout (brigadier general during the American Revolution) joins the militia (Duchess County) with the rank of captain. In other activity, Sir William Johnson in a letter, dated this day, to Governor Shirley responds to one of the requests regarding Indians participating in the campaign. He states: "To establish the Indians into Companys of 100 men each with Captains, Lieutenants and Ensigns, is impossible, that sort of regularity cannot be obtained amongst those People their officers must be Interpreters and take care of them in all respects, besides doing their Duty as officers. Ensigns will be needless. You may depend I will employ no more officers than what are absolutely necessary for the service. Herein I expect the Governments will confide in me and they shall have no just cause for reproach..."

June 21 1755 (Saturday)–In New York, at Mount Johnson, Sir William Johnson meets with the Nine Confederate nations, the Senecas, Cayugas, Oneida, Tuscarora, Onondagas, Tiederigroenes, Schanadarighroenes, Delawares, Aughquages and the Upper & Lower

Mohawks. About 1,100 Indians, including women and children arrive for the conference.

June 24 1755 (Tuesday)-In Canada, the Marquis Duquesne completes his term as governor of New France. He is succeeded by the Marquis Pierre de Rigaud Vaudreuil-Cavagnal, the former governor of Louisiana who becomes the final French governor of Canada. He serves until 8 September 1760 (date of surrender of Montreal to the English). The Marquis Pierre Francois de Vaudreuil de Cavagnal, who received his commission during the previous January also becomes governor of Cape Breton, Saint John's and Louisiana.

In conjunction, prior to departing for France, Duquesne holds a council with the Iroquois and during the discussions, Duquesne explains his perception of the differences between the French and the English with regard to the Indians stating: "Are you ignorant of the difference between the King of France and the King of England?" Go see the forts our King has established and you shall see that you can still hunt under their very walls. They have been placed for your advantage in places you frequent. The English, on the contrary are no sooner in possession of a place than the game is driven away. The forest falls before them as they advance and the soil is laid bare so that you can scarce find the wherewithal to erect a shelter for the night."

June 27 1755 (Friday)-In New Hampshire, Indians attack Bridgman's Fort, which is located close to Fort Hinsdale and No. 4. At the time of the raid, only three families, those of Caleb How, Benjamin Garfield and Hilkia Grout. At about dusk, while the men and some of their boys depart from the field to return to the fort, they are ambushed. At the time, Caleb How and his boys are on horseback and in front of the others when the Indians, holding concealed positions, open fire at a point slightly north of the fort. Caleb is hit in his thigh and just after he falls from his horse, the Indians are upon him. They take his scalp and then pound him in the head with a hatchet. In the meantime, his boys are captured. The two other men, Garfield and Grout try to escape. Grout succeeds; however, Garfield drowns. The Indians lurk near the fort until dark and then they use a ruse to gain entrance. From earlier surveillance, they gained the signal. After giving the proper signal, the gates are opened. All of the women and children are captured and taken back to Canada. On the following day, reinforcements discover Caleb How. He had survived the brutal attack; however, after being taken to Fort Hilsdale, he dies later this day (28th). Before the end of the month, Fort Keene, New Hampshire is attacked. The defenders repulse the attack; however, the Indians seize Benjamin Twitchel while they are departing from the fort. In addition, the Indians slay a large number of cattle. In Virginia, two separate contingents of French and Indians raid the Virginia frontier and massacre nine families in Hampshire County. Governor Dinwiddie had earlier ordered the militia to be prepared for the incursion; however, in a letter to Governor DeLancey of New York, Dinwiddie mentions that he believed the militia were overcome with panic. In the same letter, Governor Dinwiddie informs DeLancey that he has ordered two companies of rangers to pursue the Indians, whom he claims "lurk in the Woods all day and execute their murders and Robberies in the Night."

July 1755-In Massachusetts, Benjamin Lincoln (later Major General Continental Army), a farmer, is appointed as adjutant of the Massachusetts militia (Suffolk County); however he does not serve in the field during any of the campaigns. Also, Benjamin had married Mary Cushing, the daughter of Elijah and Elizabeth Barker Cushing. Subsequently, during 1763, Benjamin is promoted to the rank of major. Also, Massachusetts forces also defend the northern frontier. Heman Swift (later, brigadier general during the American Revolution) at an undetermined time serves as a lieutenant during the war with the provincial troops assigned there. In Virginia, Indians launch a raid in Montgomery County. They seize Mary Draper Ingles, the wife of William Ingles at Blacksburg. Pulaski County. Mrs. Ingles is taken to the Ohio as a captive;

however, she later escapes and somehow, by herself travels 800 miles overland and makes it back to Lynchburg.

July 8 1755 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, General Braddock’s army reaches the Monongahela River where it converges with the Youghiogony. Colonel Washington, having partially recovered from the fever joins the advance force there. The English are closing on Fort Duquesne and the troops expect to reduce it on the following day. **In Virginia (Draper’s Meadow Massacre)**, Indians attack Draper’s Meadow and kill, wound or capture everyone in the settlement. The Indians are spotted by Mrs. John Draper, who is outside of the house when the raiders appear. She rushes back to sound the alarm and to get her child, before exiting out another door. She is fired upon and wounded in the arm, which causes her to drop her child. Nevertheless, she picks the child up with her left hand and resumes her attempt at escape until caught by the Indians. The Indians then swing Mrs. Draper’s infant’s head against one of the “house logs;” however, the child survives. Mrs. Draper is among those taken captive. Meanwhile, Colonel Patton, militia commander of the region is sitting at a table in the house when the attack commences. He kills two of the attackers with his broadsword, before other Indians kill him. Another man, William Ingles, is at a nearby field and unarmed. Although the Indians attempt to kill him, Ingles escapes by outrunning his two pursuers. Yet another, John Draper is away from the house and he too escapes harm. Casualties include: Casper Barrier, Mrs. George Draper and a child of John Draper, along with Colonel James Patton are killed; James Cull and Mrs. John Draper are wounded; Mrs. John Draper, Mrs. William Ingles (sister of John Draper), James Cull and Henry Lenard are taken as prisoners and dragged away. In conjunction, Mrs. Draper, in addition to her infant also has two sons, George, three years old and Thomas who is four. Both of her boys are also captured. Afterward, the Indians carry off as much as they can carry and the items include ammunition. They head west and shortly after leaving the place of destruction and massacre, the Indians arrive at the house of Philip Barger, an elderly settler. The Indians decapitate Mr. Barger and carry it off with them. Later, they leaves Barger’s head at the house of Philip Lybrook at Sinking Creek. The Indians tell Mrs. Lybrook to “look in the bag and she would find an acquaintance.” In conjunction, Mrs. Draper finally returns home during 1761, after being ransomed by her husband John Draper. Afterward, they have seven additional children. Subsequent to his wife’s death during 1774, John remarries (1776), taking a widow, Mrs. Jane Crockett as his second wife. Together, they have two children, both daughters. John Draper dies during 1778. Also, Mrs. Ingles also escapes from captivity, initially with a Dutch woman who at one point becomes temporarily deranged and tries to kill Mrs. Ingles. Nevertheless, they separate and Mrs. Ingles arrives back at Draper’s Meadows where she is saved by Adam Harmon, who takes her to the fort at Dunkard’s Bottom. Afterward, a party moves from the fort and discovers the Dutch woman who is also brought to safety at the fort. In other activity, Governor Dinwiddie writes to Colonel James Patton, regarding the situation in Augusta County. The letter, dated this day, in part: “SIR: The cruel Murders and barbarous Usages of the Ind's to the Settlers of the Frontiers of Augusta Co'ty gives me a sensible Concern and uneasiness y't our Fellow Subjects sh'd be so ill-treated. To prev't such barbarities for the' future I desire You will imediately list fifty Men as rangers for guard of the Frontiers of y't Co'ty, and enclos'd You have the blank Comiss. for a Capt. and two Lieut's, and if old Capt. (John) Smith will take the Com'o. for Capt. I desire he may have the refusal of it; if he does not, I confide in You to make Choice of one properly qualified, y't knows the Woods and the Method of attack'g the Ind's in the Bushes...”

July 9 1755 (Wednesday)–In New York, Colonel Bradstreet, at Oswego, engaged in the project

to build vessels writes to Governor Shirley (of Massachusetts): "I hope the new galley you now order to be built and the schooners may answer the purpose, but I think it my duty to inform you I am fearful they will not, for they are so full built they will not sail before the wind, and this lake is like the ocean where there is strong gails and great seas with few harbours...The French that pass this place in their way to the Ohio do it by night, which is all I know about them. He writes in another letter at nearly the same time in which he states: "I am sorry that I have occasion to mention that there is not one man comes here but openly and notwithstanding my beat endeavors proclaime your coming with the number of troops and the service they are intended for, and that the French have some of the five Nations constantly coming agoing [sic] from hence with an account of what passes. Neagara (Niagara) at this time has but a very small garrison and no work going on, but I am inform'd by Indians they expect several hundred men there soon to build a fort." Also, on this same day, Bradstreet writes to Governor De Lancey and informs him that some French are encamped about six miles outside of Oswego. Afterward, the French break camp and move to Niagara. **In Pennsylvania**, the French defeat General Braddock's force near Fort Duquesne (See also, June 14-July 13, 1755). Part of General Braddock's army is struck by a French force and later in the day as it crosses the Monongahela, the French strike again with a force composed of about 250 Frenchman and about 650 Indians initiates an attack. The English force is composed primarily of regular troops. The British army is split into three divisions with the first contingent under Lt. Colonel Thomas Gage amounting to about 300 troops, accompanied by two cannon. Following the second attack, Gage continues his march toward Frazer's Run to secure the property of James Frazer. In conjunction with the French victory over General Edward Braddock, the French and their Indian allies immediately plan on building their momentum, based of their success over the English by penetrating deeper into the frontier against the settlements in Cumberland, Berks, Lancaster, Northampton and York Counties. The raids plunder the region and many deaths are inflicted by massacre. In addition, the raiders destroy countless homes and farms and they frequently attack the forts. Some massacres that occur shortly after the defeat of Braddock are believed to have been the work of *Shingask* (called King Shingas by the colonists) and Captain Jacob. A reward of seven hundred dollars was offered for their "heads." Those on the frontier began to demand relief and to underscore their intent, corpses were sometimes carried to Philadelphia to display the barbarism of the attack to the legislature. In other activity, at French-held Fort Duquesne, a young English captive, James Smith, who had been recently captured, relates activity at the fort during the morning: "I heard a great stir in the fort as I could then walk with a staff in my hand (injuries from running the gauntlet), I went out of the door, which was just by the wall of the fort, and stood upon the wall, and viewed the Indians in a huddle before the gate, where there were barrels of powder, bullets, flints, etc., and every one taking what suited, I saw the Indians also march off in rank entire; likewise the French Canadians and some regulars. Though the Indians now went off with some alacrity, and a short time before they had been slow enough." In conjunction, the commandant, De Contrecreur does not exhibit confidence regarding withstanding an attack. Nevertheless, Captain Beaujeu, essentially a bold and daring officer, had recently arrived with reinforcements and he is scheduled to relieve De Contrecreur in several days. Beaujeu, speaking to the Indians, persuades the Indians to move out to intercept the English. His force is composed of 36 French officers and cadets, along with 72 regulars and slightly less than 150 Canadians; however, they are bolstered by more than 600 Indians. James Smith, confident that Braddock would prevail soon discovers that his freedom was not at hand. Later in the day, he witnesses the spectacle when the troops return to the fort. He notes: "I heard a number of scalp halloos, and

saw a company of Indians and French coming in. I observed they had a great many bloody scalps, grenadiers' caps, British canteens, bayonets, etc., with them. They brought the news that Braddock was defeated. After that another company came in, which appeared to be about one hundred, and chiefly Indians, and it seemed to me that almost every one of this company was carrying scalps: after this came another company with a number of wagon horses, and also a great many scalps. Those that were coming in, and those that had arrived, kept a constant firing of small arms, and also the great guns in the fort, which were accompanied with the most hideous shouts and yells from all quarters, so that it appeared to me as if the infernal regions had broke loose. About sundown I beheld a small party coming in with about a dozen prisoners, stripped naked, with their hands tied behind their backs, and their faces and part of their bodies blacked: these prisoners they burned to death on the bank of the Allegheny river, opposite to the fort. I stood on the fort wall until I beheld them begin to burn one of these men: they had him tied to a stake, and kept touching him with firebrands, red-hot irons, etc., and he screamed in a most doleful manner: the Indians, in the meantime, yelling like infernal spirits. As this scene appeared too shocking for me to behold, I retired to my lodgings both sore and sorry.”

July 21 1755 (Monday)–In New York, Sir William Johnson, recently reappointed as superintendent of Indian Affairs (Six Nations) holds council (Iroquois Council) at Fort Johnson. The nine tribes that attend are: Cayugas; Delawares; Ogquagas; Oneidas; Onondagas; Onondagas; Schanandarighones; Senecas and Tiederigrones. In conjunction, Johnson had earlier resigned as superintendent, but after the Board of Trade had Braddock reinstate him the Indians were apparently pleased. The council lasts for about two weeks and Johnson handled the entertainment and the task of feeding about 1,200 Indians at his expense. In France, d’Argenson (former French minister), becomes infuriated after the news that the English had captured two French ships (10 June)reaches France. His remarks in part: “...The instant this news reached London, the English, by acclamation, declared war against us; the House of Lords did the same (having, no doubt, their conditional orders); our ambassador, the Duc de Mirepoix, is returning, and we have sent despatches by courier to de Bussey, our ambassador in Hanover, to return to Paris. There is great embarrassment at Compiegne. These arrogant, ambitious, and usurping Englishmen declare war and attack, unjustly, what they pretend to be usurping claims. Our war is just; theirs is like that of Algiers, or the wolf and the lamb. At a time when we were negotiating boundaries and had gone into port at Coromandel, where we were trying to pacificate everything, they attacked us ten against one. What more tyrannical and usurping scheme than that of destroying our whole navy in order, by that means, to pass on to the Spanish colonies?”

July 22 1755 (Tuesday)–In New Hampshire, Indians attack Hinsdale’s Fort during the morning at about 0900. They strike a party of seven men just outside the fort. Four of the men are troops and three are men who are staying in the fort. The Indians block the men from getting into the fort; however, two of the men, a soldier, named Heath and a civilian, Amasa Wright, break through and reach the fort. Afterward, the body of Mr. Hardway (Hardiway). The Indians cut off both of his breasts to leave sight of his open heart. In addition, the Indians had scalped him. Another man, John Alexander also killed is found near the fort. He too had been scalped. In the meantime, about 30 reinforcements from Northfield arrive. They initiate pursuit and spot tracks, including those of a man named Colby (barefoot), which seems to show he had not yet been harmed. The other two men of the party also get back to the fort. Also, at about the same time (22nd or 23rd), Indians also kill two men, John Flint and Daniel Twitchel, at Walpole, New Hampshire. One of the men is shot and scalped. The other was cut up and the Indians pluck out his heart and place it on his corpse.

July 23 1755 (Wednesday)–In New Hampshire–On or about this day, a band of Indians from Canada arrives at Charlestown. They kill some cattle and shortly afterward a band arrives at Walpole. They attack two settlers, Daniel Twichell and John Flynt and both are killed at a point below Bellows Falls. “One man is scalped; the other cut open and his heart taken out and laid in pieces on his breast.”

July 24 1755 (Thursday)–In Canada, M. Vaudreuil in a letter, dated this day, to M. De Machault, informs him of his circumstances: “My LORD: I had the honor to report to you in my letter of the 2nd and 10th of this month, the sad condition of the Colony; that it was so much the more surprising to, as it was quite unexpected by, me, relying on the assurance which the Marquis Duquesne had given me that the government was quiet, that he had provided against everything, and that there was not a semblance of any movement on the part of the English...” Vaudreuil also informs Machault that the English have been informing the Indians that they will soon seize several French fort, including Fort Du Quesne, Fort Frontenac, Fort Niagara, Fort St. Frederic, and La Presentation. **In Pennsylvania**, Governor Robert Morris delivers a message to the assembly regarding the French and Indian incursions following the recent defeat of General Braddock as follows: “This unfortunate and unexpected change in our affairs deeply affect every one of his majesty's colonies, but none of them in so sensible a manner as this province, while having no militia, is thereby left exposed to the cruel incursion of the French and barbarous Indians, who delight in shedding human blood, and who make no distinction as to age or sex--as to those that are armed against them, or such as they can surprise in their peaceful habitations--all are alike the objects of their cruelty--slaughtering the tender infant, and frightened mother, with equal joy and fierceness. To such enemies, spurred by the native cruelty of their tempers, encouraged by their late success, and having now no army to fear, are the inhabitants of this province exposed; and by such must we now expect to be overrun, if we do not immediately prepare for our own defence; nor ought we to content ourselves with this, but resolve to drive to and confine the French to their own just limits.”

Bridgman's Fort (known also as Stark's Fort), following a day in the field, hoeing corn. Caleb Howe, who has two of his children in the saddle with him is hit in the thigh. His horse continues to move after he falls to the ground, but shortly thereafter the horse also falls. The Indians quickly approach Howe and they “pierced his body with a spear, tore off his scalp, stuck a hatchet in his head, and left him in this forlorn condition.” Amazingly, on the following morning, a detachment from Fort Hillsdale discovers that Howe had survived the ghastly attack. The troops who know Howe ask him if he knows who they are and they receive the response: “Yes, know you all.” They were the last words spoken by Howe; however, he remains alive until the men get him to Fort Hillsdale. Gatfield initially escapes harm; however, while trying to ford a shallow river he drowns. In addition, Grout escaped without harm. In the meantime, the Indians had dragged Howe's children away with them. The Indians move to Bridgman's Fort, which is occupied only by the wives of Howe, Gatfield and Grout, along with some children. The women had heard the gunfire and they become apprehensive. The women, anticipating their husbands' arrival, open the gates to let them enter, only to find that they had opened the gates for the Indians. The helpless women and children are carried away: Mrs. Gatfield (one child); Mrs. Grout (three children) and Mrs Howe (seven children, two of whom, both daughters are from her first husband, William Phipps who had been killed by Indians). The captives are taken to Canada. Mrs. Jemima Howe later relates that while en route to Canada, her four year old son Squire had undergone severe treatment. The Indian who was in charge of him would “often knock him off (a pack); and sometimes, too, with the handle of his hatchet. Several ugly marks,

indented in his head by the cruel Indians, at that tender age, are still plainly- to be seen.” once they arrive in Canada, the Indians are unable to sell their captives to the French. They give one of Mrs. Howe’s daughters (Submit Phipps) to Governor Vaudreuil and then they drag the captives back to Crown Point and from there they travel to St. John’s. once there the captives remain with the St. Francis Indians. Later, she is sold to a Frenchman, named Saccabee; but eventually, after about five years of captivity, Jemima returns to her original home. At the end of the war, her oldest daughter, returned to France with Governor Vaudreuil and she later marries a French officer. Another of her daughters apparently was married off to an Indian and one other daughter was entered into a convent.

July 29 1755 (Tuesday)–In New York, Sir William Johnson, having been informed of the death of General Braddock, writes to Governor Shirley, stating “I am of opinion that an Attack upon Niagara and Securing that Important Pass is now more than ever necessary and that no Delay be suffered which can possibly be avoided. I continue to think [it] does not require the Assistance of a considerable number of Indians, as the Operations will chiefly be conducted by Water.”

July 30 1755 (Wednesday)–In New York, Governor Shirley, while advancing along the Mohawk River toward Oswego is informed by a letter from Sir William Johnson of General Braddock’s defeat and of his death at Fort Duquesne. In conjunction, Shirley’s son had been with Braddock and he had also been killed. Word of the disaster spreads among Shirley’s force and the troops had already been less than enthusiastic about their mission, but the distressing news causes more complications as men begin to desert in large numbers. Shirley’s force numbers only about 1,500 men, including the 50th (Shirley’s regiment) and the 51st (Pepperell’s regiment), along with 500 New Jersey troops, supported by a ever-decreasing contingent of Indians. In conjunction, Shirley who had himself embarked from Schenectady on the 29th, with 100 troops, 150 boat men and 40 Indians does not reach Oswego until 18 August. In other activity, Sir William Johnson dispatches a letter to Governor De Lancey, in which he (Johnson) proposes to go to the Six Nation territory to prevent losing their allegiance or to have the Indians meet with him at Onondaga. Johnson also urges that Shirley should first attack Cadaraqui (Kingston, Ontario, Fort Frontenac) to reduce it or capture the post, before assaulting Niagara. Also, Shirley, after learning of Braddock’s death, directs Dunbar to move against Fort Duquesne; however, Dunbar, in his response to Shirley, states that “had he set out at once for Fort Duquesne, it would have been mid-November before he could hope to reach it. If by a miracle, he captured it, a waste of snow-covered hills, a hundred and fifty miles of forest full of hostile savages, still barred him from Presque Isle. And could a repetition of miracles have enabled him to gain that point, there was nothing to expect, when miracles ceased, but starvation.” In the meantime, while advancing toward Oswego, Shirley continues to attempt to get the Six Nations to join him. Shirley pauses at two separate castles and in condescending tone, he informs them that he is under orders of the king, whom he refers to as their father, “to recover your country on the north side of the Lakes Ontario and Erie for you from the French; the chief command in the execution of which is committed to me.” After telling the Indians he was to recapture their lands, Shirley continues speaking and states: “These lands you well know, brethren, by authentic deeds placed among the records of New

York, were surrendered by your ancestors into the hands of the great King your Father, for his Majesty to protect for them and their descendants for ever. Nothing, therefore, brethren, now remains wanting to restore the Indians of the Five Nations to their former possessions, and ancient superiority which they maintained over the other Indians upon this continent before the French (our and their avowed enemies) found means by their artifices to break their united state,

and afterwards draw some of them off from their obedience to the great King their father, but to reunite and strengthen his hands in recovering his children's country for them and driving the French out of it." The Indians; however, found contradiction in Shirley's eloquence in first calling the land to be that of the Indians, followed by telling them the territory belonged to the king of England. **In Western Virginia** Draper's Meadows on the frontier is raided by Shawnee. The village is ravaged. Many of the settlers including women and children are massacred and some are taken away as captives.

August 1 1755 (Friday)–In Canada, by this date, the Bearn regiment which had embarked from Brest during the previous May has arrived at Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario). **In New York**, at Albany, plans for an expedition against the French are in the final stages and the combined force embarks on this day for the Great Carrying place where a large fort (Fort Lyman, later Fort Edward) will be constructed. The gathering of officers there include Major General Phineas Lyman and Colonels Timothy Ruggles and Ephraim Williams. Lt. Colonels Seth Pomeroy and Nathan Whiting are also participants in the upcoming offensive, along with Captains Philip Schuyler and Israel Putnam. In addition, William Williams (later a signer of the Declaration of Independence participant. The vanguard under Lyman will be followed within a few days by General Sir William Johnson who is also accompanied by the Mohawks under King Hendrick. Johnson arrives at St. Sacrament (Lake George) on the 28th and renames the lake. Lake George in honor of King George, stating: "I have given it the name of Lake George, not only in honour of His Majesty, but to assert his undoubted dominion here." Lake George had been by the Indians as Andiatarocte and also known by the French as Lake Iroquois. In conjunction, Fort Lyman, which becomes Fort Edward is named in honor of Edward, the brother of King George III. In conjunction, reinforcements under Phineas Lyman arrive soon after to bolster Johnson's force.

August 2 1755 (Saturday)–In Maryland, Colonel Dunbar departs Fort Cumberland en route to Philadelphia where he will establish winter quarters. It had been thought that Dunbar would reinitiate the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne; however, he had informed Governor Shirley that his force was insufficient. Also, subsequent to the defeat of Braddock, a band of Indians led by Joseph Boucher, the Chevalier de Niverville raids the fort. De Niverville later participates at the attack (1757) to seize Fort William Henry. Later, during 1759, de Niverville is appointed commander of Fort Machault (Fort Venango) during 1758, prior to participating at the siege of British-held Quebec during 1759.

August 8 1755 (Friday)–The Colonial-Indian force, composed of about 1,500 provincial troops and several hundred allied Indians departs Albany en route to seize Crown Point and a week or so later, they arrive at the Great Carrying Place located between the Hudson River and Lake Sacrament (later Lake George) and where Fort Lyman (later Fort Edward) had been completed earlier this same year. Joseph Brant, a nephew of Chief Hendrick of the Mohawks accompanies the force although he is not yet fourteen. Brant, described as the "pride of Canajoharie Castle," is later (1761) sent, along with two other boys, Negyes and Center, to school in Connecticut by Johnson. The school's master, Doctor Wheelock, later founds Dartmouth College in New Hampshire. At about the same time, the French-Indian force under Dieskau having landed at Lake Champlain is moving overland to launch an attack against Fort Lyman. Most of the Indians are of the Caughnawaga tribe (Iroquois Indians who had been converted to Catholicism by the Jesuits) which had relocated in Canada and established themselves along the St. Lawrence River near the Lachine Rapids (known as St. Francois Xavier du Sault or St. Francis Xavier "at the rapids." The name later became Caughnawaga, which also means "at the rapids" in the Iroquois

language. Also, Lt. Colonel Eliphalet Dyer participates in the campaign. Although Dyer is serving in the military, he remains in Connecticut politics, serving also in the assembly. Dyer later participates in the Canadian campaign. He is promoted to full colonel during 1758. Subsequently, during the American Revolution Dyer serves in the Continental Congress and he is appointed a brigadier general during 1776. Also, Robert Treat Paine (Signer of the Declaration of Independence) participates in the Crown Point as a chaplain; however, afterward, he becomes ill and travels to the Carolinas and from there to Europe to recuperate. Upon his return to the country during 1757, he is admitted to the Massachusetts bar.

August 11 1755 (Monday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie, angered because Colonel James Patton had not followed his orders, writes to Major John Smith stating: “Colo. Patton had my positive Orders (8 July) to appoint You Com'd'r of the Co'y of Rangers rais'd in Y'r Co'ty; how he came not to obey it, I know not, however, You may raise forty Men, w'ch, with the Co' y comanded by Capt. Preston, and a Co'y from Lunenburg of 50 Men y't have Orders to march imediately to Y'r Assistance, I conceive will be sufficient to scower the Woods of the Enemy and encourage Y'r People to return to their Plantat's, and y'n I think You will not want the Militia. If You sh'd think it proper to erect a Fort on Holston's River to protect the Inhabitants, You may employ Y'r People in. y' t Service...” In conjunction, unbeknownst to Governor Dinwiddie, Colonel Patton did not receive the letter. He was killed at Draper's Meadow by Indians on 8 July, the identical day that the governor wrote the letter.

August 12 1755–In West Virginia, a contingent of French and Indians attack Baughman's Fort (referred to by Governor Dinwiddie as Fort Greenbrier, separate from Fort Green Bryer), thought to be a blockhouse and having no stockade. All the occupants of the fort are massacred by the Shawnee. Subsequently on 27 September, Governor Dinwiddie in a letter to Lieutenant John McNeil, the governor mentions that he had been surprised that 59 people had been in the fort when it was attacked.

August 13 1755–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie commissions Nathaniel Terry as a captain of rangers and authorizes him to raise a company. At the time, the governor states: “I do appoint and constitute You, the s'd Nath'l Terry, to be Capt. of a Co'y of Rangers rais'd in the said Co'ty (Halifax, carved from Lunenburg) to scower the Frontiers, kill and destroy every such Ind'n and others as You shall at any Time or any where find insult'g or maltreat'g H. M'y's good Subjects, or hav'g an apparent Tendency thereto...” Captain Terry is ordered to seek revenge for the “cruel murders” by the French and Indians in the county and he is instructed to construct a fort if he discovers a suitable location.

August 14, 1755 (Thursday)–In Virginia, following the defeat of General Braddock at Fort Du Quesne the previous month, the Indians pose a great threat along the Virginia Frontier. General Robert Dinwiddie appoints George Washington Colonel of the Virginia Regiment and the Commander in Chief of Virginia's troops. Washington will arrive back in Virginia from the field in Pennsylvania during mid-September. Upon his return, Washington is directed to establish headquarters in Winchester. In other activity, Governor Dinwiddie writes to Lord Fairfax (Thomas, 6th Lord) to express his thoughts on the inaction of the people in Frederick and Hampshire stating: “I am heartily sorry for the Behav'r of the People in Frederick and Hampshire. They appear to me to be under no Co 'd, or have they a proper regard to their own Int't or y't of their Co'try. They seem to be siez'd with a Panick at the approach of a few Fr. and Ind's. I am convic'd if they had met with Resolution they might have in a great Measure prevent'd the Barbarities and Mischiefs y't have been done; but to leave their Plantat's to be destroy'd by the Enemy is, I think, with't Precedent. Those People y't have not done their Duty, but deserted

C't Cocks, can expect no Pay..."

August 16 1755 (Saturday)–In Canada, at Montreal, Baron de Dieskau, in a letter, dated this day, to Commissary Doreil discusses the imminent offensive. The letter in part: "SIR: I start in a moment for Fort St. Frederic to place myself at the head of a body of about 8000 men. to meet an English force of 4500 men whose design is to seize Forts St. Frederick, St. John, Chambly, and afterwards to advance as far as Montreal. I shall try, however, to mar their plan. The troops are in the best disposition possible, and panting only for the attack. All I fear, is that the enemy, who imagine all our troops to have gone on the expedition against Chouaguen (Fort Oswego, New York), will beat a retreat on learning that we are on the march...The defeat of the English on the Ohio, and specially the death of General Bradok, who has been killed, must have furiously deranged their plans, and I calculate on deranging them still a trifle more, provided they hold on..." **In Pennsylvania**, Governor Robert H. Morris, aware that the treasury has exhausted its funds, informs the assembly that he will pass a bill "for striking any sum in paper money that the present exigencies might require, if such paper money was to be sunk in five years." In other activity, a band of Indians raid the area in the northern sector of Lebanon County. They attack the home of John Hartman. At the time, his wife and one of his sons is away; however, the Indians kill Mr. Hartman and another of his sons and they take two of his daughters (Barbara and Regina) captive. The two girls and another girl are handed over to an old Indian woman who treats them unkindly and it is known that she beats them. Subsequently, during the campaign of Colonel Bouquet (1764) Mrs. Hartman is reunited with her daughters. Initially, she is unable to recognize her children; however, at the suggestion of Bouquet that she say something that might be recognizable, Mrs. Hartman sings a German Hymn:

"Alone yet not alone am I;
Though in this solitude so drear;
I feel my Savior always nigh;
He comes the very hour to chee;
I am with Him, and He with me;
E'een here alone I cannot be."

By about the second line of the hymn, Regina rushes forward to greet her mother. Following the jubilant reunion, Bouquet gives her daughter to Mrs. Hartman and the other girl, having no parents also leaves with the Hartmans. The fate of Regina's sister, Barbara remains unknown.

August 17 1755 (Sunday) –In Canada, ten Indians arrive at Fort Frontenac. They display the items they plundered at the defeat of General Braddock. Count de Maures de Malartic, a French brigade major (Bearn regiment) gets his first view of the Indians' character and essentially receives a perspective on the type of service he will encounter in North America. On the 20th, Malartic notes in his journal: "Several canoes and cattle which arrived yesterday have gone this morning. There remain with us eight drunken Indians, who have raised the devil." Malartic becomes fascinated when he sees for the first time, bark canoes, of which some are capable of carrying 12 men. He notes in his journal that "they are very light, and that the Indians are very careful of them, leaving them on shore high and dry at night, that neither wind nor wave may hurt them." **In New Hampshire**, by this date, many of the settlers have abandoned Walpole, but some, including the Kilburn family and the Bellows family remain. The house is close to Falls Mountain (later known as Kilburn's Peak). Indians attack the Kilburn house just as John Kilburn and his son (John), along with a Mr. Peak (or Pike) and his son are approaching the house after completing the day's work in the field. The Indians are spotted in the woods among the alders (birch tree family) and the foursome breaks for the house, barricades the door and prepares to

defend themselves. John's wife, Ruth and his daughter, Hetty; however, face insurmountable odds when the Indians, numbering about 200 braves, begin their attack. Within about fifteen minutes the Indians are crawling up a bank to the east of the house and the defenders count 197 Indians within their sight when the Indians cross a foot path, one at a time. But in addition, nearly an equal number remain in concealed positions at the mouth of the Cold River. The Indians had planned to ambush a contingent of men under Colonel Bellows, but he had been warned by dogs (trained to identify Indians) accompanying the party of the presence of the Indians. Bellows outwits the Indians who think they have the settlers trapped by getting to some high ground and in unison giving out a war hoop. The ambush is foiled and the Indians, without firing a shot, take off and vanish in the woods.

Bellows, aware of the size of the band, does not initiate pursuit; rather, the men hurriedly return to the fort to prepare to defend it. Nonetheless, the Indians choose not to attack. Nevertheless, Bellows' garrison house is about one-half mile away from the Kilburn house, but because of a waterfall, the men are unable to arrive to support him. Suddenly, the Kilburn house is under siege by Indians who are aware of the small number of men there. One Indian, Philip, who had earlier pulled a ruse by soliciting food and supplies from settlers including Kilburn, while actually gaining intelligence on the strength of the settlers, stands near the door and yells: "Old John, Young John, I know ye; come out here. We give you good quarter." Kilburn does not take the bait and although backed by only three others, responds: "Quarter! You black rascals, begone, or we'll quarter you."

Soon after, the lop-sided struggle begins, but Kilburn fires before the Indians get off their first shot and he believes that Philip had been slain. While many of the Indians maintain incessant fire, others kill the livestock and destroy Kilburn's grain supply. The four male defenders literally pour their powder in their respective hats to speed the process, while Ruth and Hetty help with the ammunition by loading the guns, including spare muskets for just such a purpose. The Indians fail to take the house, but Kilburn's ammunition becomes dangerously low. Improvisation becomes the base of survival. The defenders hang blankets over their heads to trap the balls fired by the attackers as they pass through one side of the roof, but fall short of the opposite side. Ruth and Hetty capture the spent balls and turn them into bullets, permitting the fighting quartet to continue the struggle. Meanwhile, the Indians become somewhat perplexed at being unable to take the four-man fort. Some barge against the door to crash through, but they are met with fire from great marksmanship. The door crashers are liquidated and the operation is soon after aborted; however, throughout the remainder of the afternoon, the defenders remain under heavy fire, but Kilburn continues to defy the odds and with the assistance of the two women, the Indians also remain under constant fire, with many of them being eliminated by their own bullets.

At about dusk, the Indians finally decide that they have had enough. Kilburn's house remains intact as the Indians abort the attack and head back to Canada. During the day-long fight, Mr. Peak had sustained a wound to the hip, but due to the lack of medical help in the area, he dies within about five days from receiving the wound. No one else is injured. The Herculean defense by the four men and two women, although not widely heralded nor long remembered, is a seminal event on the frontier, which saves countless lives of other settlers in the region. The attack launched this day is the final appearance of hostile Indians at Walpole for the duration of the war. In conjunction, Bellows and the others anticipated the raids. Earlier, that summer, the Indians caught two men, Daniel Twichel (selectman) and Mr. Flynt (Flint) in an area about one and one-half miles from the Drewsville Road, while they were gathering timber to build oars.

Both men had been shot and killed. One of them was scalped and the other had his heart cut from his body and the pieces thrown on his chest. They became the first two Christians to be murdered by Indians at Walpole. John Kilburn having escaped death remains in Walpole until his death during 1789. Colonel Benjamin Bellows, the son of Benjamin and Dorcas Bellows, was born during May 1712. Also, Benjamin, the son of Colonel Benjamin Bellows, later during 1775, joins the colonial forces as a corporal, he rises to the rank of brigadier general of militia during the American Revolution. Colonel Benjamin Bellows later succumbs during July 1777.

August 20 1755 (Wednesday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie writes to the secretary of war, Henry Fox to inform him of the French invasion of the frontier. The governor; however, also states that he expects that the rangers operating on the frontier will “destroy” the French and their Indian allies.

August 22 1755 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, the assembly authorizes £1,000 for the defense of the Back Counties. Later, “fifty guns, 4 casks of powder, 2 of lead, and two swivel guns ordered sent to Penn’s Creek settlement “ordered to be sent to Penn’s Creek, following the Indian raid there (October 16, 1755), never reaches its destination. After its arrival at Harris’ Ferry, the settlers there confiscate the shipment for use by the settlers in that area.

September 1-17 1755–In New York, at Oswego, Governor Shirley convenes a meeting with his officers. A decision is made to move against Fort Niagara with a force of 600 men, with the remainder holding the garrison at Oswego. In conjunction, John Shirley, a son of the governor participates in the operation. Two vessels, a sloop and a schooner are prepared for the mission. Shirley also intends to bring about 70 Indians as well as some men from Albany; however, problems begin to develop and the advance is suspended. Afterward, Shirley holds another council with his officers to discuss what solutions might be available to acquire the supplies needed for the mission and what to do about the lack of boats. Meanwhile, the enthusiasm of the officers which had been high by this time has evaporated. Indecision begins to permeate the discussions and pessimism begins to prevail. Shirley’s son, John, writes: “For want of provisions, it will be impossible to leave a garrison this winter at Niagara in case we succeed. We must knock it down and visit it early in the spring.” Several weeks pass with no distinct plan. On the 17th, another council convenes. Governor Shirley and the other officers including Bradstreet again discuss the options and Shirley dominates, primarily with negative reasons for not launching the attack. The force lacks room on the vessels for 400 troops and the available bateaux are in poor condition. The discussions also cover the lack of sufficient provisions. Other problems include the small number of Indians and reports from Indians that Frontenac is heavily defended. Other concerns discussed include the weather and the great possibility that the bateaux would be overturned, which would destroy provisions. Shirley’s force also has about 800 men who have become ill. Shirley’s opinion to postpone the attack until the following spring is not challenged by any of the officers. Consequently, the plan is aborted. In conjunction, despite the reports of Frontenac being heavily fortified, the French knew otherwise. During the previous July, Vaudreuil noted that he had been told that “the fort (Niagara) is so dilapidated that one can’t drive in a peg without making it fall to pieces. They have had to shore it up with stanchions.” however, by September of this year, the garrison had been increased from 80 men to about 1,100, subsequent to the arrival of reinforcements from Fort Duquesne.

September 3 1755 (Wednesday)–In New York, Baron Jean-Armand de Dieskau, the commander of French forces in Canada, departs Fort St. Frederick for Ticonderoga to become involved with the ongoing work on the French defenses there, but he is also aware of construction at Fort Lyman (Fort Edward). In conjunction, Fort Lyman, had been established

during 1755, at the southern end of the Great Carrying Place, but during 1756, it was severely damaged by fire. Baron Dieskau's force is composed of about 800 Canadians and about 260 French grenadiers, along with a few hundred Indians.

September 7 1755 (Sunday)–In New York, Baron Dieskau's force arrives at Lake St.

Sacramento (Lake George) and from Fort St. Frederick and the commander establishes his camp near the English positions at Fort Lyman (Fort Edward). The French hold a conference with the Indians to finalize strategy for the attack and to inform the Indians of where they will be deployed. The Indians however, take a break from the conference to discuss the situation and upon their return, the Iroquois inform the French that they had previously agreed not to attack the English on their own territory, indicating that they would not participate in the offensive. However, the Indians who always attempted to avoid attacking a fortification containing artillery suggest that they would join in the assault if Dieskau instead, attacked the English at their camp at Lake St. Sacramento (Lake George) on French soil, where General Johnson had been encamped with several thousand provisional troops and about 250 Indians. Baron Dieskau agrees to abort the attack against Fort Lyman to strike the forces at the lake on the following morning. In conjunction, the Canadian militia that participates in the attack is commanded by Pierre Joseph Celoron, Sieur de Blainville.

September 8 1755 (Monday) - Colonies - Battle of Lake George - In New York, intelligence on the possibility of an attack against Fort Lyman prompts a hastily called war council and at the meeting it is decided to intercept the French; however, no intelligence regarding where the French might be deployed had been gathered. Nonetheless, the search force is dispatched. A contingent composed of about 1,200 troops under Colonel Ephraim Williams (Major General William Johnson's command) departs the English camp to intercept a French force under Baron Dieskau; however, no precautions are taken to cover the flanks, making the advance extremely risky. The French in the meantime become aware of the English approach.

Baron Dieskau, at Rocky Brook, deploys the Canadians on the right and he instructs the Indians to take prone positions on the left, instructing both to remain still and to hold their fire. Meanwhile the French grenadiers in the center are held back. The English advance in two divisions, the first led by Colonel Ephraim Williams and the second by Lt. Colonel Whiting, both to the rear of the Mohawks under Hendrick. As they move toward Fort Lyman they have no knowledge of the French's change in plans and as they advance no resistance is anticipated. Consequently Colonel Williams has no scouts on the flanks of the Portage Road. Colonel Williams and the column advances less than five miles when it encroaches the ambush. Seconds before the French commence their fire, there is a momentary warning, when some Senecas who accompanied the French spot Hendrick's Mohawks and decide to fire into the air to sound the alarm.

Nevertheless, the English had already begun to come around a curve on the road, giving the French a clear line of fire. The columns are shredded and both Colonel Ephraim Williams and Chief Hendrick are hit by the hurricane of fire. Hendrick's horse is shot from under him and the chief is unable to free himself in time. A French soldier slays him with a bayonet. Meanwhile, the English continue to sustain fire seemingly from behind every rock and tree. Colonel Williams leads a charge up a slope on the right and in the process, he calls for his troops to follow, however, he is killed while ascending the slope. Nonetheless, his troops in the rear are speeding to the front, but they too come under fire and they become disoriented, which causes discipline

to vanish.. Colonel Seth Pomeroy (later brigadier general during the American Revolution) succeeds Williams as commander of the regiment. Although Dieskau anticipated encirclement of the British, Whiting immediately orders a retreat. In the meantime, following a short period of panic, the column regains cohesion. At about the same time, reinforcements, under Lt. Colonel Cole are immediately sent forward to the sounds of the guns by Sir William Johnson to provide cover for the retreat. A contingent of Mohawks and the reinforcements forestall disaster. The troops, however, forego their usual formation and like the Indians they revert to firing from behind trees and thick brush. Whiting executes the withdrawal with cunning shrewdness to save the majority of the force.

While Whiting retires to toward the camp, it becomes obvious that the troops are en route to from the sounds of the musket fire that reverberates and become much louder, giving a signal that a retreat is in motion. Johnson gets all available hands in action to erect a defensive barrier. Anything capable of being used is gathered. Tree limbs and trunks, wagons and even boats are piled along the line.

Johnson also deploys three artillery pieces along the line and he deploys one other on a nearby ridge.

Johnson's positions along his flanks are protected by natural obstacles, swamps. Meanwhile the troops, about 500, form an irregular chain along the modified wall, in and about the wagons and around the overturned boats as well as behind the logs. At nearly the same time that Johnson completes his preparations, the sounds of the Indian war cries are distinctly heard and suddenly the waves of French and Indians are encroaching the barrier, anticipating that the unprepared English will break and flee. As they descend the hill, Johnson's artillery is poised to welcome them.

The Indians still on the high ground halt, to breaking the momentum of the assault. At nearly the same time, the other Indians also came to a halt. Shortly thereafter, the English disperse the Indians with a few shots from the artillery. They head for the swamps, leaving the French without the support of their allies, the latter having a perpetual reluctance to face English artillery. Nonetheless, the French resume the advance toward Johnson's positions until they reach a point about 150 yards from the line and from there they call for the Indians to join them, but in vain. Undaunted the French initiate fire by platoons as they reinitiate the attack; however, their fire falls short of intimidating the English. Nevertheless, General Johnson sustains a slight wound in the thigh that compels him to remove to his tent. In his absence, General Phineas Lyman assumes command and performs admirably for about five hours. He remains in the thick of the battle until it ends..

While the French fire continues with little impact, the English guns relentlessly pound the French line. The French plow into the enter of the line, but the English hold and deliver punishing fire. The French then switch their tactics and strike the right side of the line, held by three divisions and again they are repelled, while continually sustaining losses. At about 1600, following about seven hours of defending their positions, General Lyman orders an attack. Unexpectedly, the English and their Mohawk allies bolt over the breastworks and charge the French. The sudden thrust prompts the French and Canadians to abort their attack, abandon their dead, and execute a haphazard retreat with the British in pursuit.

The British seize some prisoners including Baron Ludwig Augustus Dieskau, who had been wounded three times during the melee. Dieskau is taken to General Johnson's tent and nearly loses his life. Several Indians push their way into General Johnson's tent intending to kill Dieskau. He looks at Johnson, who is also wounded and states: "These fellows have been regarding me with a look not indicative of much compassion." Johnson responds: "Anything else, for they wished to oblige me to deliver you into their hands in order to burn you, in revenge for the death of their comrades and of their chiefs who have been slain in the battle." But Johnson adds: "Feel no uneasiness; you are safe with me."

Meanwhile, some of the French and Indian survivors pause at Rocky Brook, the scene of the earlier ambush, but while there catching a little rest, a contingent en route from Fort Lyman to Johnson's camp spots the French baggage, which lies abandoned along the road and shortly thereafter, scouts detect about three hundred of the enemy at the brook. The colonial force, composed of about 250 troops, drawn from New Hampshire and New York Regiments, commanded by Captain Maginness (McGinnis), gives no warning and offers no quarter. The French and the Indians are nearly annihilated, with only a few who evade death and escape. The pond becomes Many of the French and Indians Subsequent to liquidating the contingent, the corpses are irreverently thrown into the water and it becomes crimson from the huge amount of blood that flowed into the pond, which soon becomes known as "Bloody Pond."

General Johnson's initial battle report places the French losses at more than five hundred, including La Gardeur, the French officer that had received George Washington during December 1753, at Fort Le Boeuf near Fort Duquesne. Johnson's report totally omits Colonel (later general) Phineas Lyman as if he had not even participated in an apparent move to claim the laurels of the victory for himself. The French commander, Dieskau had been wounded in the leg during the day and he was unable to escape from the initial clash. A British soldier encountered him and when Dieskau made an attempt to reach for something (thought to be his watch), the soldier shot him in the hip. Dieskau is taken to Albany and from there to New York where he eventually returns to France and later succumbs due to his wounds. The colonial troops' loss is reported as 262 enlisted men and 38 Indians. Colonial officer losses total 19 and include Colonel Williams, Colonel Titcomb, Major Ashley and Captains Ingersol, Keyes and Porter. In addition, Chief Hendrick is killed and Captain Maginniss receives a fatal wound and dies on the 10th.

Meanwhile, the French fortify Ticonderoga (French Fort Carillon), while the English establish Fort William Henry (southern end of Lake George) named to honor King George's second grandson. The site for the fort is selected by Sir William Johnson and Captain Joseph Frye and they draw up the blueprint of the fort. In conjunction, The English also establish Fort George in close proximity (southeast) to Fort William Henry on Lake George (Warren County). The fort is strengthened with major modifications beginning in 1759 when General Amherst prepares to march against French-held Ticonderoga. Also, Major General William Johnson is rewarded for the victory by being made a baronet (November 1755), by which he becomes Sir William Johnson.

Also, many reinforcements arrived to meet the French threat. One contingent from New Hampshire arrived at Fort Edward from Exeter, New Hampshire to hook up with other New Hampshire units. Captain Nathaniel Folsom had commanded a company of the militia. Folsom

(brigadier general during American Revolution) on this same day is directed to initiate a scouting mission to Lake George and his command is one of the ten-company force. Folsom's contingent was composed of his 84 troops and forty New York militia. During the mission, Folsom's rangers encounter enemy forces and inflict heavy casualties upon them. In conjunction, Theodore Atkinson, secretary of the province of New Hampshire, noted: "In the engagement with General Dieskau, about eighty of our men (Captain Folsom's company of eighty-four) with about forty Yorkers—many of whom were of little service, though others of them behaved well—I say, this small party under the command of Captain Folsom of New Hampshire, it is thought killed more of the Canadians and Indians than was killed at General Johnson's camp; they continued an obstinate engagement with more than one thousand—indeed all that retired from before General Johnson's camp, killed great numbers of the enemy, recovered about twelve hundred packs, beat off the enemy, carried their own wounded men to the camp.... It is said of Captain Folsom's victory that it served more than anything else to revive the spirit of the colonies."

During the battle Major Robert Rogers had been on a separate mission along the Hudson, with the contingent split into small detachments of rangers each encroaching French posts. Following the battle the New Hampshire militia returned to their homes. Timothy Ruggles' Massachusetts also participates during this campaign. Ebenezer Learned, a future brigadier general during the American Revolution, commands a company which he raised as part of Ruggles' regiment. During the following year, Learned is struck with smallpox and hospitalized at Fort Edward, but he survives and remains in the army until 1763. Other prominent officers that participate at this battle include Colonel Ephraim Williams and Lt. Colonels Seth Pomeroy and Nathan Whiting.

General Sir William Johnson reports the success to the authorities in New York; however, the Massachusetts Assembly becomes infuriated because Johnson neglected to inform Massachusetts. Governor Shirley had persuaded the Assembly to concur with his selection of Johnson as the commander of the mission. The assembly directs the lieutenant-governor to "acquaint general Johnson, that, as the Massachusetts province bore the greatest part of the charge and burden of the expedition, it ought to be considered as principal in all respects; and that all papers and advices of importance ought to be first sent to that province; and that the French general, and other prisoners of note, ought to be sent to Boston."

While held captive by the English, Dieskau writes to M. De Vaudreuil on 15 September (noting, Camp of the English Army at Lake Sacrament): "SIR: I am defeated; my detachment is routed; a number of men killed and thirty or forty are prisoners, as I am told. I and M. Burnier, my Aid de Camp, are among the latter. I have received my share, four gunshot wounds, one of which is mortal. I owe this misfortune to the Iroquois [Caughnawagas.]. Our affair was well begun, but as soon as the Iroquois perceived some Mohawks, they came to a dead halt; the Abenakis and other Indians continued some time but disappeared by degrees; this disheartened the Canadians, so I found myself with the French troops engaged alone. I bore the attack, believing that I might rally the Canadians and perhaps the Indians, in which I did not succeed.

The Regulars received the whole of the enemy's fire and were almost cut to pieces. I prophesied to you Sir that the Iroquois would play some scurvy trick; it is unfortunate that I am such a good prophet; I cannot too much acknowledge Mr. de Johnson's kindness and attention to me. He is to

send me to Orange tomorrow. I know not my fate either as regards my health or the disposition of my person. I have the honor to be &c., BARON DE DIESKAU.” Also, David Waterbury (later, brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in this campaign.

September 20 1755 (Saturday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie, in regard to the high loss of life among the settlers states in a letter to Captain Samuel Overton that he “thinks that if the Augusta County. people had properly exerted themselves, the flying parties of Indians could not have murdered so many people.”

September 24-4 October 1755 (Wednesday)–In New York, Major Robert Rogers, at the Carrying Place (later Fort Edward), is ordered by Major General William Johnson to undertake a reconnaissance mission to Crown Point and if possible to capture a French prisoner. The rangers travel about 25 miles and debark on the west bank. Two men are left to guard the boats, while Rogers and the remaining two rangers march overland and on the 29th, they reach a point within sight of the French fort at Crown Point. Rogers is also positioned from where the rangers observe many Indians outside of the fort while they are firing weapons. After dusk, Major Rogers manages to pass by French guards without being detected and make his way to a village located south of the fort. From the village, Rogers slivered his way past some sentries and afterward, he discovers a French entrenchment southwest of the village and a contingent of French troops that are engaged in establishing a battery. However, no opportunity arises to give Rogers an opportunity to seize a French prisoner. Nonetheless, Rogers continues to disregard the danger of maneuvering behind French lines. On the 30th, Rogers discovers a large encampment which leads southeast from the fort until it reaches a windmill and he estimates the troops there to number about 500 men. Rogers halts the mission on 1 October, after discerning that the rangers would not be able to successfully nab any French troops. The rangers take a different route back to the boats and pass within about two miles from Ticonderoga. The sky over Ticonderoga is blighted from smoke that is spiraling upward and simultaneously, the rangers hear small arms fire. Rogers detachment, having consumed their provisions make no attempt to reconnoiter to try to access the number of French troops at Ticonderoga. They continue the march to reach their boats. However, upon reaching the location on 2 October, where the boats had been concealed, to their dismay, the boats and the two guards are no longer there. Rogers and the two accompanying rangers continue the trek on land and finally return to their camp on 4 October.

September 25 1755 (Thursday)–In Canada at Fort Frontenac, a band of Indians arrives with prisoners, whom were captured near Oswego, New York.

October 7 1755 (Sunday)–In New York, General Sir William Johnson dispatches Major Robert Rogers on a reconnaissance mission to gather intelligence on French strength at Ticonderoga. Rogers’ contingent, composed of him and five others embark after dusk. They proceed to the objective and land on the west bank of the lake and after concealing the canoe, they remain in place until the following day. On the morning of the 8th, Rogers and three of the men move out toward Ticonderoga, while the other two remain by the lake to guard the canoe. At about noon the troops arrive near Ticonderoga. From a concealed position in the woods, Rogers observes a French force, which he estimates to total about 2,000 troops. Rogers remains out of sight, but the detachment remains in place for the remainder of the day. At dawn on the 9th, the men see that the large stockpile of lumber they had observed on the previous day, is being used to lay the foundation of a fort at a strategic location which dominates a pass which leads from Lake George to Lake Champlain, but the fort will also dominate the entrance to South Bay or Wood Creek. The contingent take no prisoners and they succeed in their mission without being detected.

Rogers later on the 9th, begins the return journey, which they expect to be uneventful. However, soon after Rogers observes an advance guard composed of many troops at a point on the northern tip of Lake George where a river converges with Lake Champlain. While observing the force, unexpectedly, Rogers notices a bark canoe carrying a Frenchman and nine Indians moving up the lake towards the position of the Rogers' force. The troops remain concealed and watch as the canoe passes by the place where Rogers' boat had been camouflaged and hidden. Once Rogers makes it back to the canoe, the troops there inform him that the occupants of the canoe had landed on an island in the lake about six miles south of where they stood. Shortly thereafter, they spot the canoe as it starts back and approaches Rogers' position. The command remain quiet, but they prepare to announce their presence. Just as the canoe reaches a point about 100 yards distant, Rogers' men test their marksmanship. Following an effective barrage, six of the occupants are liquidated. As the canoe moves to escape the fire, Rogers his canoe into the lake and then chases the foe. Before he can intercept the canoe, two other canoes appear to relieve the survivors. Rogers aborts the chase and retires heading back to their camp. They arrive back at the encampment on Lake George on 10 October to report the findings to General Johnson. In conjunction, Rogers' contingent sustains no casualties during the mission.

October 11 1755 (Saturday)–In Virginia, Colonel George Washington writes to Governor Dinwiddie to inform him of the conditions on the West Virginia border. He reports that 150 Indians are along the south branch of the Potomac and he states that he “thinks that seventy white people there are killed or missing.”

October 15 1755 (Wednesday)–In New York, Major Robert Rogers, pursuant to orders from General William Johnson, embarks on another reconnaissance mission to determine the strength of the advance guard of the French at Ticonderoga. Rogers is also directed to attempt to establish an ambush. About 40 rangers participate in the mission. The rangers embark and travel to a point about 12 miles from the Carrying place on the morning of the 16th. Later Captain Israel Putnam informs Rogers that a large party of Indians are closing on their positions. The rangers aware that their numbers are insufficient to engage launch their boats and head back to camp, arriving there on the 19th. In Pennsylvania, a band of hostile Indians attack the town of Mahanoy (Penn's Creek) in Union County. The homes are destroyed. Some people are killed and about 25 people are carried away.

October 16 1755 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania (Penn's Creek Massacre)–Indians aligned with the French launch swoop down from New Berlin Mountain and raid the settlement (about 25 families) at Mahahany Creek (Penn's Creek), located about five miles below the Great Fork in the vicinity of Shamokin, where two main branches of the Susquehanna converge. The Indians plunder the settlement and burn it, then drag about twenty-five of the colonists off as captives. The raiders murder about 13-15 people including LeRoy Jacob. Jacob's daughter is also carried away. Subsequently, militia troops advance to the scene and after remaining for the night, they return to Harris' Ferry. En route on about the 25th, they too are ambushed.

October 17 1755 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, the Indian raid at Penn's Creek on the previous day ignited a new wave of Indian atrocities that spread along the settlements scattered along the Susquehanna River.

October 20 1755 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania at Paxton, John Harris, having received information on the recent massacre at Penn's Creek and forwards it in a letter to the governor to again seek help: “May it please your honor: I was informed last night by a person that came down our river that there was a dutch (German) woman who made her escape to George Gabriel's and informs us that last Friday evening, on her way home from this settlement, on

Mahahony, or Penn's creek, where her family lived, she called at a neighbor's house, and saw two persons lying at the door of said house murdered and scalped; and there were some Dutch (German) families that lived near their places, immediately left not thinking it safe to stay any longer. It is the opinion of the people up the river that the families on Penn's Creek being scattered, that but few in number are killed or carried off, except the above said women, the certainty of which will soon be known, as there are some men gone out to bury the dead..." Harris also informs the governor of "two men being murdered within five miles of George Gabriels, and it is imagined that all the inhabitants on Penn's creek and Little Mahanoy are killed or carried off, as most of them live much higher up, where the first murder was discovered. The Indian warriors here send you these two strings of white wampum and the women the black one, both requesting that you will lay by all your council pipes, immediately, and open all your eyes and ears, and view your slain people in this land, and to put a stop to it immediately, and come to this place to our assistance without any delay; and the belt of wampum particularly mentions that the proprietors and your honor would immediately act in defence of their country..."

October 23 1755 (Thursday)—In Pennsylvania at Harris' Ferry, a party of about forty-six men travel from Paxton to Shamokin to attempt to find out which Indians raided the settlement at Mahahany (Mahanoy) Creek and upon their return journey, they too come under attack by ambush on the 25th.

October 25 1755 (Saturday)—In Pennsylvania, the colonists, about 40-strong, led by John Harris departs Shamokin for Paxton. A half-breed, Anthony Montour advises the militia to return by the east bank; however, the troops instead return by marching along the opposite bank. En route the column is ambushed near the mouth of Mahanoy Creek in the vicinity of Selinsgrove by about thirty Delaware Indians. Harris and about fifteen of the men take positions in the woods and return fire. Four of the party are killed when the ambush is sprung and about four others die by drowning. The remainder escape. The entire region is under threat of attack and the settlements stretching from Shamokin and Hunter's Mill (formerly Chambers) a distance of about fifty miles lies deserted as the colonists have fled. One man in the party, Adam Terrance afterward reports: "On the morning of the 25th, we took our leave of the Indians (Delawares), and set off homewards, and were advised to go down the East side of the river, but fearing that a snare might be laid on that side, we marched off peaceably on the west side, having behaved in the most civil and friendly manner towards them while with them; and when we came to the mouth of Mahanoy creek, we were fired on by a good number of Indians that lay among the bushes; on which we were obliged to retreat, with the loss of several men; the particular number I cannot exactly mention; but I am positive that I saw four fall, and one man struck with a tommyhawk on the head in his flight across the river..." Also, during the exchange of fire, Harris' horse is hit, while crossing the river, compelling Harris to swim to shore

October 26 1755 (Sunday)—In Pennsylvania on this day (or possibly the previous day) hostile Indians ford the Susquehanna River and launch raids against the colonists in the area stretching from Thomas McKee's land down to Hunter's mill. Meanwhile Conrad Weiser, leading a column composed of men from Tulpehocken and Heidelberg Townships (Berks County) moving toward Shamokin encounter no opposing forces. Weiser and others that are gathering at Shamokin intend to inform the friendly Indians of those (Delawares on the Ohio) who have initiated war against the English. Weiser informs the Indians at Shamokin to relocate at Nescopecken, located up the North East Branch. During the council, chief Paxanosa of Wyoming, (Shawanees) defends the English, but some Delawares move to cut him off, stating that if he continues to

speak, they would “knock him on the head.” One of the other Delawares also spoke negatively about the French and he too is silenced. Nonetheless, it is agreed by the Indians to move to Nescopecken; however, the village becomes the base of operations for the Indians who have gone on the warpath.

October 29 1755 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania at Paxton, John Harris pens a letter to Edward Shippen (later chief justice) of Lancaster, a proprietor and founder of Shippensburg regarding the dangerous situation on the frontier due to the French and Indians: “SIR: We expect the enemy upon us every day, and the inhabitants are abandoning their plantations, being greatly discouraged at the approach of such a number of cruel savages, and no present sign of assistance. I had a certain account of fifteen hundred French and Indians being on their march against us and Virginia, and now close upon our borders; their scouts scalping our families on our frontiers daily. Andrew Montour and others at Shamokin desired me to take care, that there was a party of forty Indians out many days, and intended to burn my house and destroy myself and family. I have this day cut loop-holes in our house, and am determined to hold out to the last extremity if I can get some men to stand by me. But few can be had at present, as everyone is in fear of his own family being cut short every hour...” Harris also informs Shippen that he believes most of the Susquehanna Indians had aligned with the French and that an Indian force of Delawares and Shawanese, under French command are closing on Shamokin. Harris urges the raising of troops and the construction of forts. In conjunction, Harris, transforms his home, originally a trading post built during 1705, into a stockaded blockhouse. It remains active during the conflict. Also, Indians had recently made other raids including one against the property of George Gabriel, located about thirty miles north of Harris’ Ferry. His buildings had been destroyed and while they burned to the ground, the Indians danced.

October 30 1755 (Thursday)–In Canada, Governor Vaudreuil in a letter, dated this day, to the French minister, informs the minister on the progress with the Indians. The letter in part: “...I have been informed that they (chiefs) await my arrival with impatience. The Outaouas, folle avoine, Sakis, and Renards chiefs have told me how pleased they were to see me. They have informed me that the pleasure of the remotest nations would be equal to their own. They wanted to undertake to go and tell them that they had seen me to convince them that the English had wrongly boasted that they would capture me on the sea, and that I should never come to this Colony. I flatter myself that, next spring, I shall see the chiefs of all the nations, and that I shall succeed in rendering their attachment to the French inviolable...”

Late October-Early November 1755–In Pennsylvania hostile Indians arrive in the vicinity of Shamokin and the settlers on that part of the frontier seek assistance. By early November, the Indians kill several of the settlers “under peculiarly cruel and barbarous circumstances.” A group of leading citizens of the region anticipating severe problems issues a proclamation on 2 November from Paxton which states: “PAXTON, Oct. 31, 1755. From John Harris at 12 p. m To all his majesty's subjects in the Province of Pennsylvania. or elsewhere: Whereas, Andrew Montour, Belt of Wampum, two Mohawks and other Indians came down this day from Shamokin (where Sunbury is now located), who say the whole body of Indians or the greatest part of them in the French interest, is actually encamped on this side George Gabriel's, near Susquehanna; and that we may expect an attack in three days at farthest; and a French fort to be begun at Shamokin in ten days hence. Tho' this be the Indian report; we the subscribers, do give it as our advice to repair immediately to the frontiers with all our forces to intercept their passage into our country, and be prepared in the best manner possible for the worst event. Witness our hands.” Those of nine who sign include James Galbreath; John Allison; Barney Hughes and

Robert Wallace. In conjunction, the Indians from the region, including Mona-ca-too-tha and the Belt, press for Conrad Weiser (interpreter) to arrive to parley with the Indians.

October 31 1755 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, John Harris’s concerns are realized when he is informed of hostile Indians at Shamokin. He and others issue a proclamation: “To all his Majesty’s subjects in the Province of Pennsylvania or elsewhere: Whereas Andrew Montour, Belt of Wampum, two Mohawks, and other Indians came down this day from Shamokin, who say the whole body of Indians, or the greatest part of them, in the French interest is actually encamped this side of George Gabriels [thirty miles above Harris' Ferry, on the west side of the river] near Susquehanah, and that we may expect an attack in three days at farthest; and a French fort to be begun at Shamokin in ten days hence. Tho' this be the Indian report, we, the subscribers, do give it as our advice to repair immediately to the frontiers with all our forces to intercept their passage into our country, and to be prepared in the best manner possible for the worst event.” Some of the others, besides Harris, who affix their names include James Galbraith, John Allison, Barney Hughes, and Robert Wallace. In related activity, at places including Berks and Lancaster Counties, the colonists are prepared to stand and defend; however, Governor Morris lacks available arms and ammunition for distribution to those colonies. Nevertheless, Conrad Weiser and some others issue a report noting that the citizens at Aughwick and Juniata are cut off. The report includes: “If we are not immediately supported, we must not be sacrificed, and therefore are determined to go down with all that will follow us to Philadelphia, and quarter ourselves on its inhabitants, and wait our fate with them.” This same day at about midnight Weiser issues a call for help and summoned “all His Majesty's subjects in Pennsylvania and elsewhere” to repair to the frontiers, to intercept the whole body of Indians actually encamped this side of Gabriel's on the Susquehanna, ready to strike within three days, while a French fort was about to be established at Shamokin, with the consent of the Indians there.” Shortly thereafter, the Indians pounce upon Great Cove. Other settlers at Conegohege Valley flee their homes and head for Cumberland County. At or about this same time, Colonel John Armstrong at Carlisle writes in a letter to the assembly, his beliefs on how to preserve the area, stating: “that nothing but a chain of block houses along the south side of the Kittatinny mountains from Susquehanna to the temporary line, would secure the lives and property of even the old inhabitants of the county, the new settlements being all deserted except those in Shearman's Valley, which might suffer very soon.” The assembly, in response to Armstrong’s recommendations respond in a peculiar way, considering the seriousness of the crisis by writing a letter to Governor Morris inquiring if he has any knowledge “of any injury which the Delawares and Shawanees had received to alienate their affections, and whether he knew the part taken by the Six Nations in relation to this incursion.”

November 1 1755 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, at Cumberland County, Sheriff John Potter (Father of Revolutionary War Brigadier General James Potter) is informed of an Indian raid in the area. He raises a force and moves toward the Great Cove in pursuit of the raiders. **In Portugal**, a severe earthquake strikes Lisbon. The city is demolished and about 15,000 people are killed. England offers substantial financial aid and Portugal remains thankful. Later when France and Spain attempt to coerce Portugal to denounce her alliance with England, she refuses despite the threat of invasion.

November 2 1755 (Sunday) - Pennsylvania - Great Cove Massacre - An Indian raiding party, composed of about 160 Shawnee and Delawares (according to report of Sheriff Potter), swoops down on Fulton County and ravages the area, destroying the settler’s homes and inflicting a

massacre that wipes out nearly fifty citizens either by murder or capture. A contingent of 40 men, led by Sheriff John Potter reaches the Great Cove and discovers Matthew Patton's home on fire, which is about one mile from where they stand. Sheriff Potter reports: "...Our old officers hid themselves, for aught I knew, to save their scalps, until afternoon when danger was over. We went to Patton's house with a seeming resolution and courage, but found no Indians there, on which we advanced to a rising ground, where we immediately discovered another house and barn on fire belonging to Mesach James, about one mile upon the creek from Thomas Bars. We set off directly for that place, but they had gone up the creek to another plantation, left by one widow Jordon the day before, but she had unhappily gone back that morning with a young woman, daughter to one William Clark, for some milk for her children and were both taken captives, but neither house nor barn hurt. I have heard of no more burnt in that valley, which makes me believe they have gone off for some time, but I much fear they will return before we are prepared for them; for it was three o'clock in the afternoon before a recruit came of about sixty men; then we held council whether to pursue up the valley all night or return to McDowell's (John McDowell's Mills) the former of which I and Mr. Hoops, and some others plead for, but could not obtain it without putting it to vote, which done, we were out-voted by a considerable number; upon which I and company was left by them Y' them, (that night I came home) for I will not guard a man that will not fight when called in so imminent manner; for there were not six of these men that would consent to go in pursuit of the Indians..." Potter also mentions in this report that two thirds of the people in the valley had already fled. In addition, he makes it known that ammunition is desperately needed. In conjunction, the settlers here had been chased from the region during 1750 by sheriffs after it was determined that the land was Indian territory. During this raid the Harrod family and some others escape harm because they reach Fort Lyttleton. In conjunction, the Indians have been raiding other settlements as well including Swatara Tulpehocken and at Gnadenhuttten where Moravian missionaries had established a settlement near Mahoning Creek. About ten missionaries are slain. One of the men is first captured, then killed and afterward scalped. One other man escapes and reaches Bethlehem, but when militia arrives at the mission, the Indians had already abandoned the area. Those who survive the attack also reach Bethlehem. The town of Bethlehem, in close proximity to Allentown, becomes a magnet of perceived security for the settlers who converge upon it in large numbers to escape the raids. By mid-December, the Indians ravage Northampton County. They destroy about 50 settlers' homes and about 100 settlers are murdered. Meanwhile, at Reading, within sight of Tulpehocken, some Scotch Highlanders arrive to fortify it, making it easier for the settlers to remain in that area. The government of Pennsylvania proves less than useful to the settlers and in fact, the Quakers seem to fret more over the Indians than the settlers. Militia units begin to form, but the Quaker government merely requests the colony of New York consider dispatching a force from Albany. In conjunction, the Pennsylvania Assembly does pass a Militia Act, but conveniently, the controlling Quakers stuff it with items that literally make it impossible for any Quakers to serve the cause, whether by military service or taxation. This action or as perceived by some evasive action causes the Quakers to lose their dominant role in Pennsylvania. Also, later this month, the Indians attack Danville, located in the vicinity of Stroudsburg (Monroe County). The defenders include a young man of nineteen, Daniel Brodhead and his brothers. Daniel later during the American Revolution serves on the frontier and rises to the rank of brevet brigadier general.

November 3 1755 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, Governor Morris sends a letter to the Provincial Assembly, which at this time is primarily composed of Quakers. Morris' message informs the

assembly about the ravaging raids executed by a force of French and Indians that decimated several of the settlements that are close to the Susquehanna River. Morris also explains that the force, composed of about 1,500 men is advancing toward Harris Ferry. Morris claims the incursion have occurred due to the defeat of General Braddock. He states: "This invasion was the consequence of Braddock's defeat; but, had my hands been properly strengthened I should have put this Province into such a posture of defense as might have prevented the mischiefs that have since happened." In conjunction, the Quakers are reluctant to support efforts to combat the French who have been inciting the Delawares and Shawanese by telling them that they will regain their territory. The speaker of the assembly, Isaac Norris, had only recently stated during a debate in the assembly: "I had rather see Philadelphia sacked three times by the French than vote a single copper for the war."

November 5 1755 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania, Isaac Norris, the speaker of the Pennsylvania Assembly responds to a letter, dated 3 November, from Governor Morris, regarding the recent Indian raids. Norris states in the letter: "It is too evident that the back settlers are greatly alarmed and terrified, and that the late purchase made by the Proprietaries the last year at Albany) by some parties of the Delaware and Shawanese Indians, joined, perhaps-though that is not very clear-with a few of the French Mohawks. In our opinion it requires great care and judgment in conducting our Indian affairs at this critical juncture. The Six Nations are in alliance with the Crown of Great Britain, and numbers of them joined the King's forces under General Johnson, who acted with great fidelity and bravery. It seems absolutely necessary on our part to request the Governor to inform us whether he knows of any disgust or injury the Delawares or Shawanese have ever received from this Province, and by what means their affections can have been so alienated as to take up the hatchet against us." Upon receipt of the letter from the speaker, the governor and the council conclude that the assembly will not pass any legislation proposed by the governor to "provide for the defense and security of the Province." In conjunction, Morris in response to the message from the assembly states: "You have now been sitting six days, and, instead of strengthening my hands and providing for the safety and defense of the people and Province in this time of imminent danger, you have sent me a message wherein you talk of regaining the affections of the Indians now employed in laying waste the country and butchering the inhabitants, and of inquiring what injustice they have received, and into the causes of their falling from their alliance with us and taking part with the French. Such language at this time and while the Province is in its present circumstances seems to me very extraordinary. I am sorry you should send me the Bill I have just now received, when I had heretofore refused my assent to one of the same kind. I shall not enter into a dispute whether the Proprietaries ought to be taxed or not."

November 6 1755 (Thursday)–In New Jersey, Governor Belcher who is also commander-in-chief, issues a directive that orders all provincial militia that is armed to prepare to move to the Pennsylvania frontier to support the Pennsylvanians against the French and Indian incursions if it becomes necessary.

November 7 1755 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, the Pennsylvania Assembly receives an address from a group of Quakers including Anthony Morris, in which the Quakers enthusiastically offer to contribute toward the urgent needs of the government and they propose to raise funds for the purpose of increasing the friendship of the Indians; however, the address stipulates the fear of handing the money over to a committee which might use it for other purposes than the "peaceable testimony professed by the petitioners."

November 8 1755 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, the Indians aligned with the English begin to

have increased apprehension since the French and their Indian allies have been raiding the province. Three Mohawk Indian leaders, Scarooyady, Montour and Jagrea, following a journey they undertook for Governor Morris, arrive in Philadelphia with Conrad Weiser to report the details of the mission. They report that they traveled as far as the Nanticokes territory where about 300 friendly Indians are living along the Susquehanna River. They describe how the Indians they visited remain loyal; however, they are also anxious to know what steps the authorities intend to do to meet the threat. Subsequent to the defeat of General Braddock at Fort Duquesne, the Indians are beginning to lean toward discarding their loyalty to the British; but they are also aware of Sir William Johnson's victory at Lake George, which has them swinging back toward the English and apparently, more enthusiastic about picking up the hatchet. A message from the Indians to the governor: "If you will not fight with us we will go elsewhere. We never can nor ever will put up with the affront [the defeat of the Indian allies of the English in western Pennsylvania]. If we cannot be safe where we are, we will go somewhere else for protection and take care of ourselves." In conjunction, Governor Morris, regarding the Indians inquiries and comments, reports to the assembly, stating: "These Indians desire that we would put the hatchet into their hands; that we would send a number of young men to act in conjunction with their warriors, and furnish necessary arms, ammunition, etc. They insist upon knowing the resolution of this Government, and to have an explicit answer without delay, that they may prepare to act with us, or take the necessary measures for their own security."

November 11 1755 (Tuesday)—**In New York**, Sir William Johnson, the commander at the Battle of Lake George (September 8 1755) receives word that King George II, has made him a baronet and the king has also awarded him with a gift of \$20,000. Johnson later receives a grant of 26,000 acres (Kingsboro); however, for about eight years, he remains at Johnstown, which is still considered the wilderness. **In Pennsylvania**, the Pennsylvania Gazette lists the names of those recently killed or abducted by Indians. The people include: "Elizabeth Gallway, Henry Gilson, Robert Peer, William Berryhill and David McClelland were murdered. The missing are John Martin's wife and five children; William Gallway's wife and two children, and a young woman; Charles Stewart's wife and two children; David McClelland's wife and two children. William Fleming and wife were taken prisoner. Fleming's son and one Hicks were killed and scalped."

November 14 1755 (Friday)—**In Pennsylvania**, during a meeting of the Provincial Council in Philadelphia, the council directs Scarooyady and Andrew Montour to repair to the Six Nations and while en route they are to inform all the friendly Indians they encounter of the actions of the Ohio Indians and attempt to secure their support. Also, the governor has also sent Silver Heels out toward Shamokin with instructions to collect information on the activity of the Indians there. Silver Heels initiates his journey soon after he receives the instructions. He discovers a large number, about 140 Indians, engaged in a war dance and he learns that they are anxious to go to war against the English. During the mission, Silver Heels also learns that the Delawares and Shawanese along the Ohio had also been incited to make war on the English, along with the Susquehanna Indians, the latter making preparations to wage war in the province of Pennsylvania. In the meantime, Governor Morris also learns that the Indians living along the North Branch of the Susquehanna had permitted the French permission to establish themselves at Nescopeck.

November 15 1755 (Saturday)—**In Pennsylvania**, Governor Morris dispatches the Mohawk, Scarouady to New York to deliver details to General Sir William Johnson regarding the intelligence gathered on French Indian operations on the frontier. The information also includes

Morris' intent to construct a post at Shamokin close to the Forks of the Susquehanna this winter. In other activity, a band of Indians that had crossed the Blue Mountains, launches a raid against Dietrich Six's (Derrick Smith) Watch-house in the Tulpehockens. Six bodies, four of whom were scalped, are discovered on the following day. The Indians also set fires which destroy the stable and the barn. They also destroy the corn crop and kill some livestock. Nevertheless, they do not burn the house. On the following morning, the Indians attack the residence of Thomas Bower. Reinforcements, after hearing gunfire arrive and discover four Indians in the process of scalping children. Three of the five children are dead when the help arrives and the remaining two are alive; however, they too had been scalped. Afterward, the reinforcements speed to Dietrich Six's where they discover five Indians still in the house having a minor celebration, eating dinner and drinking rum. Although there is some firing of weapons, the Indians apparently escape. During the raids, four or five other residences are attacked. On the following day, Peter Spycer in a letter to Conrad Weiser states: "We are, at present, in imminent danger to lose our lives, or estates; pray, therefore, for help, or else whole Tulpehocken will be laid waste by the Indians, *in a very short time*—all the buildings will be burned, the people scalped. Do, therefore, lose no time to get us assistance...." **In Naval Activity**, Admiral Boscawen arrives back in England at Spithead following a mission in North America that began during the latter part of the previous April. Admiral Francis Holburne, who had participated in the operations, also returns with the fleet.

November 21 1755 (Friday)—In Pennsylvania, Indians aligned with the French penetrate deeper into the province and raid the Moravian town of Gnadenhutten (Northampton County). The Indians kill six people and while there, they also destroy the village by burning the buildings, including those in which cattle and horse are held. The town's supply of grain and hay is also destroyed. Approximately fourteen Christian Indian men are able to escape, along with their families and reach the town of Bethlehem.

November 24 1755 (Monday)—In Pennsylvania, Indians, allied with the French, raid a home at Old Gnadenhutten. Fifteen people are in the house and of those, the Indians massacre all but four. All the homes are set on fire. Gnadenhutten East is abandoned during the same night. The missionaries who survive along with the Delaware and Mohicans whom had converted to Christianity (about 70, including women and children) repair to Bethlehem.

December 1755 - In New York, the governors of the colonies, concerned for the overall defense of the provinces convene a meeting in New York which results in a strategy to gather a combined force of about 20,000 troops to launch an assault against French-held Fort Du Quesne in the Ohio Valley and against the French strongholds in New York at Crown Point, and Niagara. They expect to launch attacks during 1756. **In Pennsylvania** at Dupui's Fort in the vicinity of Stroudsburg, a force under Captain Isaac Wayne (father of General Anthony Wayne) garrisons the post, but only temporarily. Other troops under Captain Nicholas Wetterholt afterward replace Wayne's command when he is ordered to a new post. Wetterholt assumes responsibility for the region (south of the Blue Mountains between the Delaware and Susquehanna Rivers). The fort, located between Fort Hamilton and Fort Hyndshaw remains active until 1758. In conjunction, a young boy of about sixteen, Samuel Miles, had joined the company of Captain Wayne, subsequent to the defeat of General Braddock, earlier in the year. Miles (brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in the operations against the Indians in Northampton. Miles notable performance is recognized and passed on to the governor, who appoints Miles as an ensign during 1757. In the meantime, Miles' enlistment terminates during 1756; however, he reenlists and receives the rank of sergeant in Captain

Thomas Lloyd's company. Ensign Miles is later wounded while Fort Ligonier is successfully defended by the English (1758) and afterward, he participates in the campaign under General Forbes to seize Fort Duquesne. **In other activity in Pennsylvania**, Indians launch raids in Shearman Valley. Many of the settlers reach safety at Fort Robinson; however, the Woolcombers a family of Quakers decides to remain in their home. When the Indians arrive at their home, they are offered dinner. Nevertheless, the Indians decline the dinner and inform Woolcomber that they arrived to get scalps and at that time, Woolcomber is killed by a tomahawk. His son escapes and reaches Fort Robinson; however the remainder of the family is killed. Reinforcements arrive, but too late. The Indians had vanished. In conjunction, during the following year.

December 8 1755 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, Governor Morris dispatches Charles Brodhead, Aaron De Pui and Benjamin Shoemaker as commissioners to repair to Shamokin, Nescopeck and Wyoming respectively to invite the Indians to come to Harris' Ferry for a parley to be held on 1 January, 1756. The commissioners are ordered to repair to Wyoming to escort the Indians there, who wish to attend the conference, to Harris' Ferry. Morris instructions include: "If they (at Wyoming) give you a cool reception, then endeavor to discover their true sentiments and future designs. If you cannot get all, get as many of the chiefs as you can to come." In conjunction, within a few days after naming the commissioners, Teedyuscung and his followers attacked the home of commissioner Charles Brodhead. Later, within several additional days, these Indians launch another raid and they ravage Smithfield township. The Indians murder and scalp the settlers still in the township and those not killed are dragged away. Before departing, the Indians burn all the buildings. In conjunction, due to the savage acts of the Indians in Northampton County, the three commissioners are not able to execute the mission assigned to them.

December 25 1755 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, Benjamin Franklin and James Hamilton (commissioners) arrive in Easton to find solutions to the relentless Indian attacks,, that had followed after the defeat of General Braddock. The two commissioners dispatch Captain Ashton and Captain Trump to Stroudsburg, where the troops establish Fort Hamilton. In conjunction, the post is completed by early January, 1756. Afterward, Captain Trump is ordered to establish another post (Fort Norris) at Kresgeville, about 15 miles from Fort Allen. **In England**, Earl Loudoun (John Campbell, 4th Earl) is appointed colonel of the 60th Regiment (Royal American). He arrives in the colonies during July 1756 and becomes commander-in-chief of all his majesty's forces in America.

December 31 1755 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania at Paxton, a band of more than 15 armed men arrive at the property of Tobias Hendsricks intent on moving to Harris' Ferry taking out revenge on the friendly Indians there for the earlier atrocities committed by the Indians aligned to the French in Shearman's valley. Nonetheless, another man, James young is able to dissuade them from carrying out their scheme. During the following month, Harris sends a dispatch to Carlisle to get the Indians there to return to Paxton. **In Michigan**, Detroit at this time comprises an area of only 300 acres. The settlement is surrounded by pickets; however, it has four separate gates and it contains four blockhouses and four guns. About 180-to-200 houses are within the post and the population stands at about three-to-four hundred.

Late December 1755–In Pennsylvania, a resident of Cumberland County, recounts some atrocities committed at this time. Robert Robison states in Loudon's Narratives by the historian, Archibald Loudon: "The next I remember was in 1755, the Woolcomber's family on Sheerman's creek; the whole of the inhabitants of the valley was gathered at Robison's, but the Woolcomber would not leave home, he said It was the Irish who were killing one another, these peaceable people, the Indians, would not hurt any person. Being at home and at dinner, the Indians came in,

and the Quaker asked them to come and eat dinner; an Indian announced that he did not come to eat, but for scalps; the son, a boy of fourteen or fifteen years of age, when he heard the Indian say so, repaired to back door, and as he went out he looked back, and saw the Indian strike the tomahawk into his father's head. The boy then ran over the creek which was near to the house, and heard the screams of his mother, sister and brother. The boy came to our fort and gave us the alarm; about forty went to where the murder was done and buried the dead.”

1756-In New York, the English establish a blockhouse (Canaseraga Blockhouse) at Sullivan Hamlet near Lake Onondaga to provide security for the Tuscarora Indians. The English also establish a blockhouse, Fort Winslow, named in honor of General Winslow, at Stillwater (Saratoga County) on the site of a former fort, Fort In Goldsby constructed here during 1709. In conjunction, Fort Winslow during 1758 becomes Montessor's Blockhouse and it is fortified with a barracks. It becomes inactive prior to the American War for Independence, but afterwards, during 1777, the Americans establish a supply depot here and name it Schuyler's Supply Barracks in honor of General Philip Schuyler. Also, Fort Gardiner is established at Gardinersville (Orange County) by a contingent of the Frontier Guard led by Captain Richard Gardiner. Also, Fort Neversink (also known as Fort Minisink) is established in the Minisink Valley at Port Jervis (Orange County) along the Delaware River. In conjunction, at this time, Pennsylvania, New Jersey and New York claim the valley. In conjunction, Governor John Belder of New Jersey creates the Frontier Guard, a military unit that wears civilian clothes. The Guards deploy primarily to defend Minisink in the Upper Delaware Valley and the detachments, each composed of less than ten men, patrol the area containing thirteen forts stretching from Fort Redding to the area around Fort Gardiner, located north of Port Jervis. Also, the British establish a fortification, known as Kanadesaga for the Senecas. In conjunction, the Senecas became allies of the English following recent hostilities between the Indians and the French. Kanadesaga, located near the Genesee River outside of Rochester is later destroyed by an American force during an expedition in 1779 in which an American contingent is ambushed and two men are brutally tortured to death. **Also**, the British establish Ganaghsaraga Fort near Syracuse in Onondaga County to provide security for the Onondaga tribe. The fort constructed by Sir William Johnson is placed near or in the same area where a French fort, known as Fort French, previously stood while the French executed a campaign against the Onondagas (1696). Sir William Johnson's forces also establish a blockhouse (Canaseraga Blockhouse) at Sullivan Hamlet east of the village of Chittenango (Madison County). The fort is built to provide security for the friendly Tuscarora Indians in that region. In conjunction, the fort in the vicinity of Lake Onondaga is apparently abandoned at an undetermined time following the French and Indian War. Also, Fort Ox is established in Oswego County during August as a temporary post for General Bradstreet. And the English also establish Oneida Castle to protect the Oneida tribe.

January 1 1756 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, recently arrived militia contingent composed of about 40 troops from the Irish Settlement, operating out of an unfinished fort in the vicinity of New Gnadenhutten spot two Indians, but the militia is unskilled in Indian warfare. Unaware that it is an ambush, the troops pursue the Indians and just as they close upon them, the ambush is sprung. Indians bolt from concealed positions and devastate the contingent. Those who survive make it back to the fort, but shortly thereafter, it is abandoned when the troops desert. After the militia abandons the positions, the Indians, having no resistance, effortlessly destroy everything in the town. During the raid into the area, the Indians also destroy seven separate farms standing between the fort and Nazareth. The incident causes even more panic in the region. Later in the month, Benjamin Franklin, a commissioner, leading several companies arrives at Gnadenhutten

and the troops complete the fort, which is named Fort Allen. Fort Allen becomes the advance post in a series of forts and blockhouses that the commissioners order to be built on a line stretching from the foothills of the Blue Mountains at the Delaware River to the border with Maryland. At this time about 500 militia troops are active in Northampton County and they are bolstered by about forty British regulars sent to the region by Governor Shirley of Massachusetts. In addition, another contingent of British regulars (about forty regulars) is posted at Reading. During this period, it is concluded that the Conestoga Indians have remained loyal to the English and that they offer no threat. Consequently, the Conestoga Indians are permitted to remain in Conestoga Manor. Some others (Six Nations) are provided residency at Pennsbury Manor.

January 5 1756 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania at Reading, on or about this day, Governor Robert Morris informs the Council at Philadelphia of the desperate situation in central Pennsylvania and that the region requires immediate aid or the territory would be lost. His message notes with some obvious sarcasm that the colonists in the region “expect every man’s house to be protected by a fort and a company of soldiers, and they themselves being paid to stay home and do nothing....” In conjunction, Fort Allen will be constructed soon after and completed in about one week. Commissioner Benjamin Franklin also dispatches soldiers to build forts at Minisink (Upper and Lower Forts). At Fort Allen, Franklin notes that the fort’s one swivel gun had been fired as soon as it was placed to inform the Indians that it was operational. In conjunction, Colonel William Clapham succeeds Commissioner Franklin and temporarily commands at the fort. Meanwhile, Colonel Conrad Weiser receives command of the region and later he is succeeded, it is thought, by Captain Charles Foulk.

January 8 1756 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania at Paxton, a council is held with Indians at the residence of John Harris (Harris Ferry). Attendees include Governor Robert Morris, James Hamilton, Richard Peters and Conrad Weiser; however only two Indians (Six Nations) are there, the Belt of Wampum (Seneca) and a Mohawk named Broken Thigh. In conjunction Morris explains that he did not expect other Indians primarily because his messengers could not reach the Indians on the Susquehanna because of the “ravages of the Indians, which began in their neighborhood at the time they were preparing to set out on their journey.” Morris also specifies that he has to depart for Carlisle and he invite the Indians and their families to accompany him to continue the council. Belt, the Seneca speaks and agrees to go to Carlisle.

January 27 1756 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians raid the area near Sherman’s Creek and during the incursion several settlers near Patterson’s Fort. In conjunction, on the previous day, Thomas McKee had been appointed as captain with command at Hunter’s Mill.

scalp James Leaton The home of Elias Stilwell is struck, while he is away, but the Indians kill his wife, Catherine and one of his children, then scalp both. The Indians also seize two of their children, eight years old and three years old respectively. Meanwhile, Catherine’s husband, Richard Stilwell, who was at a neighbor’s home when the attack occurred is able to make it to Coon’s fort. Nevertheless, most of the settler’s (Tonoways or Conollyoway Settlement) escape harm by reaching the safety of the fort. At the time of this attack, both Maryland and Pennsylvania claim the area, but the dispute is later settled, placing the fort’s area in present-day Fulton County near Washington County, Maryland. In conjunction, on 12 February 1756, the Pennsylvania Gazette mentions the names of the settlers who came under attack and it mentions the damage including: “Elias Stilwell had seven horses and a mare carried off, one cow killed and one burnt. John McKuney’s house was burnt, with all his household goods and clothing, and what remained of three beeves and seven fat hogs; he had likewise three cows killed; and three

calves burnt in Samuel Eaton's barn. Samuel Hicks had eleven cattle and a valuable mare killed. Richard Malone's house and barn was burnt, and two of his cattle killed. And a house was burnt that belonged to one Hicks, who had been murdered some time ago. The tracks of seven Indians and of a child, supposed to be Mr. Stilwell's, with those of the horses they carried off, were seen in a corn field and, they seemed to be going towards Aughwiek."

June 23 1757 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, the Indians in three separate bands strike contingents outside Fort Augusta at about 1000. They encircle the guards who are posted to protect the cattle. Four men are killed and five others are wounded; however the remaining four escape harm. One of the four who escape comes close to losing his head, however, the shot only passes through his hat. Reinforcements arrive from the fort, but not soon enough to prevent the Indians from scalping the dead. Three of the troops had been scalped; however, before they could gain the 4th, the Indians hear the guns of the reinforcements and they flee. When the reinforcements arrive, the entire Bullock Guard is in the field and they give no ground. In other activity, a son of Adam Drum arrives at Fort Lebanon following a harrowing experience. On the previous night, Indians had attacked his father and himself on the previous night. Mr. Drum was killed and his son captured. Before leaving the Indians grabbed a supply of liquor in the hoime and after arriving at an elevation about seven miles from the Drum residence, they pause and indulge. While the Indians were getting drunk, young Drum escaped.

June 24 1757 (Friday)–In New York sat French-held Fort Niagara, Captain De Mezieres arrives at the post. Four Acadians who had made their way back from the Carolinas after being transported there when the English relocated the Acadians during 1755. The four men provide Pouchot with intelligence regarding the region where they had been sent. In Pennsylvania, Indians again strike at Conococheague. They kill Alexander Miller and carry two of his daughters away. In other activity, Indians wound a man named John Kennedy near Fort Lyttleton and they also kill a daughter of Gerhart Prendergras.

June 26 1757 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, one of the sentries at the Palisade Bastion spots a woman in the river near the opposite bank. The sentry calls out to her and she responds that she was held captive by the Indians and that she escaped. A batteaux is sent to pick up the woman and she is the wife of one of the troops (James Armstrong) in the garrison. Her name is Betty Armstrong and she had been dragged away from Juniata about 18 months ago. (See also , February 20 1756). **In Germany,** the French defeat the Prussians under Frederick at Kolin. Afterward, the Prussians evacuate Bohemia.

June 27 1757 (Monday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie informs Colonel George Washington that he is convinced that the Indians who are traveling with the French during the incursion of the frontier are primarily Shawnee.

June 30 1757 (Thursday)–In Maryland, at a meeting of council, Governor Sharpe presents a letter regarding the Cherokee and the taking of scalps. Sharpe details how the Cherokee have developed a means of turning one scalp into four scalps and that at times, friendly Indians, when alone are scalped to gain more compensation. He makes it known that some encourage "to the utmost private scalping whereby the most innocent and helpless Persons, even Women and Children are properly murdered without the least Benefit accruing by it, Actions becoming only the greatest Savages, and unworthy of any Christian People to reward. I am well assured Lord Loudoun detests that Practice, and that the French General Moncalm in Canada does the same, Sir William Johnson gives no Reward at all in particular for Scalps by Name, the Warriors fitted out by him to War deliver to him at their Return all that they bring back, and he afterwards presents them to the Relations of such as lose their Lives in Battle; but to speak upon this Subject

on the Footing of Interest, Large Public Rewards for Scalps given by provincial Laws to Indians are attended with very pernicious Consequences to his Majesty's Service, for they are so many Temptations to some Indians to kill others that are our Friends, that is when they think they have a good Opportunity to kill such single Indians that are found alone..."

Share also explains that he has placed some Indians under guard to prevent any harm coming to them. He also informs council that twenty scalps are hanging and that they had been made from the scalps of five Frenchmen. In addition Sharpe makes it clear that he has informed the Indians that he does not "buy scalps."

Early July 1757 - Canada-Colonies - French and Indian War - A massive French force assembles to prepare to launch an attack against English-held Fort William Henry, at Lake George in New York. The French, bolstered by various Indian allies bring the army to more than 10,000. The French depart St. Jean en route to Carillon (Ticonderoga) where they will be joined by the commander, Marquis de Montcalm. In conjunction, other French troops move to Louisbourg to bolster it.

July 1 1757 (Friday)—**In New York**, Pouchot, the commander of Fort Niagara holds a council with the Indians that had gathered. The tribes include Hurons, who arrived from Michigan. Ottawas from Michigan and Canada and a group of Ouillas who arrived from the lower Ohio with the Acadians. All in attendance vow to support the French. Pouchot convinces the Indians, some of whom have natural long-standing adversarial relationships, to smoke and drink to the health of each other. Later on the same day, a Seneca Indian arrives and he reports to Pouchot that Governor Morris of Pennsylvania had sent out word that he wanted to hold a council with the Senecas and that the tribe declined the invitation. Other Indians, of the Delaware tribe begin to arrive after having been at Sir William Johnson at his residence along the Mohawk River and seen about 600 troops, wearing blue uniforms and that they had also seen a contingent of Scotchmen there. In yet other activity, even more Indians pass through the fort. A group of Kickapoo and Mascoutins pause at the fort while they are en route to Montreal. In conjunction, by this time the French are aware of the British fleet that had sailed from England for Halifax. In conjunction, General Montcalm continues to prepare to strike the English at Lake George. In addition, Montcalm is focused also on keeping the Iroquois incited while persuading them to unite with the French and participate in the invasion.

July 2 1757 (Saturday)—**In Pennsylvania**, Indians launch a raid at Trent's Gap. They seize one woman and four children. In other activity, Indians also kill one man, named Springson close to Logan's Mill, Conococheague. Later on 8 July, Indians seize two boys in the same area.

July 4 1757(Monday)—**In Pennsylvania** at Carlisle, Major Richard Smith and Colonel John Stanwix both send letters to Governor of Maryland regarding the Cherokee Indians. Smith requests that presents are sent for the Indians who are disgruntled with the Virginians, whom the Indians claim never keep their promises. There is concern that the Cherokee might switch and support the French. Smith's letter includes a copy of the speech the Indians gave at Fort Loudoun. Colonel Stanwix's letter is similar in content and it too includes a copy of the speech. At a council meeting, it is determined that the Indians had received 200 pounds for scalps they had taken. In conjunction, Shape makes it known that he has no available funds to honor Stanwix's request for the presents. Governor Sharpe and the Board agree "that a proclamation issue appointing a Fast to be held on Friday the twelfth Day of August next." The proclamation in part: "Whereas our Almighty Creator in Order to awaken in us his sinful Creatures, a due Sense of our Relation to and Dependance upon him does often from his tender Mercy, towards us give Warning of his Displeasure at our manifold Sins and Wickedness that by a true

Repentance and Reformation of our Manners, and a close and strict Obedience to his Laws and Observance of his holy Will for the future we may avoid that Vengeance and disarm that Justice too strictly due to the Number and Weight of our Offences, And Whereas such a Duty seems at present to be required of us, as our Mother Country is involved in a calamitous War and we are now in Danger of losing both our Religion and Liberties by the Attacks of a perfidious, merciless and savage Enemy.”

July 5 1757 (Tuesday)–In New York, at Lake George, the French, bolstered by Indians, engage a British force on a small group of islands in the vicinity of Sabbath Day Point. The British force composed also of colonial troops including the Jersey Blues is mauled. Of about 350 troops, less than 15 escaped. The remainder of the scouting force was either killed (more than 125) or captured.

July 6 1757 (Wednesday)- In New York, a force of about 6,000 troops under Lord Loudoun which had arrived from New York on 30 June, awaits the arrival of Admiral Holburne from Cork. Holburne’s fleet carries an additional 5,000-6,000 troops under Lord George Howe. Admiral Holburne’s squadron arrives at Halifax on or about 9 July. In conjunction, Horace Walpole had earlier, during the previous February, written about Loudoun’s campaign saying: “I do not augur very well of the ensuing summer; a detachment is going to America under a commander whom a child might outwit or terrify with a pop-gun.” Prior to embarking for Halifax, Loudoun, without authorization of Parliament, had embargoed all ships in port in the English colonies, a move that infuriated the colonists. Loudoun after arriving in Nova Scotia directs that a parade ground be constructed and he orders a vegetable garden to be created to provide protection against “scurvy.”In addition, Loudoun institutes constant drilling of the troops, along with ordering mock-fights and sieges that after a while, creates open criticism from junior officers.

The combined force departs Halifax at the beginning of August to launch an assault against Louisbourg, but its belated arrival runs behind a French fleet that arrives with fresh reinforcements. With seventeen warships and a strongly garrisoned stronghold as invincible as Louisbourg, known as the American Rock of Gibraltar, the English return to New York without attempting an invasion. In conjunction, the Colonial troops had formed to attack Crown Point and Ticonderoga, not Nova Scotia, but Loudoun changed his plans leaving the Americans no choice but to go along with Loudoun. Meanwhile, Marquis de Montcalm, noting the absence of strong British forces in New York sets his sights on Fort William Henry on the north side of Lake George.

Bourlamaque, the French commander at Ticonderoga with the Bearn and Royal Roussillon has been acquiring intelligence on Fort William Henry since his arrival during the previous spring when he arrived to complete the construction of the fort. Ticonderoga, a rocky promontory lies between the outlet of Lake George (south) and Lake Champlain (north). The Bearn and Royal Roussillon regiment are camped in close proximity to the fort. In addition, a force composed of the Guienne, La Reine, La Sarre and Languedoc Regiments, under Levis are encamped near the outlet of Lake George. There is also another camp for the Canadians, colony regulars and Indians under Rigaud. The French also have contingents including Canadians and Indians at an outpost on the western bank of Lake George and yet other forces on Bald Mountain (Rogers Rock). These camps spread across a valley extend about four miles from Lake Champlain to Lake George. About 8,000 men, including Indians, are encamped there.

Bougainville describes the Indians, who number about 2,000, stating: "I see no difference in the dress, ornaments, dances, and songs of the various western nations. They go naked, excepting a strip of cloth passed through a belt, and paint themselves black, red, blue, and other colors. Their heads are shaved and adorned with bunches of feathers, and they wear rings of brass wire in their ears. They wear beaver-skin blankets, and carry lances, bows and arrows, and quivers made of the skins of beasts. For the rest they are straight, well made, and generally very tall. Their religion is brute paganism. I will say it once for all, one must be the slave of these savages, listen to them day and night, in council and in private, whenever the fancy takes them, or whenever a dream, a fit of the vapors, or their perpetual craving for brandy, gets possession of them; besides which they are always wanting something for their equipment, arms, or toilet, and the general of the army must give written orders for the smallest trifle, - an eternal, wearisome detail, of which one has no idea in Europe." Bougainville also speaks of how the Indians receive one week's rations and consumes the items in three days, then demand more food. He continues: "On one occasion they took the matter into their own hands, and butchered and devoured eighteen head of cattle intended for the troops; nor did any officer dare oppose this St. Bartholomew of the oxen. Their paradise is to be drunk. Their paradise was rather a hell; for sometimes, when mad with brandy, they grappled and tore each other with their teeth like wolves. They were continually making medicine, that is, consulting the Manitou, to whom they hung up offerings, sometimes a dead dog, and sometimes the belt-cloth which formed their only garment." In South Carolina, Governor William Henry Lyttleton concurs with an Act of the assembly to authorize him to raise one regiment, composed of seven companies, each to contain 100 troops. In conjunction, five of the companies are to be made available for service in any part of North America.

July 8 1757 (Friday)–In New York at French-held Fort Niagara, yet more Indians arrive. Iroquois as well as more Delawares from Ohio and Ottawas from Detroit appear at the fort. On this same day, Captain De Belestre departs the fort with a contingent of Indians that travel in eight canoes. Meanwhile the Iroquois who have received a large number of trinkets from the governor of Pennsylvania, simply use them to acquire different gifts from the French. In Pennsylvania, Indians strike the region close to the homes of Valentine Herchelroar and Tobias Bickell. A band of four braves faces no resistance from some children whom they murder. One of the children is about four years old and the other is five. In addition, they scalp one young girl of about sixteen years old, but she survives. The murders and terror attack continue, although they have been so frequent across the frontiers that many atrocities have never been clearly documented. During August of this year, Indians ravage parts of Bern Township and again children are murdered and others are seized and dragged away. In another incident at this time, Indians strike in Tulpehocken. They kill one man, named Lebenuth and they also kill his wife. Afterward both are scalped.

July 10 1757 (Sunday)–In New York, at French-held Fort Niagara, the commander holds a council with the Iroquois and the Ottawas. The primary goal of the Indians is to receive liquor and other gifts. They tell Pouchot they require various items because they can no longer request anything from the English and that they have no time to hunt. On this same day, a war party, which had raided the area on the south branch of the Susquehanna River, returns to the fort. They have brought an elderly woman whom was seized on 1 May. Pouchot questions the woman, but without gaining any intelligence, apparently because she is German and most probably could not converse in either French or English. Nonetheless, during the next several weeks, more prisoners are taken to the fort. **In Pennsylvania**, some soldiers are killed during an Indian attack against a settler's fort (William Clapham's plantation). In other activity, batteaux

under Captain Trump arrive at Fort Augusta at about 1300. Lt. Humphreys and Ensigns Broadhead and Scott, along with Reverend Steell. In addition, the batteaux have also transported 33 recruits and some bullocks, cows, one calf, hogs and sheep. **In Naval Activity**, Admiral Holburne arrives at Nova Scotia from Ireland; however, the voyage encountered inclement weather, which caused a delay in the arrival of the fleet, composed of thirteen ships of the line and the convoy of transports.

July 13 1757 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania, near Fort Augusta, sentries guarding a wagon party observes about 60 Indians on an island at the mouth of Shamokin Creek. Detachments are sent to land on the island; however, no Indians are there when the troops land. **In Virginia**, Governor Dinwiddie informs Colonel George Washington that the decision of which places are selected to bolster the defenses on the frontier will be left entirely to his (Washington) judgment.

July 15 1757 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, 7 canoes carrying Delaware Indians arrive at the post. They claim to now be at peace with the English and they request flour; however, Colonel Burd declines, saying that he first needs permission from the governor. The Indians, somewhat angry and disappointed depart. Burden says he will have an answer in twenty days, but if they remain, he will provide them with an equal allowance as that of his troops. The Indians, about 40, depart. On the following day, two canoes arrive and those Indians request flour. After being refused, they depart. The other Indians at the fort are also preparing to depart and Colonel Burd decides to have a change of heart. He tells the Indians that despite no permission from the governor, he will give them three barrels of flour. His kindness strikes sharply. The Indians claim that they “now saw that their Brothers, ye English, would have compassion on them; they were heartily sorry for what they had done to their Brothers, the English, but now it was over, and that they were all determined to Return to this River, to their old Towns and live.”

July 17 1757 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, Colonel Burd holds a general review. In addition, there are two church services. The Indians attend both. Later, Colonel Burd invites all the Indians to have dinner with him.

July 18 1757 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians attack a party while they are working in John Chisney’s field close to Shippensburg. The Indians kill John Kirkpatrick and Dennis Oneidon. Some others, John Chisney and his two grandsons, along with the grandson of Kirkpatrick are seized and carried away. **In other activity**, the Indians at Fort Augusta depart. Before leaving, they tell Colonel Burd that they will return with all the chiefs of their nations in 20 days. **In New York**, Montcalm arrives at Carillon (Ticonderoga). He prepares to launch an attack to seize Fort William Henry. His army, including Indians arrives at Fort William Henry on 3 August.

July 19 1757 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians again strike near Shippensburg, while a party is working in the field of Joseph Steenson. Those killed are: Andrew Enslow, John Finlay, Allen Henderson William Gibson, James Mitchell, Joseph Mitchell, William Mitchell, Robert Steenson and John Wiley. The Indians also take captives: Jane McCommon, Mary Minor, Janet Harper and the son of John Finlay. During the attack, one Indian is killed. .

July 20 1757 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania, Governor Denny arrives in Easton. On the following day he opens the treaty (conference) with the Indians. Teedyuscung, known as the King, attends. He had brought a party of 54 men, along with 37 women and 39 children, primarily of the Seneca and other tribes. Others include old King Nutimus and "French Margaret.” In addition to the commissioners and other notables from Philadelphia, Colonels Weiser and George Croghan attend the conference. Teedyuscung causes some immediate consternation on the part of the governor when he demands a clerk to maintain minutes of the

meeting for him. Eventually, the governor acquiesces and Charles Thomson is selected by Teedyuscung to be his clerk (secretary). Thomson later becomes the secretary of the Continental Congress. During the conference, the governor on one day, decides not to meet with the Indians. The governor claims it was because Teedyuscung was intoxicated; however, Thomson's report contradicts the governor and states that he was sober. Nonetheless, the Indians take offence and begin to paint their faces and they begin to load their weapons. Tension quickly rises, but finally Quakers persuade the Indians to lay down their arms.

Later, Teedyuscung officially addresses the governor, stating: "This is the time to declare our mutual friendship. Now, Brother the Governor, to confirm what I have said I have given you my hand, which you were pleased to rise and take hold of, I leave it with you. When you please, Brother, if you have anything to say as a token of confirming the peace, I shall be ready to hear; and as you rise, I will rise up and lay hold of your hand. To confirm what I have said I give you these belts." In response, the governor states: "We now rise and take you into our arms, and embrace you with the greatest pleasure as our friends and brethren, and heartily desire we may ever hereafter look on one another as brethren and children of the same parents. As a confirmation of this we give you this belt." Afterward, Teedyuscung accepts a belt of wampum. On 6 August, while conference remains in session, Paxinosa and Abraham (Schabash) the Mohegan chief arrives and they are accompanied by about 50-60 other Indians. Also, after greeting are extended, Teedyuscung requests that the governor build a fort at Wyoming so the would depart from Tioga and relocate there during the following May. The conference ends on the following day and at that time, the governor returns to Philadelphia.

Teedyuscung repairs to Bethlehem and remains there a few days, but his wife and children remain there. Later, on the 15th, the Indians that had departed Easton and paused at Fort Allen, depart from there on the 15th and 16th moving back to Tioga. Others, accompanying Paxinosa, Abraham and Teedyuscung depart the fort on the 17th and return to Tioga. **In Canada, at Montreal**, Governor Vaudreuil in a letter to the French minister: "Previous to my arrival in this colony, the Ayoouois killed two Frenchmen in the Missouri country. I at once hastened to give my orders to the commandants of the posts whither that nation might come, that the first officer to whose post they came was to compel them themselves to bring me the murderers. The commandant of La Baye had occasion to see those Ayoouois. He spoke to them in my name with such firmness that 10 savages of the same nation came to Montreal expressly to deliver the murderers to me. They presented them. to me in the name of their nation with great submission and resignation that I might have their heads broken if such was my intention. They nevertheless earnestly begged me to pardon them and assured me that they themselves would avenge the death of the two Frenchmen and would compensate me for their loss by the blows they would strike against the English." In conjunction, Vaudreuil grants pardons to the murderers. In conjunction, on 23 June, Montcalm in a letter to Bourslamaque described the scene: "There occurred here yesterday, the grand ceremony of pardoning two Iowas who had killed two Frenchmen, two years ago. They smoked the peace calumet; the murderers were brought out, bound. with the emblem of a slave [prisoner] In their hands. singing their death song as if they were to be burned. Saint-Luc and Marin fulfilled the functions of the chevalier de Dreux and Monsieur Desgranges."

July 22 1757 (Friday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie sends a letter to Colonel Adam Stephen to congratulate him on succeeding in getting his contingent to South Carolina. In conjunction, Colonel Stephen had been ordered during the latter part of May to depart for South Carolina to participate in the campaign against the Indians there.

July 23rd 1757 (Saturday)--Colonies - French and Indian War - In New York at Fort William Henry, a contingent composed of slightly more than 350 men commanded by Colonel John Parker (Jersey Blues) embarks aboard barges to intercept the advancing French forces, but the mission quickly encounters bad luck. The vanguard is struck by an ambush on the following morning compelling the troops aboard the first three barges to surrender. Trailing closely behind, but unaware of the fate of the leading barges, several more fall prey to the identical fate. Still, the remaining barges sail forward without knowledge of the presence of the Indians, but soon after they too get struck. Layers of fire originating along the banks forces the English to halt and attempt to retire, but the Indians maintain the rain of fire and simultaneously begin to pursue in their canoes. Of more than twenty barges which initiated the operation only two escape. The Indians catch up with the barges and then after passing them, the Indians block the route. When the barges reach the barriers, the Indians board the barges and reinitiate the barbaric slaughter. The English who survive drowning are either killed or captured, but worse, the Indians stumble upon the supply of rum and indulge heavily, resulting in even more tragic circumstances for the captives. Most of the English prisoners are retained to be used as slaves, but several of the captives are killed by the savages, cooked and served as a meal. In conjunction, the Jersey Blues, however, continue to serve throughout the conflict. During 1759, Elias Dayton enters the service as a lieutenant in the Jersey Blues and later he is promoted to captain. Subsequently, he participates in Pontiac's War and during the American Revolution period, Elias rises to the rank of brigadier general (1783). Elias' son, Jonathan also becomes a brigadier general of New Jersey militia and later he becomes one of the men who frames and signs the U.S. Constitution.

July 24 1757 (Sunday)--In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, Colonel Burd dispatches a 100-man contingent on a reconnaissance mission to search for the French or their Indian allies. The troops return without encountering any enemy forces. **In New York** at French-held Fort Niagara, the commander, Pouchot holds another conference with Indians (Delawares, Iroquois and Shawanese, the latter from the Ohio). These Indians are en route to Montreal with Montizambert de Niverville. On the following day, another group of Indians arrives at the fort from Ohio with M. La Moelle.

July 27 1757 (Wednesday)--In Maryland, at Annapolis, Governor Horatio Sharpe, subsequent to being informed about a major problem with desertions issues a proclamation: "To all and Every of the Officers both Civil & Military in Baltimore County: It having been represented to me by Ensign Fell that there are many Deserters from the Virginia Regiment at this time harboured & concealed by sundry of the Inhabitants of Your County, and Colonel Washington having informed me that he has sent W. Fell to search for and apprehend such Deserters, I hereby desire and require You to assist him to the utmost of Your Power in the Execution of his Orders: & I recommend it to You in an especial Manner to secure or have executed all Deserters that may retire from His Majesty's Regular or the Provincial Forces to Your County for Shelter & Protection." **In New York** at French-held Fort Niagara, an Iroquois war party returns to the fort with a prisoner, Charles Peller, a Bavarian whom was captured in Pennsylvania. Within a couple of additional days, a Delaware raiding party returns with a woman, Marie Catherine Heilerin, whom was captured about two days march from Philadelphia. Another recently arrived captive, Marie Blanche, had given Pouchot a statement that included a description of how her husband had been killed by the Indians and how the people there were pressed for horses and carts. In addition, she had disparaging comments about Sir William Johnson, whom she claimed had no concern for the citizens; rather that he was focused only on "drinking." Also, the

Bavarian, Peller, provides Pouchot with intelligence on the region around Shamokin, Pennsylvania, including information regarding the forts in that region. Marie Catherine Heilerin is adopted by the Senecas and taken to their village. In conjunction, Captain Pouchot departs Fort Niagara during the following October, but he is reassigned there during 1759. He is succeeded during October by Jean Francois de Vassan, a Canadian, who commands until Pouchot returns in about one and one-half years. In Pennsylvania at South Mountain, one man, McKisson is wounded by Indians and they seize his son and carry him away.

August 1 1757 (Monday)–In New York, by about this time, Montcalm's army, composed of about 5,500 regulars and Canadians and about 1,600 Indians had crossed from Ticonderoga and reached the foot of Lake George. Due to a limited number of boats, Montcalm divides his force, with about 600 Indians and about 2,200 troops, under Chevalier De Levis moving overland along the western bank of the lake toward Fort William Henry. Meanwhile, the main body of Indians move by canoes. On the following day, Montcalm, using about 250 boats embarks with the main body. Later, toward the latter part of the night of the 2nd, Montcalm spots several fires arranged as a triangle to signify it was De Levis' encampment. At the point of detecting the camp, Montcalm halts and a war council is held to determine a place to land. Meanwhile, during the night of the 2nd-3rd, two English boats operating on the lake come under attack by Indians. The Indians operating in two canoes, lose one of their Nipissing chiefs during the fight and the English lose one boat captured. The Indians retain two of the English as prisoners and murder the others that had been seized.

August 2 1757 (Tuesday)–In New York, the Indians, attached to Montcalm's force at Fort William Henry, form a line of canoes that stretch across the lake and suddenly, the English are stunned to hear the war cries. Hurriedly, the English at the camp abandon their tents and barracks and head for the fort. Meanwhile, a contingent under De Levis destroys the barracks and camp and scatters the livestock and horses. During the operation, the French intercept a foraging party and the troops are killed.

August 3 1757 (Wednesday)–In New York, Montcalm's forces land less than two miles from Fort William Henry. From the northwest, the army advances in three separate columns. During the operation, one contingent, composed of Canadians and Indians under La Come establishes positions on a road that leads to another British post, Fort Edwards where General Daniel Webb is deployed. A contingent under De Levis deploys south of Fort William Henry. Meanwhile, the main body under Montcalm deploys on the west shore of the lake on the fringes of a forest. In conjunction, Montcalm concentrates on establishing a siege. In conjunction, Israel Putnam, in command of a contingent of rangers, observes the French movements and reports the intelligence to General Webb who at this time is close to Fort William Henry. Nevertheless, General Webb refuses to take Putnam's counsel urging an attack on the landing force and essentially directs Putnam to keep the intelligence secret. General Daniel Webb then chooses to permit the French landing to remain unopposed, while he runs back to Fort Edward, leaving Colonel Monro's 2,200 defenders on their own.

August 4 1757 (Thursday)–The English fleet under Admiral Holbourne transporting an invasion force under Lord Loudoun, which embarked recently from Halifax, continues to move toward Gabarus Bay, Nova Scotia; but complications develop after intelligence is gained from a captured sloop. The English learn that a French fleet, which includes 19 ships of the line and 8 sloops, had arrived at Louisbourg with about 3,000 French regular troops, bolstered by Canadian troops and Indians. The news, for Holbourne and Loudoun is startling and causes a dilemma.

Admiral Holbourne decides that his force can not strike the superior French fleet and Loudoun chooses to suspend the invasion of Louisbourg until the following summer. The invasion is aborted. The fleet returns to Halifax, where some of the troops are debarked, but the majority of Loudoun's force returns to New York where they are dismissed. In conjunction, after word of the fiasco at Louisbourg reaches England, William Pitt, the Secretary of State is perplexed by the non-actions. He reacts strongly and states: "...and we naturally have too lofty ideas of our naval strength to suppose that seventeen of our ships are not a match for any nineteen others." Nevertheless, Admiral Holbourne does return to the vicinity of Louisbourg during the following September. Another Englishman, Horace Walpole, upon receiving the news about Loudoun at Louisbourg writes: "Shortly after came letters from the Earl of Loudoun, stating that he found the French twenty-one thousand strong, and that, not having so many, he could not attack Louisbourg, but should return to Halifax. Admiral Holbourne, one of the sternest condemners of (Admiral) Byng, wrote at the same time that he, having but seventeen ships and the French nineteen, dared not attack them. Here was another summer lost! Pitt expressed himself with great vehemence against the earl; and we naturally have too lofty ideas of our naval strength to suppose that seventeen of our ships are not a match for any nineteen others."

August 4th-August 15th 1757--In New York, Fort William Henry, built at Lake George by the English during 1755, has withstood French attempts to reduce it, but this day 4 August, it is struck by a huge French and Indian force. The garrison of about 2,000 troops under Colonel Monro had only recently lost more than 300 troops when they were ambushed by the Indians, but still the English attempt to forestall disaster. Despite being surrounded and under heavy fire, the English tighten their defenses within the walls and return effective fire. The French launch several assaults but each is repulsed. Later in the day, in an apparent attempt to coerce the English and Colonists to surrender, the French commander, Montcalm suggests they spare themselves from both the imminent use of French artillery and from what Montcalm describes as his inability to control the Indians. The English, well aware of the warfare of the Indians and of their cannibalistic way of dealing with prisoners, still reject the ultimatum and defy the threats. In addition, Colonel Munro anticipates that General Webb at Fort Edward will arrive to reinforce him.

The siege continues. The Indians continue firing from their lofty positions in trees and the French maintain a steady barrage of fire. By the morning of August 7th, the Fort has sustained severe damage, but even the gargantuan thud of the artillery has not weakened the resolve of the defenders. During the afternoon, the English spot the emergence of a flag of truce within the French lines. A slight pause in the battle occurs as a Frenchman bearing a message from Montcalm approaches. The message also includes a letter, written by General Daniel Webb at his Headquarters at Fort Edward, a short distance, about fifteen miles from the site of the siege. The letter, which had been intercepted by the French, informs the defenders that no reinforcements will arrive and that the Fort should negotiate for terms of surrender. The force under General Webb numbers about 4,000 troops, but he refuses to send help to the beleaguered garrison..

The English commander, Colonel Monro, despite Webb's refusal to send aid, still defiantly rejects any idea of surrender, but conditions within the fort are worsening. Many of the fort's guns have burst from incessant firing. Nonetheless, the French intend to reduce the fort. While the English continue the Herculean defense, the French nudge closer to the walls of the Fort and by the 9th, it becomes obvious that there is no further point of resisting. At 0700, the English

hoist the white flag and request terms.

At noon on the 9th, as agreed upon by Montcalm and Colonel Monro, the French assume responsibility for the Fort as the English, numbering just less than 500, march out heading to a nearby encampment east of the Fort where more than 1,700 other Englishmen hold positions. The English are to remain there under the protection of the French until the following day. In the meantime, the Indians pillage the Fort and by the latter part of the day, despite the guarantees of Montcalm, the Indians violate the agreement and pass through the French guards where they massacre the sick and wounded that lay helpless in the medical tents.

Also, Montcalm had called the Indians to a council to have them agree to the surrender terms, but the Indians care little about civilized terms. The English are not to bear arms against the French for a period of eighteen months. Montcalm also inserts a term that demands the release of all French prisoners seized on land since the opening of hostilities and they are to be delivered to Fort Carillon (Ticonderoga) within three months. Montcalm also keeps a British officer as hostage to ensure the safe return of the French escort he is to provide to guide the English back toward Fort Edward. In addition, the wounded and sick English troops at Fort William Henry are to remain with the French under Montcalm's protection until they recuperate. One other item is that Montcalm provides the English column with one 6-pounder to provide some defense as they march to Fort Edward.

One survivor of the horror scene, Israel Putnam (later General Putnam during the War for Independence) describes what he observed: "...The fires were still burning. The smoke and stench offensive and suffocating. Innumerable fragments, human skulls, and bones, and carcasses, half consumed, were still frying and broiling in the decaying fires..." Continuing, Putnam describes the scene of the women: "...More than 100 women, butchered and shockingly mangled, lay upon the ground still weltering in their gore..." On the following morning, the English move out under French protection against the Indians. Within a short while, the Indians, ignoring the surrender agreement and paying no heed to the French, initiate another slaughter. They pounce upon the English and unleash another brutal massacre, bludgeoning women and children as well as the troops.

The French attempt to intervene, but to no avail. The tomahawks and knives prevail as the savages from numerous tribes join in the slaughter which again includes the malicious scalping of unarmed troops and civilians and the dastardly dismembering of even the women and children. The blood of the English gushes forth and leaves an indelible reminder in the hearts and souls of the survivors.

The sickening tales of the horrific incident only emboldens the English and galvanizes their thoughts of vengeance. Even the desperate appearance of Montcalm fails to halt the savage brutality. The English, unable to properly defend themselves push forward, but still the Indians pursue inflicting more death and destruction. Eventually, a force of about 500 English troops advance from Fort Edward to provide protection for the survivors for the final four miles of the nightmarish trek. Captain Bailey and some others, including Israel Putnam, escape torture or death. With regard to Jacob, he breaks away when the Indians attack the column on the 10th, while under French protection. He outdistances his pursuers and makes it to Fort Edward. One of the men caught in the menacing attack, Captain Jacob Bailey (Bayley) breaks away and runs for his life with Indians in pursuit; however, the Indians are unable to keep up with Bailey. He

outdistances them and makes it to Fort Edward.

In the meantime, the French demolish Fort William Henry. The sturdy Fort is not completely destroyed until the 13th. Montcalm, having failed to protect the English as promised, rushes a message to the English at Fort Edward (Fort Lydius) on the 14th, explaining the debacle and informing them that he is in the process of getting any English, still alive and held by the Indians, released. He succeeds in saving about 400 additional captives and after buying their freedom, they are finally reunited on the 15th with an English escort that meets them and their French protectors at a midway point between Fort William Henry and Fort Edward. In conjunction, the French at the time of surrender of the Fort in recognition of the gallant defense, permitted the English to retain one piece of Artillery. When the final contingent of captives reaches the English forces that advanced to guide them back to Fort Edward, they still retained possession of the cannon.

The devastating defeat and massacre at Fort William Henry causes the colonies great apprehension, but the French do not penetrate further, rather, Montcalm returns to Canada. However, prior to departing, the French confiscate the supplies, thought to have been sufficient to provide for a force of five thousand men for about six months. Nonetheless, Massachusetts gathers about 20,000 Militia troops to meet the threat as the French now control Lake Champlain, Lake George and they have a direct line of communication between Canada and the mouth of the Mississippi region. In addition, the Indians that had participated in the massacres would take something home with them. Some of the Indians come down with smallpox and they carry the pernicious disease back to their tribes' villages. Consequently, there would be few Indians from the region aligned with the French following the winter of 1757-1758.

Meanwhile Lord Loudoun remains in New York while the French continue to score successes against the English. Subsequent to the fall of Oswego and of Fort William Henry, Loudoun is focusing on building a fort on Long Island, which he believes is important to protecting the colonies. The French too, despite their success face problems. Many men had deserted their fields to accompany Montcalm and in their absence, frequent rainstorms had destroyed the crops and no supplies are en route from France. In some places, there are insufficient seeds to properly reseed, which causes shortages. Montcalm is acutely aware of the obstacles facing Canada and he is convinced that due to the numerically superior British forces (including provincials) will eventually cause setbacks for the French and the eventual fall of Canada.

Also, while General Daniel Webb had not dispatched any of his troops to assist Colonel Munro, he had dispatched messages to Governor Pownall in Massachusetts, exclaiming that if reinforcements from Massachusetts are not sent, all might be lost. Nevertheless, the 2nd request arrives on 7 August, two days prior to the fall of the fort. Consequently, the Massachusetts' force could not have made it to Fort William Henry in time.

August 5 1757 (Friday)–In New York, William Johnson arrives at Fort Edward with a contingent of militia and Indians. Johnson after being informed of the arrival of the French from Ticonderoga assembled the force and sped to join General Daniel Webb. Johnson requests permission to move to Fort William Henry to reinforce Colonel Munro and Webb agrees, but afterward, he reverses himself and prohibits Johnson from moving to support the beleaguered garrison. Meanwhile, Munro remains confident that the 4,000 troops under Webb will arrive to lift the siege. Webb, however, has a propensity to avoid battle and exhibits no signs of

generalship, not genuine concern for the besieged garrison. The only communication from Webb to Munro is a letter telling him that no help is en route and that he should initiate talks to surrender. The message arrives, but by a circuitous route. The French intercept the messenger and they deliver the news on 9 August that Webb is not sending any help.

August 10 1757 (Wednesday)–In New York, some of the English prisoners, captured at the fall of Fort William Henry escape. One officer, Captain Jacob Bailey (Bayley) who had raised a separate company and was among the captured, breaks away when the column is attacked by Indians. Bailey is chased but he outruns the pursuers and makes it to Fort Edward. Afterward, Bailey remains in the militia and participates under General Amherst in the expedition against Montreal as a lieutenant colonel in Colonel John Goff's regiment until he succeeds Goff to become colonel of the regiment. Subsequently, during 1776, Bailey becomes a brigadier general of militia. In conjunction, Colonel Goff also has another profession. He is a minister. Another officer, Major Joseph Frye is seized by an Indian and he is about to be murdered; however, he takes the Indian out and escapes into the woods and later arrives at Fort Edward. The harrowing experience of Frye was not the first. Earlier in Maine, a band of Indians had thought they had him trapped on a cliff, but before they could capture him, Frye jumped off the cliff and escaped. The rock at Raymond's Point, from which he jumped, became known as Frye's Leap; however, it is possible that one version of this incident, which claims he landed on the frozen ice and escaped across Sebago Lake (Frye's Island) is only a legend. Nonetheless, Frye returns to active service in command of a regiment. During 1759, James Brickett served in Frye's regiment. Subsequently, during the American Revolution, Brickett again serves in Frye's regiment until he is promoted to brigadier general during June 1776 and receives his own command. Subsequent to the close of hostilities, Major Frye acquires land in Maine; however, during June 1775, after the clash at Lexington and Concord, he repairs to Cambridge, Massachusetts and receives an appointment as major general of Massachusetts militia. Afterward, he is appointed as brigadier general in the Continental Army.

August 13 1757 (Saturday)–In Virginia, Governor Dinwiddie write to Colonel George Washington to inform him that a roving band of Indians had recently "murdered seven of our poor people and taken eleven captives in Augusta County." In another letter to Washington on this same day, the governor refers to the recent hangings of deserters from the army on the frontier, saying: "I approve of your hanging the two deserters and the other poor fellows, I leave their punishment to you."

August 15 1757 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, during an Indian raid at Conococheague, William Manson and his son are killed near a settler's fort (Cross').

August 17-18 1757–In Pennsylvania, slightly below the gap (Swatara) Indians raid the area and one boy, the son of Thomas McGuire becomes a target, but he escapes; however, soon after, the Indians spot another boy, the son of Leonard Miller, while he is working in the field. He is seized and carried away. At about the same time, Indians attack and kill several other settlers in the area. The attacks prompt the Barnetts and other neighbors to construct a blockhouse (Barnett's Fort) in the vicinity of Colonel Green's Mills. During a later raid, William Barnett (Barnet), the son of Mr. Barnett is seized and dragged into captivity, but he survives and later regains his freedom. According to an article in the Pennsylvania Gazette, William Barnett and Joseph Barnett are wounded on the 18th and that on the 17th, the Indians killed Mr. Beatty at Paxton. In addition, on the 18th, a son of James Mackay was also seized and carried away, along with Elizabeth Dickey and her child. On that same day, the 18th, Mrs. Samuel Young and her child were captured. The paper also reports that a total of 94 settlers (men, women and children)

abandoned their homes.

August 19 1757 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians raid a church and seize fourteen people that belong to Mr. Cinky's congregation. In other activity, Indians kill one man in the vicinity of Harris' Ferry.

August 27 1757 (Saturday)–In Virginia, Colonel George Washington informs Governor Dinwiddie in a letter that Captain Thomas Waggener, the commander on the South Branch of the Potomac (Hampshire County) had reported that an Indian raid had killed several settlers and that the Indians seized some others and carried them away. Waggener also reports that his force had made no contact with the raiders.

August 28 1757 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, a woman's voice is heard by the sentries at about 1700. She is on the opposite bank of the Susquehanna and screaming for help. Colonel Burd dispatches a 50-man contingent and two officers across the river in case it is a French or Indian ruse. Captain Jamison and Ensign McKee command the operation. One of the four batteaux lands its detachment, while the other three remain offshore and prepared to bolt ashore if necessary. Burd also sends an additional contingent under Ensign Broadhead in the event a covering force is required to protect the force if they need to retreat. Nevertheless, the woman is an escapee, which relieves the tension. She is brought back to the fort, where it is determined that she is an elderly woman (Nelly Young) who had been seized by a party of 6 Indians and 1 Frenchman, named Peter. Nelly made her escape 8 days ago.

September 8 1757 (Thursday) In Pennsylvania, the Indians continue to terrorize the settlers on the frontier. On this day, they launch a raid in Donegal Township, located slightly south of Derry. Two children are seized and taken to Canada. At about this same time, Indians also attack a man, named Danner and his son Christian Danner in the Conewago hills. Mr. Danner is cut down and scalped; however, Christian is seized and dragged away and carried to Canada where he remains until after the close of hostilities, when he finally succeeds in making his escape. .

September 14 1757 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, a group of Indians arrives at the post to inquire of Colonel Burd if the English were at peace with the Delawares. Burd confirms that the English are at peace with them. Afterward, the Indians request that Burd write a letter by them to the French commander at Fort Duquesne because they are heading back to the Ohio. Without hesitation, as noted in his journal, Colonel Burd responds saying, "Altho' the English were at peace with the Delawares they were not with the French; &, therefore, I would neither write nor speak to the commander of Fort Du Quesne, otherwise than from the muzzle of my Guns; but a conversation of this kind I shall always be ready to carry on." Burd then adds: "I told the warriors he might give that officer this for (an) answer from me."

September 25 1757 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, a 50-man contingent, led by Captain Patterson and Lt. Humphreys departs from the post to reconnoiter towards the Ohio River to search for the presence of the French. In other activity, a contingent led by Captain Hambright moves to the island on a reconnaissance mission. The troops soon discover that the Indians, thought to be friendly, steal some of their horses including those of Captain Lloyd, Captain Trump and Captain Young.

October 1 1757 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians launch a raid on Swatara. They kill one man and three others are reported missing. In addition, the Indians set at least one house on fire.

In Virginia, during an Indian raid, a Dutch girl, Isabel Stockton is seized at Winchester and carried to French-held Fort Niagara, New York.

October 3 1757 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, a band of Indians prepares to attack a detachment from Fort Augusta; however, they apparently decide the contingent is too strong and abort the

attack; however, before leaving, they cross the Susquehanna withing shouting distance of the post and give out some yells, as noted in Colonel Burd's journal with the entry that they "hallowed at the fort and went off."

October 17 1757 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians attack a small party near a settler's fort (Hunter's). Two of the four men, Alexander Watt and John McKennet are murdered, then scalped. Afterward, both men are decapitated. The remaining two are scalped but they survive. A detachment under Captain Work (Augusta regiment) arrives from Fort Halifax and pursues the Indians. The contingent intercepts them at Peters Mountain. The Indians fire first, but the detachment returns ire and the Indians flee, leaving five horses behind.

October 21 1757 (Friday)–In Louisiana, at New Orleans, Governor Kerlerec again writes to his government in France. He states that of his fifteen dispatches, written in cypher, none have been answered. He also repeats his warnings that Louisiana is defenseless and could be lost if attacked. In addition, he informs the government of the impact on shipping, stating: "The English have taken very efficacious means to capture all ships bound to Louisiana. They have established a permanent cruise off Cape St. Antonio de Cuba, and their privateers, spreading desolation among our coasters, pounce upon them at the very mouth of the Mississippi. In a word, we are lacking in everything, and the discontent of our Indians is a subject of serious fears. So far, I have quieted them, but it has been at considerable expense. Had it not been for the distribution among them of some merchandise, procured from small vessels which had eluded the vigilance of our enemies, some revolution fatal to us would have sprung up among the Indians."

November 11 1757 (Friday) In New York at German Flats by the Mohawk, some Oneida Indians arrive at Fort Herkimer to inform Captain Townsend (22nd Regiment) that a large French and Indian force is passing through their territory en route to the settlement. Nonetheless, due to so many frequent erroneous reports, the warning does not cause too much of an alarm with Sir William Johnson, who at this time is ill. The report, however, is accurate and the Indians strike on the following day.

November 12 1757 (Saturday)- In New York, the settlers at German Flats along the Mohawk River opposite Herkimer Church Fort (formerly Fort Herkimer) in the Mohawk Valley come under attack by a large force under a French officer, named Belestre. The contingent of about 300, is composed of French troops, Canadians and their Indian allies. The attack unfolds during the morning, but the settlers receive no assistance from the fort, which is manned by only about 200 troops. Consequently, casualties are high and gruesome. The Indians kill and scalp about forty-fifty people and they drag about 150 away as prisoners. There are survivors, but the Frenchmen and their allies also destroy the settlers' livestock and torch the homes, about sixty in number, along with the respective barns. In conjunction, Sir William Johnson, once informed of the attack, sends an interpreter to speak with the Oneida and Tuscarora Indians at German Flats to find out why they knew of the imminence of the French attack, but failed to warn the settlers. One of the Oneida chiefs informs the interpreter that the people in the settlement had been forewarned, and they were told to send word to Warraghiyagey (Sir William Johnson), but they paid no heed and in fact replied by saying that they "did not fear the enemy and that they sent a warning, accompanied by a belt of wampum, on the day preceding the attack, of which no more notice was taken." The interpreter after talking with some Germans there confirms that the Indians had indeed warned of the attack.

November 13 1757 (Sunday)–In New York, Lord Loudoun dispatches troops, including two regiments at Schenectady and other posts on the Mohawk to German Flats; however, by the time

they arrive, the French and Indians that raided there on the previous day had retired. . He also sends a contingent of the Highlanders (42nd Regiment) to protect Schenectady during the absence of the regiments that moved to German Flats. Upon the arrival of the reinforcements, a small number of Oneidas had been in the area above Herkimer. They burn a mill and some huts. Lord Augustus Howe, in command sends out a patrol, but no enemy contact is made.

1758-In Virginia, Fort Farquier is established near the mouth of Looney Creek. Also, Ingle's Cabin is established at Ingle's Ferry (Pulaski County). Jacob Strickler's Fort (known also as Fort Egypt is established in Page County. **Also**, settlers establish Hinkle's Fort near Riverton in an effort to thwart future Indian raids. Also, Painter's Fort is established near Woodstock.

Afterward, this same year, Indians raid the region near Mill Creek. The settlers try to escape harm by racing to reach the fort; however it too comes under assault. The Indians refuse to accept the surrender of the fort. George Painter attempts to escape to no avail. His corpse is thrown back into the fort before it is set afire. Meanwhile, four infants are plucked from their mothers' arms. Afterward, the infants are tied to trees from which they hang just before they are shot. The Indians also drag 48 prisoners away. Painter's wife and most of his family are among the casualties. Two other children of Painter conceal themselves and escape harm; however, his wife, one son and five daughters become captive. One other person, the son of Jacob Meyers, like Painter's two sons escapes capture. Reinforcements from Keller's Fort travel 15 miles and arrive on the following day, but by then the Indians have gone. Mrs. Painter arrives back in Virginia about 2-3 years later with two daughters and one son, Adam. Two of Painter's daughters are held for about 18 years and his other two daughters never return.

January 11 1758 (Wednesday)–In New York. Lord Loudoun authorizes Captain Robert Rogers to raise five additional companies of rangers and one Indian company. Loudoun's order stipulates "that the company of Indians to be dressed in all respects in the true Indian fashion, and they are all to be subject to the rules and articles of war." In addition, Rogers is directed to have the five ranger companies at Fort Edward by 15 March of this year. Captain Rogers, with support of some of his friends accomplishes his recruitment and by 4 March, the five ranger companies are in service. Four of the companies are sent to Louisbourg to join with the forces of General Jeffrey Amherst. The fifth company joins with Captain Rogers' corps. In conjunction with the formation of the five new ranger companies, Captain Rogers is promoted to the rank of major in command of the Ranger Corps.

January 18 1758 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania, during a meeting with Governor Denny and the council in Philadelphia, Teedyuscung, along with his son John Jacob, his counselor Tapescawen and other Indians are called into the room. Teedyuscung, the King addresses the board stating: "I entreat you to enable me to make the fire enkindled at Easton blaze up high, that it may be the better seen by all the Indians, and that they may be brought to join in this good work, which will be attended with expense; and this, as I have it not myself, must be provided by you." Afterward, the governor writes a letter to the Indian Commissioners, saying:

"Teedyuscung, in coming on this visit, has incurred expenses for himself and company, with their horses, which you will please defray." Teedyuscung and the other Indians depart with joy.

March 10-15 1758–In New York, Major Robert Rogers initiates another mission to Carillon (Ticonderoga) with a force of 180 men including officers and several volunteers, much less than the original number of 400 that was proposed for the operation. Later on the 12th, the force encamps at Sabbath Day Point. On the following morning (13th), it is decided to proceed by land, using snow shoes. By about noon, some Indians are detected. and the rangers immediately form for battle. As the Indians begin to encroach, Rogers fires a shot to signal the attack and

soon after about 40 Indians are slain. Initially, Rogers believes that the foe had been thrashed; however, the rangers had only encountered the vanguard, not the main body of about 600 including Canadians and Indians who are close behind. Rogers immediately orders the rangers to pull back to where they had formed for battle and in the process they sustain 50 casualties. The remainder of the force become galvanized and despite the odds of about 7-to-one, the rangers hold and force the enemy to again retreat.

The rangers, however, are too few in number to pursue, giving the Canadian-Indian force time to regroup and mount another attack. The thrust strikes the front line of the rangers and simultaneously, the enemy hits both wings. The rangers are positioned with a mountain to their rear, which prevents an attack there and they raise tenacious resistance, crushing the attacks against their wings, forcing the attackers on the flanks to hurriedly rejoin the main body. The rangers inflict high casualties and once again shred the discipline of the attackers. They again retire, but with the great advantage, the Canadians regroup yet again and with their Indian allies, the rangers receive yet another attack. At the same time, the rangers observe a force of about 200 Indians ascending the mountain to reach positions above and to the rear of the Rangers. Rogers dispatches 18 men under Lt. Philips to gain possession of the high ground before the Indians can complete their ascent. The quick-thinking pays some temporary dividends once Philips hold the crest to protect Rogers' right. Meanwhile, Rogers sends another detachment of 15 men under Lt. Crafton to hold the left to protect it.

Philips' detachment forces those Indians closing upon him to withdraw. Meanwhile, Crafton is able for a while to hold steadfastly, while the battle rages incessantly for about one and one-half hour at close-quarters. At the front line, the two antagonists are within arm's reach and no more distant than about 20-yards from each other. The menacing fire cost the rangers 8 officers and one man. Finally, the rangers are forced to break ranks and attempt to escape. Rogers with about 20 rangers following ascends the hill, with the Indians close behind. At the same time, Philips' diminutive detachment is encircled by several hundred Indians. Philips is able to momentarily speak with Rogers and states that "if the enemy would give good quarters he thought it best to surrender, otherwise he would fight while he had one man left to fire a gun." Afterward, Major Rogers and the survivors continue to try to escape death or capture. Nonetheless, some who falter or become too wounded to keep up are captured. Nonetheless, after Philips accepts terms for surrender, the Indians ignore it and they give no quarter. The others make it back to their sleds. A dispatched is sent to Fort Edward with an urgent request to send reinforcements and transportation for the wounded. Meanwhile, Rogers remains in place during another frigid night. On the following morning, Rogers and the invalids move up the lake about six miles to reach Hoop Island about six miles above Fort William Henry. Captain John Stark intercepts the rangers there with the support from Fort Edward, sent by Lt. Colonel (later brigadier general) William Haviland.

On the following day (15th), the rangers move out and arrive back at the fort during the evening. Major Rogers after his arrival notes that the ranger force had killed 160 of the enemy, despite their small number of able bodied troops and he remarks: "I will not pretend to say, what would have been the result of this unfortunate expedition, had our numbers been 400 strong, as was contemplated; but it is due to those brave officers and men who accompanied me, most of whom are no\|v no more, to declare that every man in his respective station, behaved with uncommon

resolution and coolness, nor do I recollect an instance during the action, in which the prudence or good conduct of one of them could be questioned.” In addition to the enemy killed, many more had been wounded among the force that included 700 men of whom 600 were Indians. The ranger losses amounted to 126 (killed or wounded). The original number of the force totaled 180. The responsibility for the defeat is due in great part because the fort commander had sent out such a small number for the mission; rather than the 400 men that were to be dispatched. In conjunction, some sources had listed Captain Philips as being killed; however, he survives. After Philips and his men had been captured, the Indians tied them to trees, while deciding whether to shoot them or have them “torn to pieces.” Somehow, Philips was able to loosen one of his bands and he was able to reach a pocket knife in his pocket, then with his teeth, he opened the knife and cut himself loose and escaped.

March 19 1758 (Sunday)–In Virginia, a band of Indians raids the Upper Tract settlement (West Virginia). Those killed include: Michael Moser (shot while attending his corn crop). Other fatal casualties in the area this day include Nicholas Frank and John Conrad. The wounded include: George Moser and Adam Harper. In addition, the Indians seize John Cunningham and two other people.

Spring 1758–In Virginia, Ensign Daniel Morgan, accompanied by two other riders, while en rout to deliver a message to Winchester, is ambushed at a spot close to Hanging Rock. The two escorts are immediately killed; however, Morgan escapes death. Nevertheless, he is severely wounded. A ball penetrates the back of his neck and exits through his left cheek. Amazingly, Morgan remains in the saddle. In the meantime, the Indians have already removed the scalps of the two dead troops and they expect to also finish off Morgan. Morgan’s horse had been traumatized and momentarily, the horse is unready to fly. Morgan, disregarding the pain and the dangerous wound coaxes his horse and finally, Morgan is galloping away to the dismay of the Indians. The Indians pursue, but although he weighs about 200 pounds, the Indians fail to catch him. One does get close enough to toss his tomahawk, but to no avail. Morgan’s good fortune continues. He continues to lose blood, but his horse knows the route back to the fort. Although delirious, he arrives safely and later recuperates.

April 3 1758 (Monday)–In Virginia, Colonel James Burd writes to Lt. Governor Denny of New York to inform him that a number of southern Indians have arrived at Winchester to participate in the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne and he informs Denny that he still expects the arrival of Cherokee and Mohawks.

April 7 1758 (Friday)–In New York, Lt. Governor Denny writes to General Abercrombie to inform him that the commanding officer at Winchester has been informed about a peace proposal offered by the Delaware Indians and Denny also inquires about instruction for initiating negotiations a treaty with the Susquehanna Indians.

April 13 1758 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians raid York County (later Adams County). They seize the Bard family who live close to Virginia Mills. Thomas Potter, who is visiting the family is also seized; however, he is murdered. Thomas is the brother of James Potter (brigadier general during the American Revolution. In conjunction, two neighbors arrive to help, but they are also seized. Also James Potter had joined the Cumberland County militia in 1755 and at that time he was appointed to the rank of lieutenant. James serves under Lt. Colonel John Armstrong in the 2nd Battalion (Provincial troops). Also, James’ father, James’ father serves during the conflict with the rank of captain. James is later advanced to the rank of lieutenant colonel.

April 28 1758 (Friday)–In New York, Sir William Johnson at Fort Johnson, in a letter, dated this day, to General Abercrombie urges the general not to initiate separate negotiations with

Tediuscung. Johnson informs Abercrombie that the Ohio Indians are required to return to Pennsylvania to “share the benefits of a treaty, and that care be exercised in associating Cherokees and Delawares in any war movement, commending policy of officers at Fort Loudoun.”

April 28 1758 (Friday)–In West Virginia, Fort Seybert (known also Jacob Seybert’s Fort and Jacob Peterson’s Fort) is attacked by a band of about 40 Indians under Chief Killbuck. About Seventeen men are killed and about 11 others are carried off as prisoners. The Indians separate the prisoners in two rows and one row is for those to be murdered and the other for those to be taken as prisoners. Upon the signal, those to be killed are struck by the tomahawk and scalped, then left to die. The fort is afterward destroyed; however, the Virginia assembly orders that it be rebuilt. Captain Seybert, Roger Dyer and the boy, named Wallace are among the killed. Wallace’s scalp, distinguishable due to its blonde color is identified by Mrs. Hawes, who also remarks that “it is the brunette captives that Indians have preferred to spare.” In conjunction, there is no official report on this incident and through the years some people in Pendleton came to doubt the story and even the existence of the fort; however, captives who later returned from captivity verify that the attack did occur. A woman, named Hannah Hinkle, thought to have been confined to her bed, perishes in the fort when it is set on fire. Another woman, though also to be named Hannah, while carrying her baby who is crying, is accosted by one of the Indians who takes her baby. At the time, the Indians are ascending South Fork Mountain. The Indian after seizing the baby sticks the baby’s “neck into the fork of a dogwood.” Also, one man, named Robinson, is the only one to escape death or capture. After the Indians depart, he comes out of hiding and flees over the Shenandoah Mountain. In conjunction, only one Indian had been wounded during the attack. He dies while the Indians are crossing South Fork Mountain. Also, of the captives, those known are Nicholas Seybert, James Dyer, a “Heavener girl, along with Mrs. Hawes and Mrs. Peterson.

April 29 1758 (Saturday)–In New York, Major Rogers departs Fort Edward with a 18- man contingent of rangers and takes a circuitous route. They encamp at School Creek, then on the following day, they march all day before establishing camp at South Bay. Later on the 3rd of May, the detachment advances to a point near Carillon (Ticonderoga). On the following day, the detachment halts at a place several miles from the fort at Crown Point, essentially up to this point an uneventful mission, but on the following day, they do encounter some French. One Frenchman is killed and three others are seized. The rangers initiate the return march on the 6th and they arrive back at Fort Edward with their prisoners on 9 May. Back at Fort Edward, the prisoners are interrogated and of the three, one holds the most information. The English learn that he had been in Canada for 8 years and posted at various places including Crown Point, Montreal and Quebec. He states that at Ticonderoga, 200 troops under Mons. Le Janong and at Ticonderoga, the garrison is primarily held by 400 of the Queen’s Regiment, 150 French Marines and 200 Canadians, along with about 300 Indians.

May 16 1758 (Tuesday)–In Canada, information from various reports details that the although there has been no difficulty with the Miami Indians, the Indians of St. Joseph and the Outias [Ouiatanon], the Folles Avoins have become hostile. They reportedly had killed 11 Canadians at Le Baye and they plundered the storehouse at the post; however, the commandant escaped harm. In other activity, the same reports note that in Louisiana, the commandant has reported that it has been two years since a ship from France had arrived there. In conjunction, the Memoir of Francois Pouchot refers to the Le Baye incident: “We learned about this time [early in May], by a courier from Niagara, that the Indians called Folles-Avoines, had killed twenty-two French,

and pillaged the magazine of the post at La Baye. They will soon make reparation for what they have done.”

June 2 1758 (Friday)–In Canada, the English fleet and expeditionary force under General Amherst arrives in Gabarus Bay, less than two miles from Louisbourg. Admiral Boscawen’s fleet includes about 22-23 ships of the line and about 15-18 frigates, along with more than 120 smaller vessels including transports carrying about 12,000 troops. Brigadier General James Wolfe commands a brigade and one of the young men under his command is Richard Montgomery, who later becomes a brigadier general during the American Revolution and leads an expedition against Quebec during 1775. Another, Isaac Barre, later while a member of Parliament becomes a supporter of the American cause. At Louisbourg, a fortress considered nearly invincible following about 25 years of toil and 35 million francs to fortify it from an attack, the garrison is composed of slightly more than 3,000 regulars, about 300 militia and about 750 Canadians and Indians, commanded by Chevalier Drucourt, who is strongly supported by his wife. The French naval force at Louisbourg includes 5 ships of the line and 7 frigates with a combined force of 544 guns and several thousand men, including French Marines. The fortifications at Louisbourg are linked for a distance of about 2 miles and they contain 4 bastions, along with a citadel and a series of closely spaced batteries giving the French a total of about 221 cannon as well as 18 mortars. The fortress’ natural obstacles are menacing and they include constant unruly currents that splash over irregular rocks and crash against sheer cliffs along a rugged shoreline that is permeated with concealed batteries. Above all of the pre-mentioned defenses, the harbor at Louisbourg is heavily defended by 5 batteries, three of which are on the outer part, with two others within the inner harbor with an extremely amount of fire power to deter and adversarial naval force. Nonetheless, despite the intelligence gathered by the English, the mission to seize Louisbourg remains on schedule. Wolfe initially ponders whether or not to continue; however, Admiral Boscawen, described by Pitt as one who “never turned his face from danger,” convinces Wolfe to stay the course. Nonetheless, the seas remain unruly, which prevents any troops from landing until 8 June.

June 8 1758 (Thursday)–In New York, Lord (Augustus) Howe arrives at Fort Edward with about one-half of the army on this day. Soon after his arrival, Lord Howe directed Major Rogers to lead a reconnaissance mission to discover a strategic landing place from which to move against Carillon (Ticonderoga) and to inspect the route from the landing place to the French fort, as well as reconnoitering Lake Champlain for several miles beyond the fort. In addition, Rogers’ contingent is to assess the enemy strength. In conjunction with his orders, Rogers moves out of the fort on 12 June with a 50-man contingent and later that same day, the rangers makes camp at the site where Fort William Henry had stood. On the following day, Rogers’ contingent embarks in 5 whale boats and moves down the lake to the First Narrows and from there to the western end of the lake.

The rangers approach Ticonderoga to gain intelligence and a small party including Rogers discover a huge encampment. In addition, the French have also assembled many Indians. Rogers’ team makes a plan of the fort and the encampment, but while returning to the main body, the French strike the latter, placing themselves between Rogers and his contingent. The Mohican Indians with Captain Jacobs flee and as they run, Jacobs calls to the other to follow; however, Rogers’ troops stand and fight, despite being surrounded. On three sides, leaving only their rear as an escape hatch. After firing several volleys, the rangers are able to retire to the river at their backs, but eight rangers are killed during the exchange. After breaking away, Rogers joins with them at the whale boats where they depart (transporting all of their dead) heading back

to their lines. Subsequently, on the 20th, the Rangers encounter Lord Howe at Half Way Brook, who is leading an army of about 3,000 troops. Rogers turns over his intelligence including the details of the landing place and the fort at Carillon (Ticonderoga). Afterward, Rogers returns to Fort Edward; however on the day following his return, under orders of Major General Abercrombie, he departs again, but with the entire ranger force of 600 men to join Lord Augustus Howe.

June 28 1758 (Thursday)-In New York, during the campaign to retake Ticonderoga, Lord Augustus Howe encamps along Lake George where Fort William Henry had stood until reduced by the French during August, 1757. Howe orders the rangers under Major Robert Rogers to redeploy about 400 yards to the west. On the following day, pursuant to orders from Howe, Major Rogers sends out several detachments to reconnoiter and to afterward converge to seize control of the summit of a mountain located about one mile north of where Howe's army is encamped. Afterward, the rangers are directed to move to a river that flows into the falls between the landing zone and a sawmill where they are to seize a hold on some high ground on the French side. Shortly thereafter, Rogers moves directly to the crest of the hill and deployed rangers who find themselves less than one-half mile from where about 1,500 men under General Montcalm are posted. By about 1200, provincial troops under Colonels Lyman and Fitch arrive just to the rear of Rogers' position. During a short conference, Rogers informs Lyman and Fitch of the French positions; however, they reply that they would accompany the rangers. At about the same time, unexpectedly, the French strike the rear elements of Lyman's force and Lyman instantly heads for the front of his lines, requesting that Rogers cover his left flank as he was leaving. Rogers directs Captain Burbank to hold in place with 150 rangers to maintain a vigil on the French at the saw-mills, then departs with the remaining regiment to bolster Lyman's left flank. Lyman's right flank is protected by the river. Meanwhile, a contingent of Lord Howe's force crashes through and the French get themselves "hemmed in on all sides." In the meantime, another detachment, composed of 2 lieutenants and 17 troops, is sent down the lake to reconnoiter; however, the party which departs in whale boats is intercepted by a force of several hundred Indians and all are captured.

July 5-8 1758--In New York, the attack against French-held Ticonderoga--The English (about 15,000 strong) under General Abercrombie and Lord George Augustus Howe, transported by whale boats and bateaux arrive at a point known as Howe's Cove along the northern tip of Lake George from Fort William Henry. General Abercrombie's force land at the identical place chosen by Montcalm, during August of the previous year when he moved against Fort William Henry with a force about half the size of Abercrombie's army. While making final preparations for the attack against Ticonderoga which is scheduled for the following day. Captain John Stark shares dinner with Lord Howe in the latter's tent. While seated on Howe's improvised camp-bed (bear skins), the two men discuss the battle plan and Howe directs Stark to lead his rangers to get possession of a bridge located between the lake and the plains of Ticonderoga.

During the pre-dawn hours of the 5th, each of the units are in place on the beach and prepared to board the craft. The weather is fair and as the sun emerges from its slumber, the scene at the lake seems choreographed with the sun peeping over the mountain tops, unveiling a seamless blue sky over still waters and a motionless forest of bright green leaves and glistening grass as the force burst into motion which stirs the water as about 1,000 boats (canoes, whale boats and bateaux) slide into the lake awaiting the army to board.

Rogers' Rangers and a contingent of Gage's light infantry comprise the vanguard, followed by Colonel John Bradstreet's New Englanders, then the boatmen. Then three massive columns include the main body, with the Redcoats in the center, flanked on the left and right by the colonial troops of New York and New England respectively. The center column, led by George Augustus Howe is headed by the 55th (Howe's' regiment), trailed by the 1st and 4th Battalions of the 60th (Royal Americans), the 27th, 44th, 46th and the 42nd Regiments, each unit flying their respective colors. The rear is held by the remainder of Gage's light infantry (dubbed brown coats). In addition, there are two huge "floating castles," armed with artillery pieces. The provisions, supplies and baggage forms the rear with a rear-guard composed of regulars and provincial troops. The massive flotilla powered by about 10,000 oars and encouraged by the music of fifes and drums embarks as if on a grand parade; rather than its purpose, a floating powerhouse en route to regain Ticonderoga. The view of the flotilla as it sweeps along the lake, nearly from shore to shore advances to the narrows and as it converges into the diminutive passage, the formation suddenly shrinks into a single file column that extends about six miles in length.

After traveling about 25 miles, the flotilla at about 1700, suspends its advance, permitting the trailing boats which carry the baggage to catch up with the main body. Following a prolonged pause, the flotilla resumes the journey at about 2300, then without halting for the night, the flotilla arrives at the tiny channel that empties into Lake Champlain near Ticonderoga at just about the crack of dawn on the 6th. A contingent of French troops is there to confront the British; however, the French are not prepared to meet an entire army. With some quick action, the defenders are compelled to abandon the outpost and fall back, leaving the English to debark without further interference. The entire force is ashore and prepared to advance from the western shore of the lake by about noon. The rangers are the first to advance, however, the selected route, to move along the western bank of the channel which links Lake Champlain with Lake George is no longer feasible. Montcalm, in anticipation of the attack had sent out forces to intercept the British and Bourtoulmeque, the post commander had ordered the bridge over the river destroyed.

The lack of a bridge at the La Chute River, eliminates the English' plan to strike the objective from the rear. The river flows into Lake Champlain; however it is protected by the French gun at the fort. The rangers are forced to modify their strategy and attempt to cut through near-impenetrable woods, while the army traces their steps; however, the forest is neither enchanted or inviting. A combination of dense undergrowth and innumerable fallen trees, causes the forest to become a nightmare. Guides lose their bearings and various units become confused and intermixed creating havoc. For a while Abercrombie's army begins to wander aimlessly, essentially becoming totally lost. The confusion is not confined to the British. The French force which had initially confronted the English at the landing site are unable to make it back to the French positions. The escape route had been severed, forcing them (about 300 troops) to move into the woods and like the English, they become disoriented and get lost. Nevertheless, the antagonists stumble upon one another when the column, composed of rangers and Howe's force inadvertently and blindly bumps into the French to ignite a tenacious exchange to create even more confusion when the main body of the English hears the gunfire. Nonetheless, the British cannot distinguish from where the fire is originating. Some panic erupts among the English units; however, the rangers, rarely unhinged, remain steady and disciplined. At the first sounds of the gunfire, Rogers;'vanguard does an instant about face and rushes back to join the battle and

their arrival is timely. The French get caught between Howe's column and the rangers. Volley after volley descends upon the French positions and the force is wiped out.

The British losses during the wild skirmish is minimal; however, the French strike a devastating blow when one of their shots strikes Howe in the heart. At nearly the instant Howe was slain, the entire English army had lost its stamina as if it too had been fatally wounded. Major Israel Putnam had unsuccessfully attempted to persuade Howe to be cautious; however, Lord Howe remained anxious to encounter and defeat the foe. Meanwhile, General Abercrombie's army becomes immobilized and he still can not locate about one-half of his forces that continue to be lost in the woods. The remainder of the day (6th) Abercrombie attempts to regroup his scattered force and those collected remain under arms throughout the night. On the morning of the 7th, he orders a withdrawal to the landing site, still missing a huge amount of troops. To his surprise, when the column arrives at the embarkation point, he discovers his missing troops awaiting his arrival.

In the meantime, the French are also operating in a pool of confusion and indecisiveness. Montcalm initially decides to make his stand on the eastern bank of the channel near the site of the destroyed bridge at the foot of the rapids, but later after consultation with some of his officers, it is decided to be more practical and withdraw to Fort Carillon (Ticonderoga). Meanwhile, at about noon on the 7th, Major Rogers is dispatched to seize the saw mills. After the rangers secure the saw mills, the bridge is repaired to permit the army to cross. During the latter part of the afternoon, Abercrombie's entire army moves across the bridge and takes positions in an abandoned French encampment about two miles from the French fort at the tip of the peninsula. Nonetheless, the French have drawn a line on a ridge where Montcalm has decided to meet the invasion force. Since about daybreak, the French have been in non-stop motion erecting pernicious obstacle. Trees are cut and piled high to create a wall of logs that reaches about nine feet in height. Loopholes are created to provide a protected position for the sharpshooters and other ground troops and the terrain to the immediate front is inundated with pointed spears.

Nevertheless, many other obstacles, such as trees felled by prior storms, also block free passage, but only to the front. Montcalm's temporary fortress, near invincible against a frontal ground attack, is unfortified on either flank and English artillery is capable of blasting the walls to create a breach. Abercrombie has other options to use, but unexplainably he does not move to seize Mount Defiance in the heights that dominates Montcalm's positions, from where artillery could wreak havoc on the French, nor does he choose to push a contingent up Lake Champlain to set up positions to sever Montcalm's path of escape and line of supply.

Abercrombie is also operating with faulty intelligence which estimates Montcalm's force at the barrier to stand at about 6,000 troops, with reinforcements numbering about 3,000 en route to support him at any time. The erroneous intelligence prompts Abercrombie to speed up his operation to attack before the reinforcements can arrive. Abercrombie, at about dawn on the 8th, sends out a reconnaissance patrol, including Lt. Matthew Clark (Clarke), the chief engineer and Captain John Stark, with instructions to move to Mount Defiance (Rattlesnake Mountain) to observe the fortifications. Upon the return of the patrol during the evening, Abercrombie is informed by the engineer that a direct attack would reduce the enemy stronghold, however,

Captain John Stark of the rangers has a sharp difference of opinion with the engineer who believes the defenses to be vulnerable and of “little importance.” Stark contends that the stronghold is too formidable. Not unexpectedly, the word of the British engineer is taken, while the opinion of Stark is discounted entirely. Abercrombie, based on the optimistic report by the engineer, and his concern about the supposed imminent arrival of several thousand reinforcements, decides to act quickly and without the support of his artillery, which is left behind.

The order is given to attack and take the works at the tip of the bayonet. At just about noon, the French troops that are still struggling to strengthen their works, hear the sounds of gunfire, originating in the woods. The noise of the gunfire gives the defenders time to take their battle stations. Suddenly, the walls are defended by 8 battalions, formed into rows, three men deep and they are augmented by about 450 Canadians. While the vanguard is skirmishing with the French pickets in the woods, the main body continues to form for the bayonet attack, but as the English struggle to move through the dense woods, they remain unaware of the fortified wall to their front. After the English emerge from the forest, the French commence firing in unison as if a solid sheet of fire is being catapulted towards the Redcoats. Pandemonium sets in as the order to hold their fire until the wall is reached becomes ancient history. The troops try to recover from the volley that cut across the entire line, but it is an exhausting exercise. In addition, still, the Redcoats attempt to get themselves out of the maze created by fallen trees and layers of brush. The English, all the while, return fire, but the walls prevent any major damage or heavy casualties from being inflicted upon the French, an enemy who remains invisible.

Despite the obstacles and the non-ending volleys, the advance continues, but Abercrombie is unaware of the thrashing his force is receiving. He had remained at the saw mills near the bridge; rather than lead the assault. The English maintain their futile assault, while the French pound the flanks as well as the front of the faltering lines. After about one hour, the troops realize they are not able to penetrate and a retreat is ordered. Attempts to inform Abercrombie to inform him of the situation, but his responses remained identical, to launch another attack. Meanwhile, his equalizers, the artillery remain dormant. The retreating column treks 2 miles to inform Abercrombie that the French positions had been invulnerable. Meanwhile the French are exuberant, having thrown back the assault. Many are jubilantly atop the works waving their hats and raising triumphant cheers.

The French, having surely settled the matter become somewhat mystified when they observe another line of Redcoats charging their lines. The English, unwilling to submit to defeat had decided to take that “wooden wall,” regardless of the cost. The Scotch Highlanders, brandishing their broadswords detach themselves from the reserves and initiate an insolent attack. They cut and slash their way through the brush and boldly defy the incessant fire, but after reaching the breastworks, they lack any type of scaling ladders. Other English forces are right on the heels of the Highlanders. Undaunted, they revert to the buddy-system and begin to hoist one another to the top of the wall. The French continue to pour devastating fire into their ranks, while Montcalm is on the front line moving from man-to-man, encouraging them and directing their fire to vulnerable spots. But still, the French hold steadfastly and remain immovable.

The English, equally determined refuse to abort the assault, despite the alarming casualties being

sustained. The English and their American counterpart launch three additional attacks and each time, the only result is additional casualties and the English that had reached to top of the wall are either dead or wounded. Finally, one of the officers, after about five desperate hours of horrid combat, forms his troops into two columns and he launches a fifth attack, but he strikes the far right of the line and the attack makes some progress as the Highlanders slash without mercy. Some of the Highlanders, including Captain John Campbell, bolt from the wall into the French positions completely disregarding the danger to their lives and each man that drops in on the French is met by many bayonets. But still, the determination to evict the French refuses to subside and the English launch a sixth assault. By then Montcalm's reserves which had forestalled disaster when the Highlanders nearly snapped victory from defeat, are also on the firing line and the attack, despite its ferocity is repelled. A retreat is then ordered, but the Highlanders are reluctant to leave their wounded and dead at the French positions. Protective fire from the other troops covers the withdrawal.

The beleaguered column, discouraged by the devastating defeat and exhausted from unceasing combat of about six hours, loses its discipline in an instant and the irrefutable valor the men displayed on the field of battle, vanishes. Panic flies through the ranks and the column becomes a wild horde of beaten troops racing to escape. The behavior defies reason as the troops toss their weapons to the ground as well as their equipment, while they flee toward the boats, many not even wearing their shoes. Reality snaps back in place when the troops reach the boats and find their race is terminated. Colonel John Bradstreet is there and his force is well armed and prepared to shoot anyone attempting to commandeer a boat. Shortly thereafter, Abercrombie returns to the boats and once there he directs that the wounded be transported to New York and they are to accompany the artillery, the king of battle, which was never committed. Ironically, General Abercrombie departs soon after with his battle-weary army and he arrives at the mouth of Lake George prior to the arrival of his messenger, which he sent earlier. Subsequent to the unheralded retreat of Abercrombie, the French continue to fortify their positions at Carillon (Ticonderoga); however, later, Montcalm does continue to dispatch contingents toward Fort Edward to disrupt Abercrombie's communication. Nonetheless, Abercrombie does not race back to Fort Edward. He lingers at the mouth of Lake George at his camp, while remaining totally inactive until early August near the lake, the command is struck by dysentery, which inflicts many new cases of sickness.

The English force of about 16,000, sustains, according to the memoirs of General John Stark (captain at the time of the battle) the English sustain 1,608 regulars killed and 834 provincial troops killed wounded or captured. Captain Gosen Van Schaick is among the wounded. In contrast, the French Indian force (2,970 regulars; 101 Indians and 487 militia, bolstered by De Levis' 400 regulars, 1600 Canadians and Indians) sustains 494 killed and about 1,100 wounded (excluding the Canadian militia). The Canadians sustain 87 killed and 240 wounded. The Canadians proudly retain the flag (Drapeau Blanc) in honor of the victory. The flag is preserved in the National Sanctuary at Quebec. Also, in recognition of Montcalm's victory, he is promoted to the rank of Lt. General and he receives the Grand Cross of St. Louis. Other officers, that had participated in the victory, including De Levis, Marechal de Camp are jumped up one grade in rank.

Following the cancellation of the campaign to gain Fort Ticonderoga, a suggestion by a British

officer to complete the campaign by assaulting Fort Frontenac which lies on the north side of the St. Lawrence River is authorized. Bradstreet will commence an attack during the latter part of August. In conjunction, following the humiliating loss at Ticonderoga, General Abercrombie soon embarks for England. Subsequent to the loss he was dubbed Mrs. Nabbycrombie. Ironically, Major Robert Rogers (Rogers' Rangers) had offered to initiate reconnaissance on the enemy, but like Braddock before him, the advice from an American was not accepted. The British at this time rarely take American advice and they just as frequently fail to proclaim American exploits, choosing to keep the glory or tales to themselves. Abercrombie is succeeded by General (Lord) Jeffrey Amherst as Commander-in-Chief of the British troops in the Colonies.

The death of Lord George August Howe is heavily received by the colonists as he was enormously popular and perceived as a marvelous friend of the colonies. In conjunction, Captain Stark feels the loss of Lord Howe deeply and he apparently carries it throughout his lifetime. Stark is known to have later stated that he "became more reconciled to his (Lord Howe) fate, since his talents, had he lived, might have been employed against the United States. Stark also stated that he "considered him the ablest commander under whom he ever served." In conjunction, subsequent to the battle for Ticonderoga, Captain Stark returns to New Hampshire and while there he marries Elizabeth Page, the daughter of Captain Caleb Page on 20 August, 1758. Later during spring of 1759, Stark raises a new company of rangers, which he leads to Fort Edward. The rangers participate under General Amherst during the campaign to take Ticonderoga and Crown Point. Afterward, General Amherst orders the rangers to carve a road from Crown Point to Number 4, on the Connecticut River. In conjunction, Colonel William Haviland participates in this battle. Also, Captain James Reed (later brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in this campaign. Subsequently, he serves under General Amherst. Also, Major Philip Schuyler participates in this campaign. He accompanies General Augustus Howe's body to Albany. Horatio Gates (later major general during the American Revolution), who was wounded during the battle returns to Albany on the same ship. Another, soldier, Lt. William Shepard (Sheperd), who joined the military as a private (later becomes a brigadier general during the Revolution), participates in this campaign. Subsequently, Shephard, with the rank of captain, participates in the campaigns to seize Fort Duquesne and Montreal. Also, James Wadsworth (later, major general during the American Revolution), who entered the military during 1753 with the rank of lieutenant, participates in this campaign. During the following year, he is promoted to the rank of captain.

July 19 1758 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, the commander Captain Trump in a letter to Governor Denny, detailing the conditions at the fort, which remain on the alert for an attack by the French. Trump reports that work project to strengthen the post continue, despite a shortage of manpower. He has only one other officer and no ensigns. In conjunction, some reinforcements had arrived on the 16th; however, he received an order from General Forbes to dispatch Captain Robert Eastburn and Captain Paul Jackson, along with 35 troops from each company, to Raystown. In addition, Trump had been instructed to select forty "of the best men" from Colonel Burd's battalion and dispatch them to Raystown. The instructions deplete the garrison, leaving it with 143 troops and of those ten are scheduled to depart because their enlistments had expired. Trump includes the following about those remaining, saying, "A great part of them that are left are blind, lame, sick, old and decrepit, not fit to be intrusted with any charge." In conjunction, Trump had received four cannon from Philadelphia, however, no one in the garrison is competent to construct carriages for the artillery. Trump is compelled to rely on

Indians for intelligence and they demand pay for their services. Captain Trump lacks even a single drum to sound the alarm if an attack does materialize.

July 22 1758 (Saturday)–In Canada at Louisbourg, the French commander, M. Drucour continues to hold the fortress, which is under siege by the British expeditionary force under General Amherst. Drucour's garrison is composed of about 5,000 to 6,000 men including Indians. In addition, 5 ships of the line are in the harbor, along with 4 frigates and regarding the latter, Drucour had ordered three of the frigates to be intentionally sunk at the entrance to the harbor. In addition, on the previous day, 3 of his vessels, the ships of the line, were set afire by British guns. On this day, the citadel, the front of which is the King's bastion, is also a victim of the bombardment and it too burns. British guns from two batteries firing 13 24-pounders and one other battery, firing 7 mortars are transforming the town of Louisbourg into a massive pile of burning debris. By this date, about 40 of the fort's artillery pieces have been knocked out of action, leaving the fortress with only 12 pieces operable.

July 25 1758 (Tuesday)– In Canada, at Louisbourg, two British naval captains, utilizing boats of the fleet, maneuvers to positions close to the two remaining French ships in the harbor. Troops then board both vessels and one (*bienfaisant*) is seized for use by the English. One other vessel, the *Prudent* is destroyed by fire. Captain James Cook participates in this action. **In Pennsylvania,** a Moravian missionary, Frederick Post, on a mission for Governor Denny, arrive at Fort Augusta during his journey to the Ohio. He departs from the post on the 27th and the trip soon after becomes extremely dangerous. Along the way, they continue to spot ominous signs of the Indians including posts, painted red, which are used to tie up their captives. Frederick notes in his journal that he became "saddened when he gazed upon the means the Indians made use of to punish flesh and blood." Nevertheless, he and his party reach the Ohio without harm by early August. Mr. Post afterward meets with King Beaver and he gets to stop at French-held Fort Duquesne, where the commander deduces that he is a spy for the English. Post also encounters two captives (Barbara Leininger and Anne Marie Le Roy) at an Indian village at Beaver Creek. Post, however, makes no attempt to speak with either of them. Meanwhile, the French concoct a plan to have the Indians murder Post and to further encourage them, a substantial reward is offered if his scalp is brought to the fort. Post, aware of his precarious situation begins his return on 9 September, accompanied by six friendly Indians. The journey is harrowing as the party attempts to evade capture. On 11 September, the party crosses the Allegheny River. During that night, no fires are started for fear their pursuers would locate their camp. The Indians with Post spend an anxious night in fear of an attack and they become slightly bewildered in the morning (12th) when they inquire of Post if he is afraid that he might be killed. He responds: "No, I am not Afraid of the Indians nor the Devil himself, I fear Great Creator God." The Indians reply: "You know you will go to a good place when you die, but we don't know that that makes us afraid." The party then resumes its journey and later they encounter some friendly Indians on the 19th. The men arrive back at Fort Augusta on 22 September.

July 28 1758 (Friday)–In New York, the French execute an ambush against Colonel Nichols' Massachusetts regiment at Half-way Brook at about the midway point between Lake George and Fort Edward. About twenty men are killed and nearly all are scalped. The company from Groton sustains the highest casualties, including the death of Captain Thomas Lawrence and Privates Abel Sawtell, Eleazer Ames and Stephen Foster. Also, Corporal Nehemiah Gould of Groton, along with Sergeant Oliver Wright and Private Simon Wheeler (both of Westford) and Sergeant Oliver Lakin of Groton and Joel Crosby Westford are reported missing. In conjunction, some reports list Crosby as having been among the killed; however, it is known that Sergeant Lakin is

freed during the following year after a ransom is paid. Meanwhile, on the following day (29 July), Major Robert Rogers and Israel Putnam, with a large force including Massachusetts troops (Colonel William Williams' regiment) move out to intercept the French and Indians, but no contact is made.

July 30 1758 (Sunday)–In New York, a contingent of about 400 French and Indians, commanded by M. De Le Corne St. Luc attacks a large convoy, composed of 54 wagons and 150 men as it moves along the Lydius Road. The wagons are captured and destroyed. The English sustain high casualties and they also lose a large number of oxen.

August 1758–In Maine, a combined force of about 400 French and Indians attacks Fort St. George in the vicinity of present-day Thomaston; however, fortuitously, Governor Pownall had recently arrived at the post with a large force, giving the English more than sufficient strength to repulse the attack. In addition, the nearby settlements are spared from harm. The English sustain 8 killed or captured during the defense of the fort. The Indians, subsequent to this defeat, make no further attacks in Maine for the duration of the war. **In England**, Ensign Charles Cornwallis (later General Lord Charles Cornwallis), 1st Guards is promoted to Captain of the 85th Regiment of Foot. Cornwallis is also at this time appointed as aide-de-camp to the Marquis de Granby.

August 1 1758 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, Chabert Joncaire following a long forced march arrives at Fort Duquesne. His force is composed of 216 men, including French and Indians. Shortly thereafter, he is sent out with a force of 500 men to search for and locate the English. Afterward, Joncaire is dispatched to recruit Delaware and Shawanese Indians to bolster the force at Fort Duquesne. Joncaire arrives back at the fort on 13 September, one day before Major Grant launches an attack to seize the post.

August 5 1758 (Saturday)–In Massachusetts, Governor Pownall receives intelligence from General Monckton who is in Canada. Monckton's correspondence states that a French and Indian force at the St. John's River are preparing to attack a post, referred to as George's fort and against the colony's eastern frontiers. Pownall takes immediate action. He moves to the fort with the vessel King George and a sloop. Pownall has only 33 troops with which to reinforce the garrison; however, the strength is sufficient. Pownall then stops at other outposts to alert the garrisons of the potential threat. During the journey, the sloop and the King George encounter a band of Creek Indians at Penobscot Bay. A boat is lowered and the contingent pursues the canoes; however, it moves far ahead of the two vessels and the crewmen get captured by the Creeks. Afterward, Pownall returns to George's Fort and while there, the Indians launch an attack, but the garrison is well prepared. The feeble assault is effortlessly repulsed. Nevertheless, the Indians kill about 70 cattle before they take flight.

August 7-8 1758–In New York in the vicinity of Ticonderoga, the Battle of Wood Creek erupts, while a force under Major Israel Putnam and Major Robert Rogers are operating on the terrain east of Lake George on the 7th. The provincial force discovers a French camp that shows signs of recent activity. The colonials decide to await the return of the French. During the wait, a canoe with two of the Americans that are fishing spot two French canoes and at about the same time, they are spotted by the Frenchmen. Both sides take off in opposite directions; however, the French soon sound the alarm on the presence of the colonials. Rogers and Putnam break camp and head into the woods, but afterward, at the new camp, two of the officers take time out for target practice. The gunfire is heard by a French contingent of about equal strength and they detect the positions of the colonials.

The French under Molang are familiar with the terrain, giving them an advantage. On the following morning (8th), Rogers and Putnam are leading the column through the woods;

however, the French anticipating their arrival had set up an ambush. Suddenly, while they are pushing through some heavy brush the sounds of Indian war hoops are heard in conjunction with a hail of bullets. The colonials break for cover from where they can return fire and shortly thereafter, the combat become close-quartered and merciless. During the initial fighting, Sergeant Thomas Knowlton (later lieutenant) spots a nearby Indian creeping through the brush toward his position. Knowlton fires and takes out the Indian then moves to remove his scalp, but in an instant, he is surrounded by other Indians who bolt from their concealed positions.

Strangely, the Indians hold their fire and instead demand that Knowlton surrender. Knowlton peers at the circle of Indians, but rather than capitulate, he fires his musket, taking the Indians offguard and in that instant, he bolts into the woods and escapes capture. Shortly thereafter, Knowlton encounters a Frenchman at close range and both fire at each other, but neither hits the mark. The two engage in hand-to-hand combat, but Knowlton is overwhelmed by the strength of his foe and winds up being thrown, but one of the others rush to Knowlton's aid and the Frenchman being overwhelmed asks for quarter and receives it. Nonetheless, soon after the Frenchman attempts to escape and as he breaks away, Knowlton fires and liquidates him.

Captain Israel Putnam's weapon misfires and the mishap causes him to be captured by Indians who had accompanied the French. The remainder of the day became especially grueling for Israel. The Indians tied him and began a fire to burn him to death, but a rainstorm forestalled his demise. In the meantime, the Indians had also beaten him badly and he was struck by a Frenchman. They had also stripped Israel of his clothes and they were not yet finished with bringing about his death, however, a French officer, Molang, arrived to save his life. However, Israel was forced to lie down and afterward, he was tied down, with one arm to one tree and the other to another tree to ensure that he couldn't escape. On the following day after being seen by Montcalm, Israel was transported to Montreal where he encountered another prisoner, Colonel Peter Schuyler.

Peter, after making contact with Putnam and becoming aware of the brutal treatment, assisted in getting the French to give Putnam medial attention and to care for him in accordance with his rank as a major. Later, Colonel John Bradstreet captures Frontenac, which positioned the British to accomplish a prisoner exchange. The British officer, Peter Schuyler, referred to Putnam as an old man who should be freed, without any mention of his importance to the English cause. The French agreed to let Israel return home with Schuyler and the others that were agreed upon, believing him to be old and no future threat.

Israel Putnam rises to the rank of lieutenant colonel. Israel serves for the duration and afterward he participates in the seizure of Havana, Cuba during 1762. While approaching land at Cuba during a tropical storm, the transport carrying Israel and about 500 other troops get wrecked on the rocks. Nevertheless, Israel makes it to shore. The expedition is successful, but disease nearly annihilates the entire British force. After he returns home, Israel participates in a campaign against the western Indians on the frontier. By 1764, Israel attains the rank of colonel. In addition, Israel at some point, established an inn, which supplements the income from his farm. In conjunction, Israel is appointed major general during the American Revolution. Also, Joseph Cilley who joined the service as a private serves with Roger's Rangers. Cilley is attached to a company led by Captain Neal. He serves for one year on the northern frontier and in Canada and

risers to the rank of sergeant. Subsequently, Cilley serves in the American revolution and later he becomes a major general of New Hampshire militia. Also, George Clinton (later brigadier general, governor of New York and vice president of the U.S.) had abandoned his life as a privateer to join in the struggle. He participates in the campaign to seize Frontenac. George's father Charles also participates in the military during the French and Indian war and his brother James (also a brigadier general during the Revolution) serves during the war. George serves as a subaltern in his brother's company, which is attached to their father's regiment. Also, British captain Charles Lee (later major general during American Revolution) is seriously wounded during this campaign. Later this same year, Captain Lee returns to duty and during December, he is stationed on Long Island. Captain Gosen Van Schaick participates in the campaign to seize Fort Frontenac.

August 8 1758 (Tuesday)–In Canada at Louisbourg, General Amherst dispatches Colonel Rollo with a contingent of 500 troops to secure St. John's Island. In New York, a force of about 700 under Major Robert Rogers and Israel Putnam engage a force of about 500 French and Indians near Fort Ann (Washington County). The French are driven away. **In France**, an English force under Lt. General Bligh accepts the surrender of Cherbourg. See also August 7 1789.

August 12 1758 (Saturday)–In New Jersey, the assembly again passes legislation to bolster the defenses of the frontier against Indian attacks. The legislation: "WHEREAS the Indian Enemy still continue Hostilities upon the Frontiers of this Colony, and the Inhabitants seated there have prayed the further Aid of the Legislature, for their Defence and Protection against the hostile Attacks of those People: Therefore, **BE IT ENACTED** by the Governor, Council, and General Assembly of this Colony of New-Jersey, and it is hereby Enacted by the Authority of the same, That One Hundred and Fifty Men, Officers included, shall be immediately raised and supported, for the further Defence of the Frontiers, and formed into two Companies, equal in Number, to be commanded by a Major, a Captain, and four Lieutenants; whereof the said Major to have the chief Command of the Whole as the principal Officer, and the more immediate Command of one of the said Companies as Captain thereof; which said Company shall also have two Lieutenants, and the other of said Companies shall also have a Captain and two Lieutenants; which said Officers respectively shall be appointed by Commissions from the Governor or Commander in Chief for the Time being, and shall also take the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy; and the said Major shall appoint four Serjeants, and four Corporals, to each of the said Companies, for the better Regulation thereof."

August 17 1758 (Thursday)–In Canada, a messenger arrives at Quebec from Carillon to deliver news of a successful attack against an English convoy in New York. The message as reported by M. Doreil in a letter to M. D. Cremille: "A courier has just arrived this moment, my Lord, from Carillon with intelligence that a detachment of 400 men, consisting of Canadians, Colonials and Indians, commanded by M. de luc Corne St. Luc, attacked on the Lydius road, the 30th July last, at one o'clock in the afternoon, a convoy of about 150 men who were conducting 54 wagons loaded with provisions, which they captured and destroyed, not being able to save them; they killed 280 oxen and took 80 scalps and 64 prisoners—men, women and children. We lost only one Iroquois; two others have been slightly wounded." **In New York** at Albany, concern grows about the ongoing French advances. Major David Vander Heyden is ordered to post guards at the blockhouses to bolster the defenses.

August 25-27 1758--In Canada, Colonel John Bradstreet's force departs an island that is close to Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario Canada), defended only by slightly more than 100 troops

and some Indians. The boats are formed in one line, spaced about 6-feet apart. Once they reach positions from where they will land, the rowers re to turn the heads of their respective boats toward the shore and land in one wave; however, Bradstreet has ordered that no one is to fire his weapon before the entire force is on the beach and formed in two rows, directly in front of the boats. The exercise unfolds flawlessly and the troops meet no opposition. Bradstreet holds his Indian contingent back as the last men to hit the beach and afterward, they deploy in the woods on the flanks of the French. The British regulars and the men in the bateaux stay behind to protect the boats as well as the supplies and provisions, while the main body advances. To ensure the allied Indians are not mistakenly fired upon, Bradstreet distributes "red guimp" which they tie in their hair to make them distinguishable. After completing the landing without incident, according to the journal of Colonel Charles Clinton, the force rests for the remainder of the night, apparently without and interference from the French.

On the morning of the 26th, the English artillery bombards the walls of the fort, while the French return fire. The fort is too far for the bombardment to cause great damage and although the French possess 60 guns, not all are able to be placed on the walls. Meanwhile, the French fire fails to inflict many casualties upon the English. Throughout the day's exchange of fire, three of Bradstreet's men sustain wounds. By the morning of the 27th, the English guns, having been moved closer to the fort begin to inflict damage and casualties. The French at that time strike their colors. At nearly the same time, a 16-gun brigantine, seized at Oswego by the French, attempts to escape with a cargo, including furs and bales of other items. The English spot the movement and turn some guns toward the ship and against a nearby schooner which is also in the process of embarking. The French crews aboard both ships abandon the vessels soon after they move out. They board the boats and return to shore.

After Bradstreet accepts the surrender of the fort, by the commander, Pierre Jacques Payen de Noyan et de Chavoy, he extends great courtesy to the garrison. The troops are permitted to keep their money, as well as their belongings. In addition, the French are permitted to proceed to any other French garrison. Although, Bradstreet had been benevolent, he also realizes that he has no means of transporting the prisoners due to a lack of a sufficient number of boats to take them to Oswego. And he also decides that attempting to take the captives down the Mohawk would be to risky. The victory although not viewed as a major conquest is an important one. With the seizure of Fort Frontenac, the English sever the primary communications link between Canada and Louisiana. The English seize nine vessels, about 60 cannon, more than 15 mortars and large amounts of ammunition. The victory had come about without many casualties inflicted by the French, but subsequently, Bradstreet's command loses about 500 to sickness. Pierre Jacques Payen de Noyan et de Chavoy, 68 years old at the time he surrenders, is permitted to go to Montreal. He is exchanged for Colonel Peter Schuyler.

The English demolish the fort and burn the buildings. They retain two of the captured ships, the Marquise and a snow and they destroy the remainder. Although the capture of Fort Frontenac (Kingston in Ontario Canada) is not remembered as a major campaign, the victory did contribute greatly to the British cause. France loses its domination of Lake Ontario, while simultaneously, its communication to the north and south had been cut off and Fort Duquesne at Pittsburgh becomes isolated, which sets it up for the attack by General Forbes. In addition, the French defeat had sent some shock waves through various Indian tribes and it becomes the incentive for the Indians to begin to abandon the French and align themselves with the British. Major

Nathaniel Woodhull (later brigadier general during American Revolution), Captain Gosen Van Schaick (later brigadier general during American Revolution) and Colonel Charles Clinton, (father of Generals George and James Clinton of the Revolutionary War period), participate in this action. Meanwhile, General Abercrombie, having been thoroughly beaten at Ticonderoga, becomes reinvigorated with news of the victory at Fort Frontenac and the capture of Louisbourg. He ponders yet another attack to seize Ticonderoga, once General Amherst's army arrives. Nonetheless, Amherst does not reach Lake George until October, too late to initiate a campaign against Montcalm at Carillon (Ticonderoga).

Bradstreet's troops later depart for Albany and soon after, the troops assist with the construction of Fort Stanwix (Rome, New York). Bradstreet returns to his original post with the British army. The project at Fort Stanwix becomes part of General Abercrombie's plan to retake the Oneida Carry, which had previously (1756) been ordered destroyed by General Daniel Webb. General Stanwix directs Lt. Williams to manage the engineering of the fort and he places Horatio Gates in charge of the administrative duties; Gates is appointed the rank of major. In conjunction, the fort remains active for the duration of the ongoing war, but following the end of the conflict the post falls into total decay. Nonetheless, during the War for Independence, a new bastion will arise from the debris and the post on the Oneida Carry will be renamed Fort Schuyler. Also, Captain (later, major general-American Revolution) Philip Schuyler participates in this action; however, afterward, Schuyler returns to Albany where he becomes involved in an operation to acquire supplies and having them forwarded to the army.

Lieutenant George and Captain James Clinton, the sons of Colonel Charles Clinton, both participate in this action. During the operation, Captain James Clinton (militia) and his younger brother, Lieutenant George Clinton, also participated in the capture of a French vessel on Lake Ontario. The English, while maneuvering on the lake in row galleys were able to force a French sloop to lower its colors. Captain James Clinton remains in the service for the duration. Later, during November 1763, Captain James Clinton is appointed captain commandant by Lieutenant Gov. James Colden. Afterward, Clinton concentrates on raising a corps of volunteers, known as the "guards of the frontier." The unit, composed of four companies, each with about fifty troops, will defend a sector along the northern frontier that extends about fifty miles. Clinton marries Mary De Witt, the daughter of Egbert and Mary (Maria) Nottingham De Witt on 18 February 1765. James later becomes a brigadier general in the Continental Army.

September 1758 - Colonies - French and Indian War - The English are informed that the French Garrison at Fort Duquesne in the Ohio Valley numbers only about 800 troops including the Indians. However, the English under General Forbes numbering about 6,000-8,000 troops have yet to cross the Alleghenies and will not arrive in the area until November. In conjunction, the command includes troops from Pennsylvania, Virginia and a contingent from South Carolina, the Royal Americans.

September 12-13 1758-In Pennsylvania, Major James Grant resumes the advance toward Fort Duquesne. The French and Indians each have scouts that are monitoring the main body, but Grant's column continues to march without detection to within about fifteen miles from the French-held fort. By the following night or early on the morning of the 14th, Grant leaves his baggage and horses at a place about two miles from the fort. Captain Bullet, with a detachment of 50 men remains with the horses, while Grant moves to a hill, later known as Grant's Hill, which is a rocky bluff that contains dense woods. The hill, about one-half mile from the fort has

a sheer slope that descends and levels out in close proximity to the post (located on present-day Grant Street in Pittsburgh). The low ground at the foot of the hill contains ravines and swampy ground, as well as a cornfield. The ground just outside the fort contains about 25-30 huts, which are used by the Indians that are allied with the French.

September 14 1758 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, A force composed of about 800 troops (60th, Highlanders and a contingent of provincial troops) commanded by Major James Grant (later British major general during the American Revolution), arrives near Fort Duquesne. Grant's column is an advance contingent of the main body of Colonel Bouquet at Loyal Hanna (Ligonier, Westmoreland County, Pennsylvania). Grant had earlier requested authority to move close to the French post to secure prisoners and reconnoiter the area. Major Grant, apparently feeling confident, stretches his orders well beyond his authority. From his position at a hill, later known as Grant's Hill, Grant divides his force. During the predawn hours, Grant sends Major Lewis ahead with about 400 Virginians to "take anything that was found about the fort," while he holds in place on the hill. Every man in Lewis' force wears a white shirt to be distinguishable in the darkness. Nevertheless, the darkness complicates the mission and the Virginians are compelled to make their way back to the hill, but without discipline. In the meantime, Grant dispatches another detachment of 50 troops to move close to the fort to acquire intelligence on the layout of the fort. During the mission, a building is set on fire. The French spot the flames and extinguish them; however, without detecting the English. The fire is considered accidental. In the meantime, Grant, unimpressed with Lewis' actions, orders him to the rear with about 200 Virginians purportedly to augment Captain Bullet's contingent, which is guarding the horses and baggage. Nonetheless, it is thought that Lewis had been sent to the rear to assure that Grant would receive full credit for the anticipated victory.

At about dawn Grant flaunts his arrival by ordering that the drums beat reveille. Unfortunately, although the English are serenaded with the drums, the French at the fort also come to life. To Grant's dismay, the fort, which he believes to be lightly defended, had been bolstered within the last day or two by a strong force under Captain Aubrey, which had arrived from Illinois to give the French an advantage of more than two-to-one. Nevertheless, Grant had already decided, against orders, to seize the fort. At the time, the area is blanketed with a dense fog, which affords the French cover. Grant is able only to locate the fort. He is prevented from observing any activity. With the bagpipes blaring to instill added confidence to his command, Grant launches the attack by sending 100 Highlanders, under Captain McDonald, to capture the fort. In conjunction, Grant orders Captain McKenzie to deploy his contingent of about 250 men in positions to the left of the fort (Monongahela side), while he orders about 100 Pennsylvanians to deploy to the right of the fort (Allegheny side). The deployment of the troops essentially divides his force, which prevents them from supporting each other. All the while, Grant remains in place at the hill.

In the meantime, the French, having been alerted, react by using their familiarity with the terrain to neutralize the English. One contingent composed of about one third of the garrison moves to the bank of the Allegheny, while a second contingent of equal size maneuvers to positions at the bank of the Monongahela River. The remainder of the garrison remains within the fort until both contingents reach their respective positions, each of which are close to the rear of Grant's force. Once the maneuvers are completed, the gates of the fort swing open and the French column advances directly toward Grant's line, synchronized with the two flanking contingents which

move against Grant's rear on the left and right. Within a short time, Grant's entire force, which is encircled comes under a ferocious attack from all sides. To add further strength, the Indians, bolt from the woods, with their tomahawks swinging and their war cries reverberating, while they begin to take scalps. The war cries and tomahawks cause panic, except for the Virginians who hold steadfastly and prevent a worse disaster. Back in the rear, near the horses and baggage, the sounds of battle signal Major Lewis to speed back to support Grant, but during the melee, Grant falls back, but his line of retreat is not the same as the route that Lewis had taken. Consequently, Lewis' contingent fails to link with Grant, causing more confusion.

The French, however, remain focused on inflicting total defeat on Grant. The unfolding debacle is quickly coming to a disastrous end. Nonetheless, due to the action of Captain Bullit, the English are prevented from being annihilated. Bullit's small contingent of 50 men, abandons the horses and baggage to join the fight. His small force rushes to the front and he deploys his men in the brush and among some rocks. Their fire is effective, presenting an illusion that his contingent is much larger than 50 men. Bullit then pulls off a ruse. He marches his detachment directly toward the Indians and his men have their arms positioned as if they are advancing to surrender. The Indians take the bait and permit the column to approach without harm; however, when Bullit's troops reach point-blank range, they unleash a tremendous volley that devastates the Indians, then they charge with their bayonets fixed. The Indians's fear of the bayonet causes them to pull back temporarily. By this time, Bullit's command has sustained high casualties, but they refuse to quit. After only about one third of his force remains alive, Bullit breaks for the Allegheny River. Some make it to the opposite bank, but other drown during the attempt.

Captain McDonald who had led the center had been killed during the advance of the Highlanders, which threw his force into a disoriented retreat. Captain McKenzie is seized and his contingent is also routed, with many of his troops killed or captured. English casualties reach more than 300, including killed, wounded or captured. About two hundred and seventy-eight men are killed and forty-eight others sustain wounds. Major Grant, Major Andrew Lewis (Washington's Regiment) and Lewis' son John are among the captured; they are transported to Montreal, Canada. General Forbes when informed of Grant's actions states that he could only conclude that his friend Grant "had lost his wits." In conjunction, Major Grant and Major Lewis are held only for a short time before being exchanged. However, five of the prisoners are handed to the Indians to be burned at the stake and some others had been immediately killed by the tomahawk. About two years later, Grant is appointed governor of Florida, however, later, he serves in the military during the American Revolution, including the Battle of Germantown (1777) and the Battle of Monmouth (1778). Grant also serves in Parliament. He succumbs in Scotland on 13 May, 1806 at the age of 86.

The English retreat is harrowing, but one Officer, Captain Bullit, with a fifty-man unit, guarding the supplies at the rear, is able to regroup the survivors and lead an organized retreat back to Loyal Hanna to spare the force even more catastrophic losses. Bullit's Virginians had saved Grant's force from annihilation. Meanwhile, the main body under General Forbes is en route and it will be poised to strike a fatal blow. The French victory over Grant gives them a temporary reprieve; however, the loss of Fort Frontenac, leaves Fort Duquesne in untenable positions, isolated and there is no chance of being reinforced or re-supplied. In conjunction, Colonel George Washington had urged British General Forbes to trace the steps of the earlier

expedition through Virginia and led by General Braddock, but he had declined, choosing a circuitous route which delays the arrival of his force until November. General Forbes is unofficially known also as “Iron Head,” due to his reputation for being obstinate. If the advice of Washington had been accepted, the force against Fort Du Quesne would have been more powerful. In conjunction, Colonel Bouquet had constructed a fort at Bedford (Fort Bedford) during 1757 and another is constructed at Loyal Hanna (Fort Ligonier).

Major Grant in an attempt to avoid blame for the embarrassing defeat, tries to throw the blame for the loss on Major Andrew Lewis in an after-battle report that he (Grant) forwards to General Forbes. However, the facts differ from the report. It had been the personal heroism and leadership of Major Lewis that prevented the defeat from being more devastating. In conjunction, Major Lewis, upon learning of Grant’s false accusations, challenges Major Grant to a duel, but Grant lacked the courage to accept. Later, after returning to England is also remembered from a speech he gives in front of the British House of Commons, in which he proclaims that he had become familiar with the Americans and he (Grant) “would venture to predict that they would never dare face an English army, being destitute of every requisite to make good soldiers.”

September 15 1758 (Friday)–In Virginia, Indians raid Potowmack. Nathaniel Sullivan is seized and taken to French-held Fort Niagara in New York.

October 8 1758 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Easton, another conference with the Indians opens. About 500 Indians, including women and children attend. In addition to the governor (Denny), others that attend include council members, assembly members, the commissioner of Indian Affairs, Colonel Weiser, Colonel George Croghan and many Quakers. Croghan stands in for Sir William Johnson (although credited by some for attending, he was not there). Governor Bernard (New Jersey) arrives several days later. Upon his arrival, Bernard demands that the Monsey Indians release the prisoners that they had seized in New Jersey. All the tribes in the Six Nations attend. Takeghsatu, a chief of the Senecas becomes the Indians’ primary speaker. He addresses the governor and the others, saying: “Brethren-I now speak at the request of Teedyuscung and our cousins, the Delawares, living at Wyoming and on the waters of the River Susquehanna. We now remove the hatchet out of your heads that was struck into them by our cousins, the Delawares. It was a French hatchet that they unfortunately made use of, by the instigation of the French. We take it out of your heads and bury it under the ground, where it shall always rest and never be taken up again.

Our cousins, the Delawares, have assured us they will never think of war against their brethren, the English, any more, but will employ their thoughts about peace and cultivating friendship with them, and never suffer enmity against them to enter into their minds again.” Several days later, Nikes, a Mohawk speaks and he presents his thoughts about Teedyuscung, saying: “We thought proper to meet you here to have some discourse about our nephew Teedyuscung. You all know that he gives out that he is a great man and Chief of ten nations. This is his constant discourse. Now I, on behalf of the Mohawks, say that we do not know he is such a great man. If he is such a great man we desire to know who made him so. Perhaps you have; and if this be the case, tell us so. It may be the French have made him so. We want to inquire, and know whence his greatness arose.” Afterward, Takeghsatu, the next speaker says: “Brethren. I for my nation say the same that Nikes has done. I need not repeat it. I say we do not know who has made Teedyuscung this great man over ten nations, and I want to know who made him so.”

Other speakers follow and more or less say identical things about Teedyuscung. All the while, Teedyuscung remains extremely quiet. Governor Denny states that the English had not made Teedyuscung a great man, then describes Teedyuscung's activities, saying: "At the time appointed he came and told us that he represented ten nations, amongst which the Five Nations were included; that he acted as Chief Man for the Delawares, but only as a messenger for the United Nations [meaning the Six, formerly the Five, Nations], who were his uncles and superiors. We believed what your nephew told us, and therefore made him a counselor and agent for us. I must do him the justice to declare to you that at our former public treaties Teedyuscung never assumed any such power [or authority over the Five Nations], but on many occasions when he spoke of you called you his uncles and superiors."

Before the conference concludes, one of the chiefs dies. He is interred at Easton and many people attend the funeral. The conference ends on 26 October and seemingly a success. Some wine and punch is shared at the conclusion, which is described as ending with "great joy and mutual satisfaction." The Indians receive "hats, caps, knives, jewsharps, powder, lead, paints and walking-sticks (the name that the Indians sometimes use for rum)." The chiefs receive special gifts. Each one receives "a military hat trimmed with gold lace, a regimental coat and a milled shirt."

October 12 1758 (Thursday)--In Pennsylvania, the French who recently inflicted a heavy blow to the English at Fort Du Quesne, attempt to follow the success by inflicting a fatal blow against the English at Loyal Hanna before the main body under General Forbes, slowed by heavy rains, arrives from Fort Bedford (Bedford County, Pennsylvania) in the area. A combined French and Indian force composed of about 1,400 including 200 Indians engages in this action. At about 1100, the French, positioned southwest of the camp commence firing with 12 guns. Colonel James Burd dispatches two contingents to encircle the positions and silence the guns; however, the French guns increase the fire. Burd then dispatches 500 troops to deal with the threat. The French manage to force the English back to the camp and the general conflagration erupts.

The French lack a larger contingent of Indians, because many have returned to their villages to gather a supply of meat before winter arrives. The French column, led by De Vitri, advances confidently and ignite a fight that continues for about four hours. Bouquet's army stands at slightly more than 2,200 men, due to the loss of about 300 during Grant's folly; however, Bouquet, himself, is not on scene. He is stalled at Stony Creek, close to Stoystown in Somerset County due to impassable mud. Nevertheless, Colonel Burd, Bouquet's second in command, capably deals with the assault.

The French pound against Burd's positions at the fort, but the English hold firmly and bludgeon the French with an astounding amount of effective fire and unlike the earlier battles under Braddock and Grant respectively, there is no retreat by the English, only a steady stream of shot and shell. The French maintain return fire and hold their lines for several hours, but they cannot breach the English lines. A brief pause in the fight occurs at about 1600, however, at about dusk, the French resume their attack, only to be countered by Colonel Burd. He orders his artillerymen to rivet the woods where the French and Indians hold concealed positions. Once again, the English fire is extremely effective. The French abort the attack and begin their retreat. Meanwhile, the Indians begin to sense that the invincibility of their French comrades has disappeared into the forest. They disengage and retire. Burd's force loses about sixty-seven men

either killed or wounded.

Later, following the victory, Colonel Burd writes to Colonel Bouquet giving him the details of the day's action. The message in part: "...But we had the pleasure to do that honour to his majesty's arms, to keep his camp at Loyal Hannon. I can't inform you of our loss, nor that of the enemy...I have drove them off the field; but I don't doubt of a second attack. If they do I am ready." The letter written before the second attack gets a P.S. when Burd adds: "Since writing, we have been fired upon." In conjunction, General Forbes and the main body arrives at Loyal Hanna toward the latter part of October. The journey is arduous as the weather remains terrible for the English, yet favorable for the French. Bouquet's road has been plagued with near incessant rain and the route is being transformed into a muddy quagmire, which takes a high toll on the horses and wagons and the weather; rather than becoming tolerable, worsens as the rain changes to snow.

November 12 1758 (Sunday)-In Pennsylvania, the English at Fort Ligonier detect a French squad, which has remained in the area, subsequent to De Vitri's retreat. One of the Frenchmen is killed and three others are captured. Ironically, one of the captured men is actually an Englishman who had been earlier carried off from his house in Lancaster by Indians. In addition several other stragglers had stumbled into English lines and informed the English about the poor conditions at Fort Duquesne. In conjunction, General Forbes, based on the intelligence, decides that the attack to seize Fort Duquesne will be launched. Forbes is in extremely bad health, and in addition, there had been discussions about postponing the attack until the following spring. On this day, Colonel Washington leads a brigade of about 1,500 men toward Fort Duquesne, with responsibility for cutting a road.

November 25 1758 (Saturday)-In Pennsylvania, during the predawn hours, Forbes' army moves from Turtle Creek to attack Fort Duquesne. General Forbes, commanding from his letter, departs and advances just behind the vanguard. The army is formed in three columns, with the Highlanders, under Colonel Montgomery in the center, flanked by the provincials under Washington and the Royal Americans under Bouquet on the left and right respectively. The daylong march is arduous as the troops trek through a dense forest. By about dusk, the columns emerge from the woods and enter the plain that encircles the fort and they clearly see the smoke and flames that have consumed the post. The French had also set the buildings outside the fort on fire. Inside the fort, the French had even removed the roofs of the houses and push them against the buildings before setting them on fire. In addition, the French set explosives to detonate two powder mines, one under each of the magazines, but only one blows, leaving the other for the English. The troops in the lead column, composed of provincials, are the first to encounter the cruelty of the French. They spot a series of stakes in the ground along opposite sides of the path leading to the gates and each one displays a grotesque scene, the head of a Highlander and a kilt that drapes the respective poles. The Americans, being the first to see the atrocities, continue the march, somewhat sickened, but not quite infuriated as the English.

Once the Scots arrive at the stakes, they lose all sense of chivalry and civility. The Scots focus on one thing, vengeance. Instantaneously, the Scots drop their muskets and draw their claymores, then they break ranks and fly into the fort, leaving the column of Americans in their wake. The Scots seek either the Indians, whom have referred to the Highlanders as "petticoat warriors," or the French who enabled the Indians. Nonetheless, the Scots are disappointed. They find neither French nor Indians in the fort. The garrison had retreated to Venango (Fort

Machault). Although, the fort is abandoned, the English discover a large cache of guns and 16 barrels of ammunition. Nonetheless, the English also discover some gruesome scenes. During the hurried abandonment of the fort, the French either forgot or intentionally left five prisoners (Grant's command) in their cells. All are burned alive. Those not left in their cells are handed to the Indians and they too come to a gruesome demise. The Indians, immediately liquidated the prisoners by murdering them with tomahawks. In conjunction, some historians credit the victory at Fort Duquesne to George Washington and he did play a part; however, Colonel Bouquet, who participated in the campaign, states in a letter to Chief Justice Allen: "After God, the success of the expedition is entirely due to the general (Forbes). He has shown the greatest prudence, firmness and ability. No one is better informed than I am, who had an opportunity to see every step that has been taken from the beginning, and every obstacle that was thrown in his way." Jethro Sumner (later, brigadier general during the American Revolution), appointed as a lieutenant by Colonel Washington participates in this campaign.

After taking possession of the fort, General Forbes orders the troops to construct a stockade to provide some protection around a few scattered huts that had not been destroyed by the fires. Forbes is often remembered for being the man who names Fort Duquesne, Fort Pitt. Nonetheless, for about one year, the fort is referred to as the camp at Pittsburgh or the fort of Pittsburgh, which eliminates Forbes as the man who names the post. The first written recognition of Fort Pitt occurs in a letter written by General Stanwix on Christmas Eve 1759. Nevertheless, the fort is named in honor of William Pitt. Prior to departing the post, Forbes leaves a 200-man contingent of provisional troops to garrison the fort. There is an insufficient supply of provisions for any additional troops and there is not much space within the stockade, giving the garrison a huge challenge, survive the winter and if attacked as expected, repulse the assault and keep the Union Jack hoisted until relief forces arrive during the following spring. While en route back to Loyal Hanna, the column suspends movement at the site where General Braddock's force had been defeated in an attempt to discover his remains and those of the other fallen troops. Braddock had been buried in an unmarked grave along the road to prevent the French or Indians from mutilating his corpse.

Major Halket, attached to General Forbes' staff, accompanies a Pennsylvania detachment that moves through the dense woods and reaches the Monongahela River where they discover multiple grotesque scenes, remnants of Braddock's men. Halket, also on a personal mission, is able to identify the remains of his father, Sir Peter Halket of the 44th Regiment as one of two skeletons lying side-by-side under a tree. He was certain of the ghastly discovery because he was able to identify his father due to "the peculiarity of the teeth." Halket's father had a false tooth that remained in place. Halket also had strong suspicions that the other skeleton had been his brother. The Pennsylvanians cover both skeletons in the plaid of the Highlanders and inter them together in one grave and they receive a volley in a final salute. The other remains that are gathered are buried in a common grave. In conjunction, the column after completing the search, without locating Braddock's remains, returns to their camp, but by that time General Forbes had come even closer to the brink of death.

In conjunction, the Indians, who had only a while ago been dutifully involved removing the scalps of the Englishmen under General Braddock and Major Grant, sense that their security has vanished along with the French, prompting the Indians to seek friendly relations with the

English. Also, the English also construct Fort Mercer, then during 1764, Fort Pitt is greatly expanded. Nonetheless, Fort Pitt is evacuated by the British during 1772. Also, Colonel (later brigadier general) John Armstrong participates in the capture of Fort Du Quesne. Following the close of hostilities, Armstrong resumes his work as a surveyor and he becomes a justice of the peace. Subsequently, he becomes a brigadier general in the Continental Army on 1 January 1776. Also, John Gibson (later brigadier general during American Revolution) participates in the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne. In conjunction, the seizure of Fort Duquesne by the English becomes a turning point in the north as the French are unable to threaten; however, to the south, the colonists soon face major problems with the Cherokee Indians who pick up the hatchet. The Cherokee had sided with the English against the French, but although the exact cause of the hostility between them and the English appears to have been initially sparked while the Cherokee had been returning from the campaign and taken horses while passing through Virginia.

With the seizure of Fort Duquesne, the curtain begins to fall upon the French domination of the St. Lawrence as the campaigns of 1758 come to a close. Inadvertently, Frederick of Prussia had aided the English in America due to some nasty remarks he had made about the French king's mistress, Madame de Pompadour. While thousands upon thousands of French troops were being sent into Germany to take revenge against the Prussians, the French colonies began to suffer from lack of reinforcements, due to their service in Europe. William Pitt, with his extraordinary military instincts continues to find ways to keep the French focus on Europe, while he tries to maintain the advantage in the colonies. Also, soon after the English assume control of the area, a village begins to evolve when fur traders erect primitive huts. Colonel Bouquet is able to restore peace in the region by concluding successful meetings with the Delaware Indians. About 4,000 settlers who had been compelled to abandon their homes begin to return, along with merchants. The Royal American Regiment, composed primarily of recruits from the Swiss and German settlements of Pennsylvania, hold the forts and other posts stretching from Philadelphia to Carlisle and beyond to Bedford and Fort Pitt. Contingents of the regiment also deploy at Presque Isle, Sandusky and Detroit. Communications between the posts is handled by express riders who ride from fort to fort. Colonel Bouquet also establishes a relay station at Bushy Run. Bouquet, in cooperation with the proprietary government provides Andrew Byerly with several hundred acres for the station, which is about half-way between Fort Ligonier and Fort Pitt. Byerly lives at the station with his second wife (Beatrice Guldin Byerly) and their children. Mrs. Byerly emigrated from the Canton of Berne, in Switzerland, which coincidentally was the home of Colonel Bouquet before he emigrated to America. In conjunction, Andrew had previously been a baker and he was the proprietor of one of the first inns to operate in Lancaster, while his first wife was alive. He had also been a baker with Braddock's army at Fort Cumberland. In conjunction, during 1763, when the conflict known as Pontiac's War erupts, a friendly Indians arrives at the station and Mrs. Byerly although very ill is cautioned that hostile Indians are near and that she must leave before dawn of the following day. Despite her sickness, she and her children, including an infant, only three days old depart and make it to Fort Ligonier. Her husband, who is away from the station, barely escapes, but he also makes it to the fort.

November 26 1758 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Duquesne (later Fort Pitt), on a day set apart as a day of “public thanksgiving,” Reverend Charles Beatty, a Presbyterian minister and chaplain of Colonel Claphans' Pennsylvania regiment, delivers the initial Protestant sermon west

of the Allegheny mountains in Pennsylvania. Also, Brigadier General Forbes in a letter dated this day, informs Governor Denny of Pennsylvania of the capture of Fort Duquesne. The letter in part: "SIR: I have the Pleasure and Honour of Acquainting you with the Signal Success of his Majesty's Troops over all his Enemys on the Ohio, by having obliged them to Burn and abandon their Fort Duquesne, which they effectuated upon the 24th Instant, And of which I took Possession with my little army the next day, –the Enemy having made their escape down the River, part in Boats and part by Land, to their Forts, and Settlements on the Mississippi being abandoned, or at least not seconded by their Friends, the Indians, whom we had previously engaged to act a neutral part, And who now seem willing and ready to embrace His Majesty's most gracious Protection...I shall be obliged to leave about Two Hundred Men of your Provincial Troops to join a proportion of Virginia and Marylanders, in order to protect this Country during Winter, by which Time I hope the Provinces will be so sensible of the great Benefit. of this new Acquisition, as to enable me to fix this noble, fine Country, to all Perpetuity, under the Dominion of Great Britain..."

November 28 1758 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, Colonel George Washington informs Governor Farquhar (Virginia) of the seizure of Fort Duquesne in a letter, dated this day. The letter un part: "I have the pleasure to inform you that Fort Duquesne, or rather the ground upon which it stood, was possessed by his Majesty's troops on the 25th inst. The enemy, after letting us get within a day's march of the place, burned the fort, and ran away by the light of it, going down the Ohio by water, to the number of about five hundred men, according to our best information. The possession of the fort has been a matter of surprise to the whole army, and we cannot attribute it to more probable causes than the weakness of the enemy, want of provisions, and the defection of the Indians. Of these circumstances we were luckily informed by those prisoners, who providentially fell into our hands at Loyalhanna, when we despaired of proceeding farther..."

December 4 1758 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, Colonel Henry Bouquet holds a conference with the Delaware Indians. Conferences between the officers at the fort and Indians occur frequently.

1759 - In Massachusetts -Maine - The Wabanaki Indians having lost their French allies subsequent to the defeat of the French by the British find themselves in a poor position with the English colonists. The situation compels them (Maliseets, Richibucto Micmacs and Passamaquoddies) to sign treaties at Halifax. Later some of the Micmacs who are not signatories at this time forge a treaty during 1763. **In New York,** the English establish a fort (Fort Wilkens) at Skenesborough in the vicinity of Whitehall. The fort which consists of a blockhouse and a nearby barracks is in close proximity of Wood Creek. The English retain the fort until 1775 when it is taken by the Americans and renamed, Fort Skenesborough. Also, Fort Miller, established in Warren County at Queensbury (site of Seven-mile Post or Halway Post) becomes Fort Amherst. The fort is later manned by Patriots, but the British occupy it during General Burgoyne's campaign (1777) and afterwards during incursions by Carleton (1780), the fort is destroyed by his force including Tories and Indians. Also, Fort Kimber is established at Uniondale in Orange County by a settler, George Kimber. In addition, the English Fort Brewerton is established near the Oneida River at Hastings. In other activity, the French, under Daniel Joncaire, establish a fort-trading post known as Fort Little Niagra (Fort Du Portage). Also, the French establish Fort Levis on Isle Royal also known as Chimney Island on the St. Lawrence River. The fort, near Ogdensburg, is designed to bolster Fort La Presentation. Also, subsequent to the English capture of Fort Ste. Frederick this year, the English establish Fort

Crown Point. In addition, Fort Williams, near Lake George is established at a place between Fort George (Lake George) and Fort Edward. This fort is not to be confused with Fort Williams (Rome) or Fort Williams (Salem). Also, the English establish the Verona Royal Blockhouse at Sylvan Beach (Oneida County). In conjunction, an article published in the *Gazeter* (State of New York) during 1860, lists the fort as being established in 1722.

Early 1759 - 1761–The Cherokee Campaign--In South Carolina, the Cherokee had been friendly with the English and sided with them against the French and their Indian allies, but subsequent to the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne in western Pennsylvania, the relationship rapidly deteriorated. The precise reason for the outbreak is not recorded, but one of the primary sparks that ignited the conflict occurred while the Cherokee, disgruntled by the way they were treated by General John Forbes during the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne, were returning to South Carolina. Many of the warriors had lost their horses en route and while passing through Virginia, some of the braves resorted to taking new mounts, which they claimed were roaming unattended in the woods. However, the Virginians accused the Cherokee of being horse thieves. The Virginians's anger rises rapidly and it turns violent, so much so, that the fact that the Cherokees had just helped secure the north for the English. Some of the Cherokee are captured and of them, more than ten are killed. In addition, the Virginians are aware of a bounty on Indian scalps and the scalps of some are turned over as if they had been enemy scalps. Nevertheless, following the harrowing journey through the colony and through North Carolina, the Cherokee make it back to South Carolina where they discover that the colonists from Long Cane had been operating in Cherokee territory while they were gone.

The tranquility in the southern provinces suddenly gets transformed and the region becomes a powder keg as the Cherokee pick up the hatchet. The French had been evicted from the Ohio Valley and they had lost two powerful strongpoints, Fort Duquesne and Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario), the latter being the linchpin for control of the Ohio River. Fort Frontenac, located at the mouth of the St. Lawrence River on the northeastern edge of Lake Ontario, had also been the primary supply base for French forces in the Ohio valley and Great Lakes region. With the support of the Cherokee, the tide had surely turned and the English gained domination of the St. Lawrence River, which would be used to carry the fight directly to Montreal. Nevertheless, in addition to fighting the French and their Indian allies, the English now face another foe and the frontier stretching from Pennsylvania to Georgia becomes endangered as the Indians begin to launch raids against the settlers.

The unanticipated turbulence causes great concern and with the ongoing conflict against the French, the southern colonies are not prepared for the outbreak of a full-scale war against the Cherokee. Meanwhile, as the frontier erupts in savage fighting between the settlements and the marauding Indians, Governor William Henry Lyttleton of South Carolina activates the militia and summons them to move to Congarees, slightly less than 150 miles from Charleston and within striking distance of the Indian stronghold and within about 10 miles from Fort Prince George, a distant outpost. Lyttleton's quick reaction to the threat caused the Cherokee to temper their tenacity; however they continue to strike at weak spots as they roam the frontier. The militia includes cavalry. Francis Marion, leading a contingent of cavalry, moves out of Charleston with a contingent commanded by one of his brothers; however, Francis does not yet come into prominence during the campaign.

Meanwhile, the Cherokee Indians begin to recall their warriors, while a large group of Cherokee chiefs travel to Charleston ostensibly to seek peace to prevent the colonists from launching a full-scale attack against them. Once in Charleston, the governor holds a parley with the chiefs; however, they are unable to convince him that they are honestly seeking peace, leaving heavy doubt as to whether or not, the Cherokee strategy is cunningly attempting to forestall open hostilities until they can build up their strength. Meanwhile the call to the militia continues and various units are en route to Congarees. After refusing to accept the word of the Cherokee chiefs, Governor William Henry Lyttleton departs from Charleston to rendezvous with the main body of his army, but he demands that the chiefs accompany his column. In addition, to further inflame the situation, the Indians are not accompanying him as representatives of the Cherokee; rather, they are treated as prisoners or hostages and placed under guard. The chiefs strongly resent the action, but they conceal their anger to deceive Lyttleton. Nonetheless, Lyttleton shows neither sympathy nor empathy of their standing within the Cherokee nation.

Word of the treatment received by the Cherokee chiefs was quickly spread, prompting the Indians to become more inflamed. The tensions begin to rise, but neither the Cherokee nor Lyttleton are in a position to go to absolute war. Lyttleton's available forces are not seasoned soldiers and the militia is not well-skilled in either discipline or drill, nor does it possess sufficient arms and ammunition to carry on a prolonged operation. The Cherokee, far advanced from many other tribes, possess some modern weapons and driven by vengeance, they are anxious to reclaim the honor of their chiefs and carry the hatchet against the settlements, but caution prevails to give them more time to build their forces.

In the meantime, Governor Lyttleton sent a dispatch to summon a prominent leader of the Cherokee, Attakullakullah, described as the "wise man" of the Cherokee nation and as a long-term friend of the English. During the meeting, Lyttleton informs Attakullakullah that peace can be attained, but he insists that the Cherokee, as a term of the agreement, will be required to more than 24 Cherokees who will pay the punishment for the devastating raids that caused the slaughter of 24 settlers. Lyttleton makes it clear that the fate of the prisoners will be decided by him and that the penalty might be death. An agreement is reached and the Cherokee reluctantly agree to the terms, but afterward, the Cherokee begin to question themselves. Meanwhile many of their warriors flee into the mountains. Nevertheless, the grounds on which the treaty was laid had been like shifting sands and even the slightest movement could shatter the treaty, considered by the Indians to have been signed (December 1759) under duress.

The Cherokee reignite the conflict and massacre fourteen settlers at a place in the vicinity of Fort Prince George built on the Isundiga River (Savannah River) several hundred miles from Charleston. The fort was also precariously close to the Cherokee town of Keowe and the fort itself is sometimes referred to as Fort Keowee. The outpost fort is garrisoned by a slim force under Colonel Cotymore and some artillery. Cotymore's responsibilities include guarding the Cherokee chiefs (hostages) brought there by Governor Lyttleton. The Cherokee, unwilling to directly attack the fort due to the artillery create a scheme by which they intend to pull off a ruse to deceive the garrison and seize the fort to release the chiefs detained there. A Cherokee woman on the pretense of setting up a meeting between Oconostota, a prominent Cherokee, approaches the fort to request that Colonel Cotymore meet with Oconostota near the river bank so the Cherokee can inform him of some important intelligence. Cotymore, unaware of the plot to

assassinate him, agrees and departs the fort, accompanied by only two men, Lieutenants Bell and Foster.

While the three officers walk toward the river, Oconostota, in full view, awaits them; however, other Cherokee remain concealed. While Colonel Cotymore and Oconostota begin to speak to one another, the latter begins to wave a bridle, his prearranged signal to open fire. In an instant, the ambush is sprung and Colonel Cotymore is killed. Lieutenants Bell and Foster are both hit by the fire, but they are only wounded. The sounds of the gunfire alerted the garrison and the Cherokee, despite being able to kill the commander, fail to seize the fort and the price paid for taking Cotmore's life was high. The commander, in place of Cotymore, concerned that the chiefs might be maneuvering to join in the struggle takes immediate and succinct steps to prevent their attempt to break loose to interfere by restraining them in irons. The Cherokee in turn fiercely resist, but only for a short while. After the Cherokee inflict stabbing wounds on three of the troops, other troops terminate the scuffle with a hurricane of violence incited by the death of Cotymore. The chiefs are pounced upon by other troops who give no quarter. The chiefs are expeditiously liquidated within a few moments of wild fury in which they are "butchered."

The death of Cotymore and the vengeful assault upon the chiefs destroys the peace and transforms the frontier into a cauldron. Cherokee raiding parties again raise the hatchet and institute a campaign of unrelenting plunder and terror against the settlers, including helpless women and children. Some settlers are able to escape death by fleeing into the wilderness, but the woods provided little sanctuary. They escaped death or torture by the Cherokee; however, most perished in the wilderness from lack of food. Meanwhile urgent pleas for military help are sent to Charleston, but Governor William Henry Lyttleton faces a different foe simultaneously. While the Cherokee are ravaging the settlers in the back country, a small-pox epidemic is spreading throughout the low country, impeding chances of dispatching militia. Those militia men still able to operate are compelled to devote their time to their families as they fight to survive the pernicious disease.

Nonetheless, the Cherokee continue to attack and maul the settlers. During this time, Governor Lyttleton receives new orders from England. He is appointed as governor of Jamaica, which prevents him from participating in further action to terminate the raids, which some claim came about from his handling of the Cherokee chiefs. Lyttleton is succeeded by Governor William Bull, but succession does not ease the turbulence nor end the epidemic. The situation in South Carolina remains bleak, but nearby colonies, Virginia and North Carolina, aware of how much worse the situation will become if the Cherokee are not defeated, begin to raise forces to join in the campaign. In addition, word of the plight of the South Carolinians had spread rapidly. While the Virginians and North Carolinians are raising seven troops of rangers, General Amherst dispatches regulars from Canada to ensure success. Colonel Archibald Montgomery, commanding a battalion of Highlanders (about 700 strong) and four companies of Royal Scots (about 400 strong), along with a contingent of provincial troops is en route. General Amherst's orders direct Montgomery to "chastise" the Cherokee and afterward, Montgomery is to depart the south and move to New York to participate in the campaign to seize Montreal.

By spring of 1760, the operation to terminate the Cherokee rampages begins to move into high gear. The point of assembly for the forces was selected, Monk's Corner, from where Colonel

Archibald Montgomery would launch the offensive. The force is bolstered by South Carolinians under Governor Bull, who has been able to mount the militia because the small-pox epidemic, although somewhat active, had greatly lessened. It is thought that Francis Marion, later known as the "Swamp Fox," participates, but there are no written records to confirm his participation. In the meantime, the Cherokees, who had not lost their cunning abilities, remain aware of the activity of the English-colonial forces building against them and their confidence has been increased due to the inability of the South Carolinians to hinder their savage incursions. The Cherokee, once aware of the apparent plans of the English, begin to fortify their defenses and the Cherokee, known to be more civilized than other tribes, also have an abundance of natural obstacles to help them withstand an assault.

The Cherokee territory is a vast country stretching from the Broad (or Cherokee River) to points beyond the Tennessee and Savannah Rivers. The territory includes mountains, which provide protection in the heights and the mountain slopes contain dense forests, but the Cherokee lands also include spacious valleys. To penetrate the mountains an enemy must advance through dangerous passes, which are guarded by formidable warriors. The combination of natural obstacles and the large number of braves places the Cherokee in a position that creates a high sense of invulnerability. Their confidence continues to build as they begin to realize that they outnumber the forces that are gathering against them. At this time, the Cherokee Indians inhabit more than sixty towns and villages and they are capable of gathering about 6,000 braves and of those many carry European weapons. In addition, they are skilled warriors and from service in the campaign against Fort Duquesne, the Cherokee have become familiar with European tactics in combat.

In contrast, Colonel Archibald Montgomery is unfamiliar with the territory and his force numbers only about two thousand men. In accordance with war councils and other meetings, Colonel Montgomery is informed about the Cherokee terrain and the disadvantages his force faces. Montgomery chooses to move cautiously to prevent any chance of being ambushed or trapped, but despite his caution, the column advances confidently toward the Twelve-mile River and once there, during mid-June, Montgomery switches his tactics by moving only after dusk. From the river, the column treks through the darkness to the main objective, Estatoee, about 20 miles distant. En route, under cover of darkness, the column reaches the vicinity of a Cherokee town, Little Keowee. Montgomery leaves his baggage at a place under guard and directs a contingent of the Highlanders and the Royal Scots to reduce Little Keowee, while he continues the advance toward Estatoee. Without being discovered, a contingent of infantry encircles the town to sever the escape routes and then the troops initiate a surprise attack, which catches the Cherokee off-guard. Every warrior within the town is killed. The British sustain three men killed and two officers, Lieutenants Hamilton and Marshal are wounded.

At Estatoee, the element of surprise is lost. Cherokee scouts discover the approaching column which permits the Cherokee to flee before the attack is launched. The Cherokee choose not to fight. They scatter heading toward mountain positions, but some fail to make their escape. The town is reduced and the supplies and storehouses are destroyed, along with some livestock. The troops also discover ammunition, which is destroyed in the fires. After the devastation is complete, Colonel Montgomery departs for Fort Prince George, but he discerns that the destruction of Estatoee had not caused the Cherokee Indians to lay down the hatchet.

Montgomery concludes that a return visit is necessary. The column, having eliminated the threat at Fort Prince George without a fight because the Cherokee fled upon his approach, moves out of the post and advances back toward the Cherokee middle settlement. The Cherokee decide to engage, rather than flee and a tenacious battle erupts. The Cherokee are beaten, but Montgomery's forces sustain casualties. The casualties: 20 troops and 2 officers are killed and 26 officers and 66 troops are wounded. Of those, the Highlanders sustain 1 sergeant and 6 privates killed. In addition, the Highlanders sustain some wounded: five officers (Captain Sutherland; Lieutenants Macmaster and Mackinnon; assistant surgeon Monro. Also, 1 sergeant, 1 piper and 24 troops are wounded. Following the conclusion of the mission, which includes the destruction of every Cherokee town in the Lower Nation, Montgomery speeds toward Fort Loudoun which has also been under siege by the Cherokee.

On 27 June, Montgomery's column reaches a point about 5 miles from Etchoee. The march is quite tedious as the troops trek along diminutive primitive passes through near in-penetrable woods. The Cherokee in anticipation of being attacked, have fortified the area and staged various ambush sites. Visibility in the valley is near zero due to the unending dense brush, providing at some places, no more than 3-feet of clear view. To further add to the danger, a river, which has sheer banks of clay on either side flows through the wilderness. The obstacle creates more concern as they prohibit Montgomery's force from having any maneuverability and force the troops to funnel through the passages with no space large enough to handle more than three men at a time. The troops in the column do not need to be told that they have entered a perfect ambush site. Nonetheless, Montgomery, still acting with caution presses forward. His vanguard, a ranger company led by Captain Morrison is out on the point to reconnoiter. His rangers are familiar with the terrain and they are all skilled marksmen, but they are also aware of the cunning ways of the Cherokee, prompting them to be cautious with each step.

Meanwhile, the Cherokee remain in concealed positions, then just as the first rangers step into the passage, a pernicious trap, they are struck by an avalanche of fire, while the Indians momentarily reveal themselves. Captain Morrison and several other rangers become the first victims to fall. They are swiftly cut down. Others, some light infantry and grenadiers, although unable to detect the locations of the Cherokee, bash their way forward, oblivious to the rings of fire. The troops remain under heavy attack and they attempt to return fire, based on the flashes from the weapons of their invisible foe. The exchange continues, while Colonel Montgomery propels the Royal Scots forward to seize a piece of high ground on Montgomery's right, while the Highlanders, who hold the rear, speed to the front to bolster the light infantry and the grenadiers.

The surge penetrates and suddenly the concealed enemy is within striking distance of the bayonet as close-quartered fighting erupts. The Cherokee warriors continue to resist, but they fail to run. Having held the advantage with the ambush, the Cherokee attempt to hold firmly, but the steel of the bayonets forces them to give ground, but ever-so-slowly. Cherokee war cries seems to bounce off the thicket with amplification; however, the boisterous noises have little effect on Montgomery's force. They continue to slash their way forward, while the Cherokee continue to stay just out of reach of the points of the bayonets. The Cherokee, despite their bravery are slowly pushed back and as they retire, the bayonets continue to inflict casualties. Afterward, Montgomery thrusts toward Etchoee, which finally causes trepidation upon the Cherokee. Their

task of preventing the column from reaching the town, considered the capital of the Cherokee fails.

The column resumes the advance toward Etchoee, while the Cherokee attempt to forestall an attack on their town, but Montgomery drills forward and the Cherokee retreat haphazardly. The Cherokee gather their families and abandon the town, moving into the mountains. Colonel Montgomery after destroying the town, assesses his situation, including the size and condition of his remaining operable force and concludes that his forces have inflicted sufficient damage and injury and that he would return to Fort Prince George and from there the column would return to Charleston. The column begins the arduous journey which takes them through about sixty miles of rugged mountains and the wagons transporting the wounded prevent Montgomery from moving at a quicker pace; however, many supplies and other articles are left behind to lessen the encumbrance. While the column retires, the Cherokee continue to harass it at various places; however, the column returns and with it all the wounded.

Montgomery's decision that he had too few troops to fight their way to Fort Loudoun (under siege since March 1760) leaves the fate of the garrison in a precarious position. The fort's supplies and ammunition are limited and without reinforcements it is only a matter of time before the Cherokee will prevail. The siege continues into June of this year and on the 3rd, the garrison believes the siege had come to an end as no Cherokee are spotted. A small detachment of only several men passes through the gates to attempt to forage; however, the Cherokee had not abandoned the siege; rather, they merely concealed themselves. The detachment comes under fire shortly after leaving the fort. Reinforcements rush to provide support and cover fire and they are able to get back to the safety of the fort, but the supplies and ammunition had been severely depleted, making it obvious that despite their extraordinary dedication and heroism, they could not hold much longer without reinforcements.

On 7 August, 1760, Captain Paul Demere and other officers decide that it is fruitless to continue to hold Fort Loudoun and they agree to surrender the post to the Cherokee in conjunction with a Cherokee promise that the garrison will suffer no harm. The beleaguered column departs, but later without warning, the Cherokee spring their ambush. Captain Dermere and just under thirty others are massacred. The survivors are seized and dragged away as captives, then used as slaves. Of the officers, only one, Captain Stuart, is spared. News of the fall of Fort Loudoun and the disastrous massacre spreads quickly. The settlers along the frontier are shocked by the traumatic news, particularly because most are aware that there are not sufficient militia troops in the region to defend them. Alarms are spread, but with the great peril, when urgent pleas for fresh troops are dispatched to General Jeffrey Amherst in hopes that he will speed to the Carolinas to prevent further devastation by the Indians. The Carolinians are aware that at least several thousand braves will be raised to reduce the settlements.

In the meantime, the Cherokees have disagreements among themselves, with the elder chiefs preferring a path to peace, but the younger warriors, incited by a representative of the French, Louis Latinac (French officer) prefer only warfare. The Cherokee, having severed the alliance with the English, believe they will now receive the support of the French king. And although no longer supplied with weapons from the English, the Cherokee welcome French arms. Latinac, while at a Cherokee parley, becomes somewhat dramatic in an attempt to mimic their ways.

Latinac grabs a hatchet, then pounds it into the trunk of a tree as he bellows: “Who is the warrior that will take this up for the king of France ?” Just after yelling the question, one of the younger warrior chiefs, Salouee, from Estatoee, responds. Salouee retrieves the hatchet and states that he favors continuing the hostilities and says: “The spirits of our slain brothers call upon us to avenge their massacre. He is a woman that dares not follow me.”

General Amherst receives the dreadful news and for the South Carolinians, his response is quick and affirmative. Amherst, having vanquished France with the capitulation of Montreal on 8 September can spare the required troops. A contingent of Highlanders and the Royal Scots had not been with Amherst during the Canadian campaign due to the complications with the Cherokee, which detained them in South Carolina. Nonetheless, the Highlanders will hook up with the main body of the Regiment. General Amherst orders the Highlander Regiment to head for South Carolina expeditiously. A supplemental contingent of Grant’s command is composed of Chickasaw and Catawba Indians. In the meantime, Colonel Montgomery had departed from the south for New York. Soon after, during June 1761, Colonel Montgomery and his Highlanders participate in an operation against Martinique. While the colonists in the south await help, they raise a force of about 1,200 troops, commanded by Colonel Thomas Middleton. Colonel Middleton’s officers include Isaac Huger, Henry Laurens, William Moultrie and Andrew Pickens. Combined, Grant’s force totals about 2,600 troops.

Colonel Grant’s column arrives at Fort Prince George on 29 May, 1761. Later on 7 June, Grant advances toward the Cherokee territory and similarly to the previous forces sent to penetrate, the march is arduous and the dangers still lurk along the entire route. The troops battle the terrain and simultaneously maintain a constant vigil for the signs of an ambush. The scouts at the point of the army include Chickawa and Catawba Indians and their keen eyes spot a Cherokee strongpoint at the precarious pass, but the Cherokee had switched their positions from where they last set up the ambushes. They hold a dominant hill and it is a formidable defensive position, which most probably was selected by the French officer, Latinac, but there is no evidence to verify that he picked the line of defense or if the Cherokee had decided to copy European tactics, which they gained while allies of the English. Nonetheless, with the Cherokee positions discovered, they lose any opportunity of executing an ambush.

The Cherokees realize their Indian adversaries exposed their positions, on Colonel Grant’s right flank. They commence firing upon the vanguard and in cadence with the enfilade, the Cherokee initiate a charge. The troops at the front of the column return fire, but the Cherokees disregard it and continue to approach the vanguard. In the meantime, while the vanguard holds it ground, reinforcements arrive and the Cherokee become the recipients of repeated volleys which compel them to retreat hurriedly and reposition themselves on the hill on Grant’s right flank.

Colonel Grant, aware of the risk of resuming the march, discerns that Cherokee fire could inflict severe casualties, prompting him to conclude that first, the Cherokee must be evicted from the hill. A contingent of thirty men (Forlorn Hope) is selected for the Herculean task and Lieutenant Francis Marion receives command of the detachment. Without delay, the diminutive force moves out and begins to ascend the slope, while other troops also advance to provide support fire; however, the Cherokee observe the movement and at the signal, a Cherokee war-hoop, the Indians rise from their concealed positions and deliver a blistering avalanche of fire that strikes

about twenty of the attackers. Lt. Marion, however, remains unscathed. Reinforcements arrive at the scene to prevent annihilation of the Forlorn Hope. By that time, the contest escalates into a full-blown conflagration with both sides pummeling each other. The fighting becomes close-quartered and the bayonet becomes a weapon of choice for the English. The Cherokee are driven from their positions by the clashing steel, but repeatedly they return to deliver punishment of their own. The fighting remains incessant and no quarter is given as the battle for domination of the hill continues until about noon without pause, exhausting both sides, but neither is willing to retire and neither holds the advantage.

As the casualties climb and the heat of the sun intensifies, still the battle rages for about another two hours when the Cherokee, at about 1400 begin their retreat, leaving Grant's command on the field as the victor, but the battle's end does not terminate the campaign. The victorious but fatigued column has won a clear path to Etchoee because the Cherokee had become demoralized after fighting tenaciously and being beaten and the warriors had lost their will to fight. Grant's force, without meeting resistance, levels the town and afterward sweeps through Cherokee country destroying every thing in their path. About fourteen towns are transformed into burning debris. Those Cherokee warriors caught before they can escape to the mountains are met by the sword. The war had been prolonged through the incitement of the French and the enthusiasm of the young chiefs; however, the reprisals affected the entire Cherokee nation, including the women and children, whose food supplies were destroyed. The English forces remain relentless and Colonel Grant remains on the march in the Cherokee country for thirty days to ensure the Cherokee will be unable to again raid the settlements or massacre a garrison.

The troops move swiftly and violently and spare nothing. The Cherokee villages are totally demolished, but Grant also orders all of their crops destroyed to sever their food supply. Consequently, the Cherokee become isolated in the mountains unable to regain their momentum and powerless to gather sufficient amounts of food. The situation only worsens, which compels the Cherokee who are unable to subsist to sue for peace; however, due to the massacre at Fort Loudoun and the seizure of the survivors, there is no sympathy from the colonists who lay out conditions for the peace which are somewhat peculiar for the English. They demand as a stipulation for peace that the Cherokees first provide either four warriors who would be shot in front of the army or provide to the colonists "four green Indian scalps within twenty days." The campaign succeeds in terminating the violence on the frontier. Also Colonel Richard Richardson (later, brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in this campaign, serving under Colonel Montgomery and Colonel Grant respectively.

February 1 1759 (Thursday)–In New York at Fort Little Niagara (Fort du Portage, later Fort Schlosser), Chabert Joncaire departs from the post, clad in snowshoes to travel to several Indian villages, including the Iroquois at Kananouangon. Chabert faces two dangers while on the mission, death from the elements or capture by the British. The Indians at thus time are apprehensive due to their anticipation of being overrun by an English force and they complain that the French have not attended to their needs. Chabert draws from his personal finances to provide the Indians, who claim to have "nothing" with food and clothing and he provides the warriors with weapons. In return, the Indians vow to "raise the hatchet against the English." Subsequent to dealing with the Iroquois there, Chabert treks through the snow to Fort Machault (Fort Venango) in Pennsylvania. After pausing there, Chabert moves to several other Indian

villages including the Loups and Iroquois, whom promise to move to support De Lignery at Fort Machault. Chabert returns to his post during the latter

March 3 1759 (Saturday)–In New York, Major Robert Rogers is ordered by Colonel Haldiman to undertake a mission to gain intelligence on the French fort at Ticonderoga. He departs Fort Edward on this same day with a contingent of 358 men, including his officers. On the following day the column pauses close to Lake George to await darkness and then subsequent to dusk they resume the march until about 0200 on the 5th when they arrive at the first narrows. By that time, one man, an Indian had already been sent back to the fort due to an injury, but now, twenty-three other suffering from frost bite are ordered to return to the fort. Later during the evening, the column resumes its advance and arrives at Sabbath Day Point at about 2300. Despite the frigid cold and exhaustion which is beginning to overcome the force, the rangers rest only a while before resuming the march at 0200 on the 6th. The column reaches the landing place at about 0800. Scouts determine that no French troops are on the west side of the lake, but others discover two detachments on the opposite side.

Rogers directs Captain Williams and his regulars to remain in place with thirty rangers, while Rogers moves forward with the engineer that accompanied the column, and 49 rangers and 45 Indians under Captain Lotridge (sent by General Johnson). They advance to the isthmus that overlooks the fort to give the engineer a perfect point for observation. Afterward, they return to their camp, but Rogers directs one of the Indians to remain on the isthmus to observe any movement of troops on the east side that cross to enter the fort. Later on the night of the 6th, the engineer is taken to the French entrenchments where he takes his notes and returns by midnight without detection. After returning to the camp, Major Rogers, aware that the regulars are suffering from not being used to the weather, orders Captain Williams to lead his command back to Sabbath Point. Thirty rangers under Lt. Tute escort them back. After they depart, Rogers finalizes his plan to launch an attack. At 0300, Rogers leads his command, including several officers, 1 regular, and 40 rangers, along with Captain Lotridge and 46 Indians to the South Bay which they cross and move to positions directly opposite the fort. Shortly thereafter, the rangers shed their blankets and strike a work party of about 40 men.

The surprise attack inflicts heavy casualties upon the French as they try to make it across the lake to get back to the fort. The rangers also seize three prisoners; however, a huge number of French, Canadians and Indians immediately pursue. Once the French fire begins to strike their rear, Rogers makes it to some high ground and the rangers form to repulse the pursuers, numbering about 60 Canadians and Indians along with 150 regulars. The French vanguard advances with confidence, but the rangers' fire quickly douses their enthusiasm. The rangers after repelling the force, resumes its march before the French reinforcements arrive. After Rogers' command moves about one-half mile, the Canadians and Indians are again close behind. Rogers selects another strategic place, a long ridge and they bolt for the more tenable place to defend. As the enemy approaches, once again, the rangers and the Mohawk Indians rivet their target area and the pursuers flee to the rear, but the inexhaustible rangers and Mohawks pursue to further slim their numbers. The regulars never arrive close enough to engage.

Following the latest skirmish, Rogers resumes the march and they encounter no more opposition. During the operation, the rangers sustain two killed. In addition one regular is killed and one of the Mohawk Indians is wounded. At about midnight (6th-7th), the column rejoins with the forces

waiting at Sabbath Bay to share the four feet of snow. On the morning of the 7th, they resume the march back to Fort Edward. The column is met at Lake George by reinforcements and sleds to transport those suffering from frostbite or wounds. After returning to the fort, Major Rogers repairs to Albany to meet with General Amherst. He returns from there to Fort Edward during the following May.

March 11 1759 (Sunday)– General John Forbes, the commander who seized Fort Duquesne from the French succumbs on this day in Philadelphia. He had been ill since the previous year due in great part to ignoring his personal health and by his propensity to overwork himself, particularly during the campaign to seize Fort Duquesne. His remains are carried to the state house (Independence Hall), accompanied by many military men and prominent politicians. The people of Philadelphia line the streets to watch the funeral procession when his corpse is taken to be interred at Christ Church. General Forbes was known to his Indian friends as “Iron Head.” Almost immediately after the death of General Forbes, rumors begin that suggest Colonel James Burd is to succeed Forbes, but in Pennsylvania, the assembly confers with Governor Denny and requests that he communicate with General Amherst to explain that the choice of Burd would not be beneficial because of being a Virginian and because of that, there was concern that the support of the friendly Indians in Pennsylvania would be lost. The assembly is convinced the friendly Indians would not continue to support the colonists if a Virginian would be placed in command and it is thought no one will enlist. In conjunction, General John Stanwix is selected as successor to Forbes. Soon after he arrives and hands a letter from General Jeffrey Amherst to Lt. Governor Denny, in which Stanwix’s appointment (commander of the provincial and British troops in the Southern Department) is noted. In conjunction, General Stanwix holds the post until the following year when he is succeeded by General Moncton. In conjunction, Stanwix will be headquartered at Fort Pitt (formerly Fort Duquesne). Captain Harry Gordon (formerly lieutenant, 1st Battalion, 60th Regiment (Royal Americans) is named chief engineer for the new fort at Pittsburgh, in place of the ruins of Fort Duquesne. Also, Captain Gosen Van Schaick participates in this action.

March 27 1759 (Tuesday)–**In Canada** , Captain Francois Pouchot departs from Montreal. He reaches Pointe au Baril, which is close to the Canadian town of Maitland on 4 April. Pouchot did not depart Montreal with a positive attitude on his journey to resume command at Fort Niagara in New York. Before departing, Pouchot had expressed dissatisfaction when informed that he was taking only 149 French troops. While speaking with Montcalm, he had mentioned what he had also stated to others: “It appears that we shall never meet again, except in England.” Pouchot’s orders issued by Vaudreuil, direct him to transfer the corps of Canadians to De Lignery if he (Pouchot) determines that the fort appears to be safe from an assault by the English. In conjunction, orders for De Lignery, if all is well at Niagara is to lead the Canadians and the Indians on a mission to attack Fort Pitt (formerly Fort Duquesne) to regain it for the French. In other activity, while at Pointe au Baril, Pouchot becomes aware that the two corvettes being built there are nearly completed. The *Iroquois*, to be commanded by Sieur La Force is launched on 9 April and the other, the *Outaouaise*, commanded by Captain La Broquiere is launched on 12 April. The French arm both vessels with ten 12-pounders. They operate on Lake Erie for the duration.

April 1 1759 (Sunday)–**In Canada** at Montreal, the French anticipate an English offensive. A summary of proposed operations dated this day, but unsigned by either Montcalm or Governor Vaudreuil includes: “De Lignery is to stay at Fort Machault to keep the enemy from advancing to Lake Erie; Presque Isle is to be made a base; Detroit and the Illinois posts are to send there all

the provisions they could gather.” In conjunction, during the previous autumn, Presque Island had been selected as the point of rendezvous for both the French and Canadians arriving from the posts in the west. In addition, the Indians from the Ohio Valley and those from Illinois were to converge on Fort Machault (Venango), while the Indians inhabiting the land north of Lake Erie, including the Hurons, Mississagas and the Ottawas were to assemble at Toronto, with the latter being poised to support Fort Niagara if required. Also, the construction of the two new vessels for service on the lake which had been ordered during the previous September after the loss of Fort Frontenac are close to completion. Each of the vessels, at Point au Baril, will carry 25 soldiers of the Marine and 25 Canadians. In addition, the vessels will be armed with ten 12-pounders. **April 12 1759 (Thursday)–In Canada**, Montcalm at Montreal in a letter to Marshal De Belle Isle states: “Canada will be taken this campaign, and assuredly during the next, if there be not some unforeseen good luck, a powerful diversion by sea against the English Colonies or some gross blunders on the part of the enemy. The English have 60,000 men, we at most from 10 to 11,000. Our government is good for nothing; money and provisions will fail. Through want of provisions, the English will begin first; the farms scarcely tilled, cattle lack; the Canadians are dispirited; no confidence in M. de Vaudreuil or in M. Bigot. M. de Vaudreuil is incapable of preparing a plan of operations. He has no activity; he lends his confidence to empires rather than to the Generals sent by the King. M. Bigot appears occupied only in making a large fortune for himself. his adherents and sycophants. Cupidity has seized officers, store-keepers; the commissaries also who are about the River St. John, or the Ohio, or with the Indians in the Upper country, are amassing astonishing fortunes. It is nothing but forged certificates legally admitted. If the Indians had a fourth of what is supposed to be expended for them, the King would have all those in America; the English none...” In other activity, Pierre Joseph Celoron, Sieur de Blainville, at present, holding the title, major of Montreal, succumbs. Celoron, formerly the commander at Detroit, had initially married Marie Madeline Blondeau and together they had three children. Subsequent to Marie’s death, Pierre marries Catherine Eury de La Parelle at Montreal. The wedding occurred on 13 October, 1743. Together, Pierre and Catherine had nine children and of those, three were born at Detroit. Later, during 1777, his widow, Catherine enters a religious order. She becomes a member of the Grey Nuns of Montreal and takes the name, Sister Marie Catherine Eury. Also, a daughter, Marie Madeline also becomes a member of the Grey Nuns of Montreal. Celoron Island at the mouth of the Detroit River was named in Celoron’s honor. **In New York** at Fort Little Niagara (Fort Du Portage), Chabert Joncaire, having recently completed a journey to visit with various Indian tribes, departs from the post to visit Tananouangade, a Seneca village at the mouth of the Conowonga River. He returns to the fort in about one week, accompanied by three chiefs. Soon after many Indians from all directions are converging on Fort Niagara. Meanwhile, on 28 April, Chabert arrives at the Little Rapids, the outlet of Lake Erie. He returns to the fort on 2 May and there are so high a number of Indians gathered there that he is no longer able to leave the post at the portage. Chabert finds that the warriors have also brought their families. Suddenly a sea of wigwams appears outside of the fort and they extend down to the river bank. The Indians build their lodges in a wooded area near Gill Creek. The French treasury gets soaked for the tab, which essentially is actually paid by the taxes of the peasants back in France.

The Indians receive many gifts and a bountiful amount of food. While there, the Indians were describes as having “begged, debated and threatened, gambled and smoked; or wrapping the King's blankets about them, slept the sunny hours away, or solemnly stalked about the

neighborhood, which now is the very heart of the upper factory district of Niagara Falls city.” Chabert places blame on the fiasco on Governor Vaudreuil for having ordered to supply the Indians with “everything they wished.” Chabert exclaims: “Thus it became necessary for three months, not only to feed them, men, women and children, but to satisfy all their whims; they had new ones every day, and of all sorts.”

To get what they wished, the Indians resort to the old device of dreaming (a ruse often used to persuade Sir William Johnson to provide them with gifts).” Chabert further states: “When they have dreamed that some one will give them brandy, a blanket, a feast, etc., the dream must be verified, otherwise it forebodes evil. There is perhaps more of malice and avarice than superstition in this tradition; but it has been none the less ruinous for those who entertained such dreamers at their own expense.” When their demands had not been attended, they became intolerable and in addition, they simply informed Chabert or the storekeeper that “their Father in France was rich and powerful, to whom these things were as nothing, and that it was his order they should be supplied.” In conjunction, similar antics are tolerated at Fort Niagara and even at the lesser posts such as Le Boeuf, Presque Isle and Fort Machault (Venango) where other Indians are gathered.

April 13 1759 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians raid Conodguinet and seize William Walker and one other man as prisoners near a settler’s fort known as McCormick’s Fort.

April 20 1759 (Friday)–In New York, during a conference (Canajoharie congress) with chiefs of the Six Nations at Canajoharie, Sir William Johnson discusses the English intent to seize French-held Niagara. The Chenussie Indians (Senecas of the Genesee valley) inform Johnson that they had prepared a secret plan during the previous winter to attack Niagara and that they purposely withheld the plan from the other tribes in the Confederacy. They inform Johnson that instead, they will now join with the English during the campaign. The Indians hold a war dance that continues throughout the night straight into the following day, celebrating what they say, that “the reduction of Niagara would be a proper plaister to heal all the wounds we complained of.” In conjunction, Johnson has also gathered other Indian chiefs outside of the Six Nations, some of whom had been allies of the French. On the 21st, the Indians renew their speeches and they hold a council. Afterward, an Indian representative speaks to Johnson stating: “It is the earnest and unanimous request of all the nations present that you march as speedily as you can with an army against Niagara, which is in the country of the Senecas, and which they now give up, to be destroyed or taken by you; the sooner the thing is done, the better.” The Indians present Johnson with a belt of wampum that contains a “Figure of Niagara at the end of it, and Sir William’s name worked thereon.” Subsequent to the presentation, the Indians resume their dancing and they indulge in a feast with much to drink. Nonetheless, some of the tribes do not actually provide any support for the campaign, but many others do participate. When Johnson initiates the advance, they join in the westward march. About 900 Indians move out with Johnson. In conjunction, Sir William Johnson forwards details of the congress to General Jeffrey Amherst and a copy is also sent to the Lords of Trade. In his report, Johnson informs Amherst’s plan to seize Niagara via Lake Ontario that he would participate with the greater part of his Indian force, including the Chenusio Indians. Johnson also underscores the importance of seizing Niagara and mentions the tremendous trade opportunities, saying “...if the Conquest is rightly improved, will throw such an extensive Indian trade and interest into our hands, as will in my humble opinion oversett all those ambitions and lucrative schemes which the French have projected, in pursuit of which they were interrupted by the present war in this part of the

world...”

April 28 1759 (Saturday)–In New York, General Jeffrey Amherst, accompanied by Colonel Roger Townshend depart for Albany. They arrive at their destination on 3 May. Afterward, Amherst begins the massive project to amass the necessary boats, assemble his contingents of troops as well as organizing his army to prepare it for the enormous challenge of overcoming the unlimited number of obstacles standing between the point of departure and the objective, Montreal. In other activity, Colonel John Parker (New Jersey Regiment) at Shohary, writes to Lewis Johnson informing him of the cooperation of the Indians, stating in part”...it will not be long before we shall appear on the Stage again as I hear the Campaign will open much sooner than it was imagined. The Indians are very hearty on our side, the Six nations have took up the protest against the French and several nations, formerly their Allies have refus'd to assist them this Campaign; there are now a good many of the Cocknowagoes at Sir W. Johnson's, and its thought they'll come over to us. The French themselves give up their Country as lost, this is Indian news...The six Nations have given him (Johnson) Niagara for a trading house & will assist in taking it.”

May 1759 - In New York, a force under General John Prideaux composed of about 4,000 men including several thousand regulars and 1,000 Indians, the latter formed from the Five Nations and led by General Sir William Johnson arrive in Oswego en route to French-held Fort Niagara where a bigger fort is constructed. Soon after, during the following month. a small group is left as a garrison and the main body embarks by boats on Lake Ontario, arriving at Niagra on 7 July.

Early May 1759–In Canada at this time a force of about 800-900 men including Canadians and Indians, commanded by De Lignery is dispatched to Fort Niagara, with order to “proceed to Presque Isle, Le Boeuf and Venango. In conjunction, De Lignery had lead the retreat from Fort Duquesne during the previous year. Also, at about this same time, a force of about 1,300 including troops of the Marine, as well as Canadians and Indians, commanded by the Chevalier de La Corne, a captain of colonial troops, is directed to move to assume responsibility for the frontier of Lake Ontario.

May 7 1759 (Monday)–In New York, General Amherst notes in his journal: “As I had now determined with myself the Expedition to Oswego and Niagara, and that the Corps for that service should consist of Abercromby's (Abercrombie's), Lt. General Murray's, 4th Battn. of R. Americans and the 2,680 New York Provincials, & that Br. General Prideaux should have the command and be joyned by all the Indians under Sr. Wm. Johnson, I wrote to Br. General Stanwix and sent an Aid de Camp that he might have the earliest notice and be prepared to act as the Expedition to Niagara must undoubtedly greatly facilitate any attack he may make on the French Posts between Pittsburgh and Lake Erie...”

May 8 1759 (Tuesday)–In Massachusetts, Governor Thomas Pownall, leading a force of about 800 provincial troops, embarks from Falmouth. On the following day, their vessel reaches the St. George's River A small band of Indians incite a small short-lasting skirmish, however, the mission continues. Afterward, some Indians arrive at the camp and they are seized as hostages. Pownall informs the Indians that to gain protection the entire tribe should surrender; however, Pownall also informs them that if they kill even one Englishman, “they would all be hunted down.” Afterward, Pownall advances up the Penobscot River and by the 8th, he reaches its mouth. On the 22nd, the contingent aboard the sloop, Massachusetts, arrives about 6 miles below the falls when a mishap occurs as the sloop runs aground. Some troops debark and cover both banks to protect against any hostile Indians, but the vessel is freed without incident. At about the

same place, Fort Pownall is established, after first holding a prayer service followed by a small celebration of indulging in some rum. The site of the fort as located on a map drawn during 1776, placed it about 30 miles above the mouth of the Penobscot. It served as a post in present-day Maine to protect the border with Nova Scotia. After completing the mission, Governor Pownall returns to Boston, arriving there on 28 May.

May 14 1759 (Monday)–In Canada, the HMS *Alcide* (Captain James Douglas) and the HMS *Stirling* separate from Admiral Charles Saunders' fleet to speed to the St. Lawrence River to bolster Admiral Durell. In conjunction, a one-company contingent of rangers are aboard Douglas' convoy. Also, Saunders aware that Admiral Durell has no small vessels with his squadron also dispatches an armed schooner (acquired at Halifax) to join with Durell. While en route, the *Alcide* encounters a French vessel which is on a voyage from Rochelle to Canada and transporting a large cargo of military stores and uniforms. In New York, a band of about 40 Missiasagas under Pakens arrives at Fort Niagara and within a few additional days, a contingent of Sauteurs arrive. Pouchot receives news from the Indians that Francois Marie Picote, Sieur de Belestre is en route from Detroit to bolster his force. Nonetheless, Pouchot is not overconfident that he can hold the fort, nor are the French in Montreal. Upon Pouchot's departure from Montreal, he received authorization to retreat to Ohio if necessary. Nonetheless, Pouchot is not certain whether or not the English have pushed beyond Oswego, he later sends a contingent from Niagara to deliver supplies and provisions to Presque Isle and to Venango. At the same time, he is pondering whether or not to launch an attack against Fort Pitt (formerly Fort Duquesne) and Fort Ligonier, both of which are in Pennsylvania.

May 16 1759 (Wednesday)–In New York at Albany, Sir William Johnson arrives. General Amherst, afterward, in a letter to William Pitt, states: "He (Johnson) came to me with some demands and promised great things for the Indians. I thought it right to keep my intended operations secret to the last moment, for if the Indians know it the French will have it." In conjunction, several days later, in another letter to Pitt, Amherst states: "I have amply supplied everything for the service at Oswego and Niagara, and furnished Sir Wm. Johnson with everything he has asked for, for the Indians, though the demands were not small." Later in the month, Amherst notes: "On the 27th, a party of Indians was to have marched out of town, but rum stoped (stopped) them."

May 17 1759 (Thursday)-In New York, a large number of Senecas meet with Pouchot at Fort Niagara. Pouchot expresses immense disappointment due to the transformation of the Indians who have lost their enthusiasm for supporting the French against the English. The French, particularly the Joncaires, including Chabert, Daniel, and their father, along with the government has been toiling for years to maintain their support, but at this point, the Senecas appear to have buried their desire to fight. The Iroquois too have forgotten the countless gifts and are swinging their allegiance back to the English. The French at this point must rely upon the Western tribes including the Mississagas (west of the Niagara and north of Lake Erie); the Sauteurs; Loups; and other tribes from Ohio and Illinois.

May 23 1759 (Wednesday)-In Pennsylvania, a contingent under Captain Bullet, en route from Rayestown to Fort Ligonier (Pennsylvania) encounters a band of Indians. One man, John Peters, is captured by Indians and taken to Fort Niagara, New York.

May 30 1759 (Wednesday)–In New York, by this day, General Amherst's force, excluding the New York troops, which have been attached to General Prideaux's command, amounts to about 1,550 troops. Amherst had expected to also attach the New Jersey troops to Prideaux; however, they have not yet arrived. In a letter to William Pitt, Amherst explains that "they not arriving as

soon as I expected, the bateau-men and teamsters failing, I thought it would retard the service to wait for them.” In conjunction, the units under Prideaux include: the 44th (Abercrombie's); the 46th; the 4th Battalion (two companies) of the 60th; the Royal Americans and a light detachment of the Royal Artillery, noted as “poor, in guns and engineers.” Prideaux is known to have been extremely aggravated with the artillery contingent, which prompts him to accentuate his British vocabulary words with some highly colorful language, not used at the dinner table. Initially, about 600 Indians under Sir William Johnson (second in command) participate, but by the final stages of the siege, the number grows to about 900 Indians. In conjunction, William Winds (Windes) is appointed as captain in the New Jersey brigade at about this time (1759). Captain Winds participates in various campaigns. In one incident, Lt. Colonel Winds is ordered to retire during a skirmish north of Albany. Nevertheless, he ignores the order. Afterward, the commander, known to be a timid leader, draws his sword on Winds. Undisturbed, Winds responds to the threat and the commander absconds. After he departs, Winds assumes command of the regiment. Also, Winds command captures large numbers of French during the conflict; however, one Frenchman, Cubby (Cubbey) accompanies Colonel Winds when he returns to New Jersey. Afterward, Winds presents Cubby with twelve acres of land.

June 1759–In Naval Activity, a massive British fleet, composed of nearly fifty warships and hundreds of transport vessels, arrives at the St. Lawrence River to evict the French from Quebec. The Armada carries three British brigades totaling about 8,000 soldiers and it has also paused in Halifax and at Louisbourg to board a contingent of North American Rangers, experienced in fighting the Indians and the French on their terms and a unit known as the Louisbourg Grenadiers. On the 26th, the Fleet anchors about three miles below Quebec in the vicinity of Orleans Island. Later on the same day, a contingent of rangers led by Lt. Meech debarks slightly after dusk to execute a reconnaissance mission. More troops arrive and the island is seized. The French attempt to thwart the Fleet by dispatching fire-ships, but the English easily hook them and tow them out of the paths of the Warships. By the end of the month, the English secure positions within one mile of Montcalm’s trenches at the Montmorency River and Point Levis, the latter being secured by General Monckton on 30 June. Nevertheless, Quebec, a mere one mile distant, remains afar as it is buffered in the lower sector by rivers and the upper sector is positioned at the top of huge sheer cliffs that rise about 200 feet and only primitive paths lead to it. General Wolfe and the Marquis Montcalm each ponder the situation. Wolfe, facing the harsh Canadian winter must force action or risk defeat, while the French hope to forestall a fight to allow the bitter winter weather to defeat the English and land-lock their Fleet in the soon-to-be frozen river. Meanwhile, the English Artillery and Naval Guns continually lambaste Quebec to rattle the nerves of the French and draw them into battle. In other activity in New York at Fort Edward, Major Rogers dispatches three companies of rangers under command of Captain John Stark to join with General Thomas Gage who leads part of the army under General Amherst to Lake George; however, Rogers is to remain with General Amherst until he moves out later in the month. In addition, Rogers is directed by Amherst to send out reconnaissance detachment to gather intelligence on the French forts.

June 3 1759 (Sunday)–In Canada, the Marquis Montcalm is informed that Captain Pouchot in command at Fort Niagara has held a grand council with the Indians. The report indicates that all is well; however, Montcalm instinctively is unconvinced of the report. After seeing the report, he exclaims: “God grant that it lasts.”! He also notes in his journal: “It is much to be feared that M. Pouchot, caressed in the cabinet of the Marquis de Vaudreuil, has not gained security by it. He has gone off to Niagara impressed with the false principle that he has nothing to fear there, and

that they can send 1,000 men to the Ohio. He has been seduced, and the seducers have no other object than self-interest, and of more money-making when they are ready to reconquer the Ohio." In conjunction, Montcalm has been against the Ohio campaign since first proposed by Vaudreuil.

June 7 1759 (Thursday)–In New York at Albany, a prisoner from Swegatchie provides information on the French. He states that many bateaux have gone to Niagara, along with the two newly constructed brigantines. General Amherst also receive distressing new in reports that state the Indians are on a rampage in the region below Sir William Johnson's residence along the Mohawk and that a large number of white settlers have been scalped. General Amherst on a continual basis, keep William Pitt abreast of all the activities. In one letter he refers to the troops not receiving their pay stating: "The great discontent among many people employed in the Government service, for want of payment, there not being money sufficient for it; I have judged it for the good of his Majesty's service to make application to the Lt. Governor of New York to borrow a sum, which I hope you will approve."

June 17 1759 (Sunday)–In New York at Fort Niagara, Captain Pouchot writes in a letter to the authorities in Montreal, giving a report on some of the recent activities. The report includes details on the success of two war parties that had returned to the post. One party returned with six English scalps, along with two captives seized near Fort Bull (Wood Creek Fort) located on the Oneida Carry between Schenectady and Oswego, while the other war party had captured a train of eight carts, carrying provisions close to Loyal Hannah (Fort Ligonier), Pennsylvania (Westmoreland County). The news of the success of the Indians is offset by the disappointing news regarding Chabert Joncaire and his son-in-law, Lieutenant Honore Dubois La Milletiere. Both Chabert and his son-in-law had earlier been adopted by the Seneca tribe. Pouchot's report specifies that both men had been "trapped in a Seneca hut, and after an all-day fight, only escaped by favor of night." The Indians had apparently turned on Chabet when they believed La Milletiere had escaped. However, he had been captured by a party of Mohawks and taken to New York City. Pouchot also reports that one of the men under Chabert's command had been killed and his house destroyed by fire.

By this time, with the Senecas having threatened Chabert Joncaire and his brother, Daniel, Captain Pouchot realizes that their allegiance to France is rapidly dissipating. In the meantime, the Mohawks, aligned with the English have been responsible in great part for the Senecas sudden change of heart. In addition, Pouchot's report indicates that he is depending on a relief force under De Lignery arriving. However, another item in the report causes additional apprehension. Pouchot warns that the supplies at Niagara are nearly exhausted, stating: "Our greatest evil is the provisions, of which we are very short. If they are not sent to us very soon, our army will be obliged to disband in the care of God." In other activity, Captain Pouchot meets with a group of Cayuga chiefs who arrive to inform him that the Cayugas are switching allegiance to follow Sir William Johnson. In conjunction, Pouchot has also been informed by some Senecas that they will remain on the Niagara because "they were of that country." Nonetheless, Pouchot realizes that the frontier is now in grave danger.

Pouchot dispatches a force of Mississagas, led by M. Blainville, to discover the location of the English. The detachment embarks aboard the *Outaouaise*. The voyage is disconcerting for the Indians who experience their initial time aboard a vessel during a ferocious storm. They become panic-stricken when high winds badger the ship. In a state of shock and terror their superstitions rise to a zenith. They hurriedly toss their ornaments overboard, but to ensure they appease the "Manitou of the lake, their weapons are also thrown overboard, along with their tobacco.

However, after throwing everything overboard, in hopes of ending their nightmare, a new one begins. Suddenly, the Indians believe they see an “evil Manitou” on the deck. Nevertheless, their fear is not calmed when the crew explains that they are looking at a Canadian dwarf, something they have never ever encountered. The Indians, having never seen such a little man, remain unconvinced and they attempt to rid their fears by throwing him overboard, but the crew prevents the man from coming to any harm. The crew is able to save the man from being either killed or thrown overboard. Meanwhile, the vessel sustains severe damage, including a severed mainmast, but it arrives at La Presentation, where it receives repairs.

Afterward, the vessel moves along the south shore. Some of the Indians then advance up the Oswego River, but they halt the mission just short of where the English are positioned. The party returns to Fort Niagara and reports that no signs of English troops had been discovered. At the time, Pridaux’s force was extremely close while trying to get the boats down Oswego Falls. Nonetheless, the report grants Pouchot what he believes is a reprieve. He believes that no attack is imminent and that the English had encamped at Oswego; however, Pridaux is less than a 10-day march from the fort and making great progress. In other activity, at about this time (mid-June), Captain Pouchot, pursuant to earlier orders from Vaudreuil at Montreal, dispatches De Montigny, De Repentigny and Marin on a mission to evict the English from Ohio. The contingent, composed of 800 Canadians and Indians, depart and traverse the Niagara and Lake Erie portages. The column takes supplies and provisions that include “860 quarters of flour, 800 barrels of pork and 80 bales of merchandise.” Later when word of the mission reaches Montcalm, he remarks: “...Three little field-guns of two-pound balls, for accomplishing the fine romantic and chimerical project of ousting the enemy from the Ohio.”

June 29 1759 (Friday)–In New York at French-held Fort Niagara, a messenger arrives from the commander at Presque Isle, M. Portneuf, with news that reinforcements are en route, including 150 (French and Indians) from Detroit; about 600 Indians under M. Lintot; 100 Indians under M. Baul and about 600 or 700 are expected from Illinois and the Mississippi region. The French are gaining thousands of Indians to help preserve their posts. On this same day another courier arrives from Mackinac and brings news that and yet more, about 1,100 Indians are en route from the far distant tribes, including the reporting that 1,000 of the more distant tribes, including the Christinaux, Folles-Avoines, Reynards, Sakis, Sauteux and Sioux, which are coming under La Verandrie and Langlade Their arrival at Niagara is said to be imminent. Chabert and Pouchot, after being informed of the huge numbers expected, immediately face a major problem if the information is accurate. They begin to wonder how these Indians will be fed.

June 30 1759 (Saturday)–In New York, by this time, the French troops at Fort Machault (Fort Venango), including those who arrived subsequent to the fall of Fort Duquesne during the previous November totals about 1,000 troops and an identical number of Indians. During the following month, orders arrive to abandon the post and retire to Fort LeBoeuf and from there he troops are to move to Fort Presque Isle. The French destroy the supplies and the boats before they abandon the post. They also disable the guns and bury them. Subsequently, troops under Major Robert Stewart occupy the post. Stewart’s Virginians reconstruct the blockhouse.

July 1 1759 (Sunday)-In Pennsylvania, a party of about ten Delaware Indians arrive at Fort Pitt and deliver intelligence regarding French-held Venango (Fort Machault). The Indians report that large numbers of French troops and Indians are gathered at Venango as if making plan to launch an attack. The intelligence is accurate. The French are finalizing plans to strike Fort Pitt; however, simultaneously, the English at Fort Pitt are waiting for reinforcement before they attack Venango. In conjunction, the Indians; however, retain their usual strategy, they hold

different opinions and remain more or less in a state of indecision as to whom they will support, essentially waiting to make a definitive decision until they determine whether the French or English will prevail and then through their weight on the side of the army which is the strongest.

July 5 1759 (Thursday)- Western New York - The French at Fort La Presentation launch an attack against the English at Oswego. Captain Haldiman, had earlier been detached from the Niagara campaign and assigned duty at Oswego had arrived with the 4th Battalion of the Royal American Regiment and the 2nd Battalion of the New York Regiment. Haldiman's primary task pursuant to orders is to erect redoubts and to build a fort. The French force, under La Carne de st Luc, numbers about 1,600, including French and Indians. An English contingent led by Captain Harkaman advances about one mile from their positions and encounters the French. The two sides exchange some fire; however, Harkaman disengages and returns to the main body. On the following day, the French attack the fort, but Haldiman's troops hold positions behind a modified barricade, created by using barrels of flour and of pork. They repel the assault and drives the French and Indians away. The English sustain casualties. Captain Sowers, the attached engineer is wounded. Lt. Otter of the Royal Americans is also wounded. Haldiman reports that his force had sustained 2 killed and 11 wounded. Later, five deserters walk up to the fort. The inform Haldiman that French casualties amounted to two killed and two wounded. They also mention that the commanding officers of Oswegatchie (Fort La Presentation) and La Galette (a small fort at the rapids of the St. Lawrence River) were both wounded. Captain Benoist (La Presentation) sustains a debilitating wound to the thigh that removes him from duty for 15 months (where he remains confined to his bed). The wound terminates his service in the field for the remainder of the conflict.

July 6 1759 (Friday)-In New York at Fort Niagara, the Iroquois, commanded by Captain La Force arrives at the mouth of the Niagara River at about 1800; however, there is still no definitive information regarding the movements of the British. Later, during the evening at about 1800, while several Frenchmen are hunting pigeons in a clearing just outside the fort, some Indians strike. One man that escapes harm, rushes back to the fort to report. He exclaims that the other two men with him had been seized by Indians. Captain Pouchot dispatches a contingent under Captain Selviert (De Sevieres), with a detachment of Canadians who lead the way, upon the open plain. Just as they near the woods, the detachment is struck by a volley. Two men are wounded; however, the French return fire before moving back to the fort. Nonetheless, they are intercepted before they reach the fort and about five or six more men are seized by as they were described, "strange Indians." The English snag two Indian interpreters, Aloque and Furnace, who both speak French and at least one of the Iroquois languages. In the meantime, Pouchot orders the fort's guns to cover the retreat of the retiring contingent. English general Prideaux is able to extract some intelligence from the captured interpreters. In contrast, the skirmish ends the puzzlement of Pouchot who for the first time has a fix on the location of the English. They are knocking on the doors of his fortress. Pouchot directs the garrison to prepare for the attack; however, Prideaux makes no move to assault the fort. The appearance of the English also terminates the French pigeon hunts. In conjunction, the prisoners had been in what is described as the "edge of the desert," a piece of open ground just east of the fort. Captain La Force, regarding the skirmish notes: "We had captured or killed in this affair the Sieur Saumandre, Blois, interpreter for the Iroquois, and the son of the old blacksmith; Messrs. St. Martin and Pramont were wounded and brought into the fort." Lately, for about a month or so, Indians (Five Nations) allied with the English have been harassing the French at the fort and La Force is convinced it had been the Five Nations that launched the raid.

July 7 1759 (Saturday)--In New York, General Prideaux's force composed of about 2,000 troops and 1,500 Indian allies under General William Johnson arrives at Fort Niagra, defended by a contingent of Bearn's regiment. The French at the fort detect an Indian force along the edge of the woods and seven barges are spotted on the lake. The French fire at them and they withdraw. The fort's commander, Captain Francois Pouchot, dispatches scouts who move out in a barque to reconnoiter and upon their return, they report that a large number of boats are on the lake and many men have landed at the Little Marsh. The scouts also report that the woods close to the fort are permeated with camp fires. Pouchot immediately orders the garrison to strengthen the batteries. He also send Indian runners to Fort Little Niagara with instructions to Chabert Joncaire that if he detects English presence that he is to withdraw across the Niagara River and proceed to Chenondac (Chippewa creek). Other Indians are dispatched to Presque Isle, Le Boeuf and Venango, with each commander of the respective forts being urged to expeditiously repair to Niagara to meet the threat. In conjunction, Chabert sends two Indians, both highly trusted, a Pottawatamie and the other, a Sauteur, along with a third man, a Huron from Fort Niagara to reconnoiter the British lines at Niagara. Only one returns and he brings no intelligence of any value.

July 8 1759 (Sunday)--In New York at Fort Niagara, by this day, the English are heavily involved with expanding their entrenchments, with only some slight harassment from Captain La Force aboard the Iroquois who cruises between the mouth of the Niagara River and the Little Marsh. The Iroquois sporadically lobs a shell or two toward the English bateaux, which are carrying General Prideaux's artillery. Meanwhile, an English officer, bearing a white flag approaches the fort. The French suspiciously receive him outside the gates and after placing a blindfold on his eyes, he is led on a circuitous route to prevent him from deducing where he is heading, to Captain Pouchot's quarters. Once he is brought in front of the French commander, his blindfold is removed.

The officer delivers a surrender ultimatum to Pouchot, who immediately rejects it, saying that he does not understand English and there would be no reply. Nevertheless, Pouchot adds that he understood and he "hoped that Prideaux could never enter the fort," and that "before he made any terms with the English, he wished an opportunity to gain their esteem." Pouchot, with a touch of French chivalry invited the officer to share breakfast, which the officer accepts. Following the succinct official encounter, the pair has breakfast. Afterward, the Englishman is again blindfolded and escorted out of the fort. It is reported that the officer, thought to be Captain Blaine, had been attached to the Royal Americans. In other activity at the fort, during the afternoon, one of the Indian earlier sent out by Pouchot to reconnoiter, returns with intelligence that the English are fortifying positions at La Belle Famille, located on the east (American side of the river. Pouchot initiates some firing in that direction; however, no attack occurs. However, based on the intelligence, Pouchot redeploys some of his force at the bastion and the batteries.

In conjunction with the maneuver, Pouchot states that Chabert Joncaire, who arrived at the fort from Fort Little Niagara, deploys with about 60 men on the "platon beneath that salient in the rear of the palisade which ran into the river." There is some contradiction regarding Chabert's arrival. Neither Pouchot's journal, nor the anonymous journal make any entries on 9 July and both journals note that Chabert arrives at the fort on the 10th. Pouchot's entry on the 10th: "M. Chabert and his brother (Daniel) Joncaire arrived at noon with 70 persons, several women and Indians, three Iroquois; among the rest the chief Kaendae." Nonetheless, Chabert states that he

had arrived on the 9th. Chabert also states that on the morning of his arrival on the 9th, he had been wounded. While the English and their Indian allies (Five Nations-later Six Nations) continue to increase the threat, urgent requests had been dispatched to Francois Marie de Lemarch and Lignery on the previous day.

A force under Lignery aborts its plan to attack Pittsburgh and instead departs Fort Machault (Venango) to support Pouchot at Niagra. In conjunction, the Indians, due in great part to their disappointment in the French having built Fort Niagra, have recently (latter part of 1758) agreed to side with the English, opening the way for the British offensive; however, the English remain cautious due to the Indians' inclination to switch allegiance depending upon their perception of who will prevail. In conjunction with the rejection of the surrender demand, Prideaux initiates a siege. Later French reinforcements arrive aboard a French vessel on the 19th and more come later, on the 24th. In related activity, the Iroquois, commanded by Captain La Force, moves in close to shore near the English positions and La Force dispatches a boat toward the marsh. The Iroquois fires a few shots and the English react by slinging insults. Nonetheless, the French retire. **July 9-10 1759–In Canada**, General Wolfe's encampment in the vicinity of the Montmorency River comes under attack by Indians who bolt from the woods and initially cause some chaos. Several rangers are the first to come under assault and they retire toward Townshend's quarters and in the process the two ranger officers are both wounded and shortly thereafter, the Indians scalp about 12 or thirteen men, but a contingent of Bragg's grenadiers quartered in a barn near Townshend inject themselves into the fight and speed to also protect Townshend; however, one of the grenadiers is wounded at Townshend's quarters and another close by. Later in the day, after receiving no orders to fortify the positions, Townshend takes it upon himself to strengthen his positions to prevent a recurrence.

Townshend, concerned about where Wolfe ordered the regiment to deploy, "in companies with their front to the side the enemy could only attack," notes in his diary: "I thought it necessary not to leave the brigade liable to be attacked in the night and therefore in less than three hours I ran up a very good parapet with re-entering angles which covered the front of the two battalions the General permitted to front the accessible part of the country. I fortified likewise the front by a parapet round my house a barbette for cannon which raked all the edges of that rocky height whence the Indians could before annoy us, and I may venture to say that I not only made the camp secure but unattackable." At about the same time, an artillery officer informs Townshend, that his guns are deployed where Wolfe directed they be placed, but they are too distant and must be pulled back. Meanwhile within several hours, the fortifications are completed and the guns are redeployed.

General Wolfe, on the following morning, is informed by Townshend, that he had improved the regimental defenses; however, Townshend receive no encouragement. When Wolfe examines the little fortress during the evening, yet again, he dresses down Townshend for making the place too strong, as Townshend notes in his journal Wolfe's reaction, stating that: "I had indeed made myself secure, for I had made a fortress; that small redoubts were better than lines-that the men could not man these lines. nor sally out if they pleased. Suddenly some friction begins to emerge as Wolfe then informs Townshend the he (Wolfe) directed one battalion from Townshend's brigade and two others that had arrived earlier this day (10 July) from Orleans to deploy on the slope of the hill, facing the St. Lawrence River with their rear behind Townshend's first line. Townshend is unimpressed and concerned because the troops are now in harm's way and in

range of French artillery; however, he obeys orders. The two cannon at the little fortress are taken and redeployed near Wolfe's quarters, leaving, Townshend's brigade with no artillery. In addition, General Townshend observes French officers on the opposite bank of the river who are obviously on a reconnaissance mission and Townshend points it out to Wolfe, however the latter brushes off the possibility that it is a threat.

July 11 1759 (Wednesday)-

In New York, M. La Roche leads a 60-man contingent from Fort Niagara toward the English lines. As he departs, many other troops ignore the French officers and bolt over the palisades to join with the column. The impetuosity of the French nearly causes a major clash with the entire British force, which forms for battle; however, the fort's artillery causes the English to hold back from launching an attack. The French return to the fort following a minor skirmish in which they sustain only a few casualties. La Roche's (Captain Oliver de La Roche-Verney) zeal nearly brings about the termination of the siege. La Roche, a captain of the Marine, later becomes one of the French officers that signs the surrender document. In other activity, Kaendae, an Iroquois chief, subsequent to a recent parley, requests another with Pouchot. The French commander agrees; however, he informs the Indians that unlike the previous council, there will be no suspension of fire. Later, Pouchot holds yet another talk, when one Onondaga and two Cayugas, each blindfolded, is taken into the fort. Following very long speeches that profess no sincerity, and the presenting of wampum belts, Pouchot is told that they would abandon the cause of the English and move to La Belle Famille, where they would remain inactive. They also request that the Iroquois chief, Kaendae, along with the women and children that remain in the fort accompany them "so that no kettle (shells) should break their heads." In addition, the Indians also request that Chabert Joncaire be permitted to accompany them. It is thought that the parleys are a ruse, instigated by Sir William Johnson, to further weaken Pouchot's defenses. Nonetheless, Captain Pouchot dispatches a messenger, a soldier named Corbin to deliver a message to Captain La Force, aboard the *Iroquois*. The message: "My Dear la Force. We are holding the enemy fairly well, but he pushes ahead, and it is within 100 toises (about 425 yards) from the glaciais, where we shall begin to make it hot for him. Hold yourself ready, if possible, to give them a cannonade across the plain; you will annoy them at the back of the trenches. If you cannot, and the wind serves, go to Frontenac and learn what is happening. Report to us with the first good wind; it is the only service you can render. Otherwise await events in this vicinity; we will make our necessities known; if we require you to land I will put a white tag in a window at the rear of the house. If it is urgent, we will show both the large and small tap." Also, Pouchot notes in a post script: "Still no news from Presqu' Isle." In conjunction, La Force sails in an eastwardly direction in search of a convoy purported to be bringing supplies to the English under Prideaux; however, he fails to detect it. Afterward, he encroaches the English positions at Fort Niagara and catapults a few shells into their lines before diverting to Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario), where he arrives on the 14th (Saturday). In conjunction, on the previous day, the 13th, he passes Oswego and notes that about 3,000 English troops had been spotted there. La Force's assistance to Pouchot at Niagara has been of little value during the siege, except that by being deployed at the mouth of the Niagara, his Iroquois had compelled the British to take a circuitous route to reach their positions close to the French batteries on the western side of the fort.

July 12 1759 (Thursday)-In Pennsylvania at Venango (Fort Machault), a messenger earlier sent by Captain Pouchot at Fort Niagara arrives to inform De Lignery, the French commander, that Niagara is under siege by the English. At the time, De Lignery had been in discussions with

the Indians, whom he refers to as “his children,” thanking them for their support and informing them that on the following day, he would advance to attack Fort Pitt at Pittsburgh. Some of the Indians are opposed to the attack, particularly two Iroquois, who only recently arrived. They speak to De Lignery stating: “Our Father (De Lignery) is in too great a hurry; let us consider what we are to do.” Afterward, the Iroquois hand out strings of wampum, which injects sudden confusion among the Indians. During this unsettling debate, the news from Niagara arrives to bring a succinct termination of the debate about Fort Pitt. M. Delignery after reading the messages breaks the news, stating: “Children, I have bad news to tell you. There is a great arm of English coming against Niagara, with Sir William Johnson, who has with him all the Six Nations, and a great number of Indians that live that way have received orders to go directly to Niagara, and take you with me. We must therefore give over the thought of going down the river, till we have drove the English away from Niagara. You know the consequence that place is of to us if the English take it You must be poor, as it is stopping the road to your country. Children, be strong and support your father at this time.” In conjunction, D’ Aubry, commanding a force of about 300 French and 600 Indians afterward arrives at Venango and the combined force advances to Presque Isle, from where they advance to lift the siege. In conjunction, Francois Coulon, the Chevalier de Villiers, is second in command to D’ Aubry, the commander of the force that arrives from Illinois.

July 13 1759 (Friday)–In Canada, at General Townshend’s positions near the falls is informed by a field officer that the French, as Townshend expected, had constructed a battery. He immediately directs his force to augment the defenses of the new camp, including digging ditches for added protection to increase the chance of preserving his force once the bombardment commences. In the meantime, Townshend learns that Wolfe has departed the camp to move to the Point of Orleans and from there to the Point of Levi. Townshend, the ranking officer in camp has no orders from the commander. He hurriedly moves to the river to intercept Wolfe and once he catches up to him, he requests orders and receives the response, delivered without any sense of cordiality: “Sir! The Adjutant General has my orders-permit me Sir to ask are your troops to encamp on their new ground, or not to do it until the enemy's battery begins to play?”

Wolfe's plan seems to not include Townshend with regard to taking him into his confidence. Wolfe also seems to have convinced himself that the French foe is incapable of raising sufficient stamina to defeat his seasoned force, which is poised to bolt across the Montmorenci River and draw the French into open ground to the north and rear of the French lines; however, while concluding his perception of the weaknesses of the French, primarily insufficient number of regulars bolstered by Canadians and Indians Wolfe has not considered his disadvantages. The English army has been divided, with Monckton’s brigade on the opposite side of the St. Lawrence River at Point Levi. And the ford to his forces across the Montmorenci is several miles distant and the terrain is heavily wooded and infested with Indians. Nonetheless, Wolfe continues to complete plans to strike, but in the meantime, the French, who have been closely observing the English activity do not wait to be attacked. Montcalm has discerned that Wolfe’s strategy is flawed and his troop deployment has provided an opportunity for the French to whack him with a surprise attack.

Montcalm selects his target, Point Levi, where General Monckton’s commands and he sends a force of about 1,500 including Canadian and Indians, commanded by M. Charrier, to execute the attack. They move across the river at a point above the city and from there, they trek through the

woods, moving in two columns, under cover of darkness and as silently as possible to ensure they retain the element of surprise. While en rout the column is joined by about 500 reinforcements. The English encampment is motionless as most, except the sentinels are asleep, following an exhausting day of toiling on the defenses. Reconnaissance teams and scouts are able to move up close to reconnoiter and they confirm that the English are unprepared for the arrival of the French. Nonetheless, the sentries have not dropped their guard and they maintain a vigil, more so for sounds, than intruders due to the stark darkness. However, they are not anticipating an attack.

As the two columns begin to encroach the English camp, the troops' confidence increases as they have not been discovered. Meanwhile, the guards continue to patrol the perimeter and at the appointed times, give the signal: "All is well." The vanguard for reasons unknown loses its discipline as if in an instant as if each of the troops had been stuck by an anxiety attack. The vanguard, en masse does an about face and begins to race back to the main body, igniting pandemonium. The Canadians and Indians to the rear, apparently believing that they had been discovered and are coming under attack, blindly commence firing at the onrushing horde. The discipline evaporates and the advance is transformed into a self inflicted rout as the entire force makes a hurried haphazard retreat. However, the tragic mistake causes the French about 70 casualties, including killed and wounded that are left behind. Also, the English batteries now deployed and operational at Point Levi, opposite Quebec, at about this same time initiate their bombardments that continue during the day and throughout the night. In addition, the guns within the perimeter of General Townshend's camp at the Montmorenci join in the artillery attacks. The Lower Town sustains heavy damage due to the constant bombardments, but the damage soon spreads to the Upper Town.

July 14 1759 (Saturday)–New York, at Fort Niagara, on or about this day, the Iroquois chief, Kaendae and another, Chatacouen once again appear at the English lines and after visiting the camp, they return to Fort Niagara and inform Pouchot that General Prideaux had persuaded his Indians to remain by a promise that they would be permitted to "pillage the fort;" however, there is no evidence to support or deny whether or not such a promise was made. Nonetheless, they do remain. The Indians also inform Pouchot that the English attack will be launched in about "two or three days." In other activity at the fort, the Iroquois Indians who earlier arrived at Fort Niagara with Chabert inform Pouchot that they want to abandon the fort and repair to the west side of the Niagara River due to their great fear of the English artillery and other Indians want to join with them. Pouchot, who does not trust the Indians, eagerly approves of their departure. The Indians cross the river and head for the mouth of Chippewa Creek and once there, they confiscate the ox and cattle, which had been left there by Chabert. The animals are then driven straight to General Prideaux's camp. The English, not lately enjoying fresh meat, are elated at the sight of the cattle.

July 15 1759 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, Colonel Mercer is informed by two Indian spies that arrive this day, that a French force, composed of 700 troops, bolstered by about 400 Indians are at Venango preparing to launch an attack. The Indians also tell Mercer that the French are awaiting the arrival of about 600 additional Indians. Meanwhile, Fort Pitt had been rebuilt by about the 1st of January of this year; however, there is great doubt at the post that a major assault could be repulsed. One of the men in the garrison, John Ormsby later relates: "I made my sincere application to the Almighty to pardon my sins and extricate us from this deplorable dilemma. Our prayers were heard, and we extricated from the dreadful massacre; for

the day before the expected attack an Indian fellow arrived from Niagara, informing Colonel Mercer that General Johnson laid siege to Niagara with a formidable English army, so that the attack upon Fort Pitt was countermanded, and the French and Indians ordered to return towards Niagara with the utmost haste.”

July 16 1759 (Monday)–In Canada, outside Quebec City, the unending bombardments that have been pummeling Quebec, which have been plastering the Lower Town, on this day, score severe damage to the Upper Town. The cathedral (Notre Dame de Quebec) is struck and fires erupt, destroying some valuable paintings and causing great damage. Also, later, during the night, Indians creep into the English lines at Port Levi and snare four sentries, each of whom is scalped. In related activity, General Wolf who has been at the camp at Port Levi for some time, returns to Montmorenci Camp, where Townshend’s command is deployed. **In Germany**, the French maintain enormous pressure against Prince Ferdinand. Marshal Contades, leading the main body of his army, with the main army emerges from the basin of Minden. Contades dispatches a contingent to Petershagen to the north. Ferdinand moves southward on the following day to defy the odds and attempt to draw Contades into an open battle.

July 17 1759 (Tuesday)–In Canada, outside Quebec, a band of Indians strikes a work party of Otways 35th. Five of the troops are slain and the Indians take three scalps. Five others are wounded. In other activity, three German troops attached to the 3rd Battalion, Royal Americans desert. The deserters had initially been with the French until seized at Louisbourg where they took an oath of allegiance to the English king. Later in the day, during the evening, a French deserter arrives at the English lines.

July 22 1759 (Sunday)–In Canada, outside Quebec, General Wolfe dispatches a report to General Townshend, which details the results of the progress of the reconnaissance patrol that moved out of the 20th. The contingent had seized some Canadians, one priest and 200 women during the mission. In addition three Indians are killed and scalped. The casualties sustained amounted to two officers wounded, including Major Provost and six troops wounded. In other activity, Wolfe directs Townshend to await dusk, then dispatch Colonel Howe and his light infantry to Orleans and he is to use the 58th to redeploy it at Howe’s positions. In conjunction, Townshend in a move to distract the French, assembles a contingent, including rangers and light infantry, along with a work party to parade.

During the ruse, the French open fire from the opposite bank. Townshend maintains the ruse until about 1900. During the skirmish, one ranger officer is severely wounded after being hit in the shoulder and in the thigh. In other activity, General Wolfe had dispatched Colonel Carleton (already above Quebec) with the troops that are beyond the town, to initiate a diversionary mission to Point aux Trembles. The troops land there on this day. Some Indians are encountered, but they are driven away. Carleton also seizes several civilians and he discovers some French correspondence that clearly indicates that there is a scarcity of food in Quebec and that morale is poor.

July 24 1759 (Tuesday)–In New York, Sir William Johnson’s force initiates its most powerful bombardment of Fort Niagara since the beginning of the siege. At 0400 the guns commence firing and the fort remains under attack until 1600. French reinforcements numbering more than 1,000 from Detroit and the Ohio valley including the troops at Fort Presque Isle, are closing on Fort Niagra to lift the siege initiated earlier in the month. However, the French force is unaware of the English becoming aware of their arrival. General Johnson is totally prepared as on the previous night, the troops established defensive positions about one mile outside the fort. On this

day, when the French come upon the ambush site (La Belle Famille, known also as Bloody Run), slightly below Five Mile Meadows, no English are detected, but they are there and the entire line awaits the signal to fire. The French are first spotted while they advance along a road that runs between the falls and the fort. At about 0900, the French force under M. D'Aubrey, estimated at about 1,000 French and 600 Indians initiate their attack. The commander, M. D. Aubrey had been instructed to march down the Canadian bank of the river; however, D' Aubry advance down the east bank on the American side of the river and directly into the English lines.

Meanwhile, the English patiently wait behind their breastworks. The units include about 600 troops, attached to the British 44th and 46th regiments, along with 100 New York provincial troops, bolstered by about 600 Indians. Nearby other troops hold in the trenches in the event the French in the fort venture out to join the fight. The French fire five or six times, without receiving return fire. However, when the French arrive at close-range (about 80 yards distant). In a flash the order to fire is bellowed and the Redcoats each fire simultaneously and the thunderclap stuns the French, but the English exhibit no sympathy. As soon as the volley is fired, two more follow. And then the Redcoats, with fixed bayonets, charge to badger the French and before the French get an opportunity to reform or break, the Indians bolt from their concealed positions on the flanks and squeeze the column in a vise, with bayonets slashing from the front, while tomahawks chop from the flanks. Nevertheless, the French attempt unsuccessfully to defend their positions to forestall annihilation, but within about one hour of relentless close-quartered combat, the surviving French begin a hurried haphazard retreat toward Lake Erie, with the English in pursuit. About 120 men are captured, including D' Aubry, (wounded on the right side of his head) while the French are bolting in all directions. French casualties in the relief force, including Indians amounts to about 500. The English sustain only light casualties. In various reports, the number of casualties varies. The casualties listed here are acquired from Captain De Lancey's report which states: "We killed 200 and took 100 prisoners, five captains...and 11 subaltern officers." Meanwhile, after vanquishing the reinforcements, the English realize that Fort Niagara will soon fall.

After the victory is complete, Sir William Johnson sends a messenger, Major Harvey, to inform Captain Pouchot that his reinforcements have been defeated and that they have retreated. The English again demand surrender; however, Pouchot is skeptical. He requests evidence to validate the claim that his relief force had been routed. Johnson has no difficulty with the request. He permits one of Pouchot's officers see the French officers that had been seized. Once the facts are verified, Pouchot realizes his cause is lost. Before midnight, an agreement of surrender is agreed upon and on the following day (25th), Sir William Johnson and his victorious column marches into the fort. Shortly thereafter, the French flag is lowered and in its place, the English colors are hoisted. In conjunction, about 640 prisoners are taken with the fall of the post. In addition, about 109 nine defenders in the fort had been killed or wounded during the time of the siege. Thirty-seven men are also in the hospital when the English seize it. In contrast, the British losses on the 24th, as reported by Sir William Johnson total 63 killed and 185 wounded; however, in his reports, he states that he "could not state the number of killed, they were so scattered in the woods; but he reported 68 killed and 185 wounded in the action of the 24th."

Also, the Jesuit priest, Claude (some reports list his first name as Louis) Joseph Virot, described as being "cut to pieces" by the Iroquois is among the French fatalities. Captain de Lignery, having sustained a wound to his thigh that proves mortal, "was carried with other wounded officers to an "arbor" near Johnson's headquarters." Another prisoner (Duverger de Saint Blin)

later reports to Captain Pouchot that “the English had the hard-heartedness to abandon him (De Lignery) in a hut, alone and without help, and he died in the greatest agony, lamenting that he was leaving nearly all his family prisoners.” Also, a son of de Lignery had also participated in this action. He too had been seized as a prisoner, but he survives. Other French officers killed at Niagara include: M. Hertel de Beaulac, M. Hertel de Becancour, M. Rockloyade, M. De Richerville and Douville (separate from Douville de Saussaye). Also, some of the officers who participated in the capture of the fort and later become general officers during the American Revolution include: Charles Lee and George Clinton. There is no information on Clinton’s service there, but there was a letter from his father that congratulated George on the success at Niagara.

July 25 1759 (Wednesday)- In New York, a British force led by Sir William Johnson, successor to General John Prideaux, takes possession of Fort Niagara (at Youngstown), commanded by Captain Francois Pouchot. The seizure of Fort Niagara is a grand prize for the English. It gives the domination of the entire Upper Ohio and isolates the western posts of the French from Canada, essentially severing the supply lines of either provision or reinforcements from arriving. In addition, the victory opens Lake Ontario, giving the English an effortless path to Montreal. Without delay, once informed of the fall of Niagara, General Amherst dispatches General Thomas Gage there to take command of the late General Prideaux’s force to continue the mission as planned. Gage is under orders to embark for Montreal and en route he is to reduce a nominal French post (La Galette) at the rapids on the St. Lawrence River, prior to advancing to Montreal. In the letter to Gage, Amherst states: “Now is the time and we must make use of it.” In conjunction, earlier, a French explorer Rene (Robert) LaSalle erected a blockhouse on the Niagara River in 1679 and later during 1726 the fortifications were completed by constructing a stone fort which dominated the river and oversaw the passage routes of the fur traders. The British retain Fort Niagara throughout the American Revolution, but during 1796, upon terms of a treaty (Jay’s Treaty), the United States receives the post. Later during the War of 1812, Fort Niagra is regained by the British and held until 1815, when it again reverts back to the United States. In conjunction, after the fall of Fort Niagara, the large French force at Fort Presque Isle (Erie, Pennsylvania, where the troops gather after abandoning Fort Le Boeuf and Fort Machault, evacuate Presque Isle. Subsequently, during September 1760, the English take possession of Fort Presque Isle. At that time, Captain Samuel Miles is appointed as commander of the post.

According to the articles of capitulation agreed upon and signed on the previous night, the French are permitted to march out of the fort (26th) with their weapons and they are to be transported to New York City. They troops captured are also permitted to retain all of their baggage. However, the women and children are spared the trip. They are sent to Montreal. Sir William Johnson also provided for the sick and wounded. They are to remain in the hospital until able to travel under the care of the British and the French surgeon who is to remain. While under the protection of the British, Johnson ensures that no harm comes to them by the Indians. The prisoners are taken to Oswego under guard by a contingent under Lt. Colonel Massey. At Oswego, a contingent of the New York regiment relieves Massey. Also, after a short while following capitulation, Sir William Johnson dispatches a contingent under Lt. Francis to embark in boats to reconnoiter the area at Toronto. The detachment departs from Niagara in three boats and returns on the 30th.

Also, when the British enter Fort Niagara, to their surprise they are met by English prisoners,

including women and children. One man, David Barry of New England had been held there for 14 years (he was with a French detachment that arrived at Albany as a prisoner) and another, Edward Hoskins, also from New England had been imprisoned there for ten years. Others include John Peter (Captain Bullet's company) captured on 23 May of this year; Nathaniel Sullivan (captured on 15 September, 1758, at Potowmack, Virginia); Isabel Stockton, a Dutch girl (captured 1 October, 1757) and other too, including two brothers, Christopher and Michael Franks (captured in Bucks County) and some children, whose parents had been killed by the Indians.

July 26 1759 (Thursday)–In Canada, outside Quebec, Generals Wolfe and Murray initiate a reconnaissance mission along the bank of the Montmorenci River at 0100. The contingent that moves out includes Otway's 35th Regiment and a 350-man contingent of light infantry and rangers. Simultaneously, the 28th Regiment (Bragg's) departs on a separate mission to the east on the northern bank of the St. Lawrence River. To bolster Montmorency Camp, Wolfe dispatches two Marine companies from Point Levi. At about 1100, a force of Canadians and Indians cross from the opposite bank and establish an ambush, by working to encircle the column. Wolfe enters the trap, but he lacks artillery. He initially had two pieces, but the horses were uncooperative, prompting him to have a detachment return them to camp. The British rebound from the surprise attack and the enemy fire from both sides of the river. A battle ensues and complications develop when confusion overcomes the right wing of Otway's regiment. General Wolfe returns to camp, while Murray remains with the jeopardized regiment. Wolfe once back at camp, directs Townshend to "turn out the troops." Meanwhile, General Murray regroup's Otway's left wing and he orders a counterattack. Murray's unexpected charge instills some fear into the foe and they are driven into and back across the river. Many bodies are afterward seen floating in the river. Later, it is determined that a breastwork had been erected at the ford and that General Moncalm had dispatched reinforcements to bolster the strength the outpost. Murray's exhausted arrives back at the camp at about 1600, but there is no celebration; rather a somber mood due to the high cost of the mission, 45 killed or wounded. Captain Fletcher, Lieutenant Hamilton and Lieutenant Field are among the fatalities (mortal wounds) and Captains Mitchelson and Bell are among the wounded.

July 27 1759 (Friday)–In New York, at Ticonderoga, Major Robert Rogers is ordered by General Amherst to deploy his rangers at the Saw-mills in anticipation of intercepting the French as they retire that way. The rangers remain there without incident until 11 August when new orders arrive from Amherst, who has resumed his advance toward Ticonderoga. In related activity, General Amherst is informed of the death of General Prideaux. He immediately dispatches Brigadier General Thomas Gage to assume command. **In Canada**, outside Quebec, a runner attached to a contingent under Captain Hasen (Bragg's 28th Regiment) rushes into camp at about 0700, to seek urgent help. Hasen's troops had become surrounded by a force of about 500 Indians, while Hasen was in the process of establishing an outpost. Without delay, General Townshend assembles a force which post haste departs to relieve the beleaguered detachment. The column includes one company of the 47th (Lascelles' regiment), a contingent of the 58th (Anstruther's regiment), a contingent of the Royal Americans, commanded by Colonel Hale of the 47th and light infantry under Colonel William Howe. Townshend moves out with the column. While the reinforcements are en route, Bragg's entire regiment comes under attack by Indians and Canadians who hold positions in the woods.

Bragg orders an attack and in an instant, the regiment charges and plunges into the woods, while

under severe fire, but the English hold their fire until after entering the woods. The Canadians and Indians flee, but one Canadian fails to keep the pace. He is captured. Bragg's force is recalled from the woods at about the time General Townshend arrives on the scene. Bragg's force sustains 2 killed and 6 wounded. After interrogating the prisoner, it is determined that the enemy numbered 200 men (Canadians and Indians) and the prisoner names his leader, Boucherville. Colonel Bragg returns to camp. The regiment while returning to camp is accompanied by about 150 animals (cattle, horses and sheep). The regiment had destroyed no houses, but some of their treasure had been taken from a church. General Townshend directs the items seized in churches be returned.

July 31 1759 (Tuesday)--In Canada outside Quebec, the English fleet maintains its siege. Land-based artillery and the warships continue to pound the city, but the constant bombardments have not genuinely inflicted much pain on the defending forces, rather it has caused structure damage to the dwellings. On 31 July, Admiral Charles Saunders directs the HMS *Centurion* and two other vessels to deploy in the channel between Orleans and the Falls of Montmorenci. Two armed cutters are sent on shore "at high water" to neutralize two French redoubts and two batteries located precisely where General Wolfe and his force is scheduled to land.

At 1000, General Monckton's force, the 15th (Amherst's), the 18th Highlanders, 13 companies of the Louisbourg Volunteers and a 200-man contingent of the Royal Americans, are aboard their boats off the northwest tip of Orleans, prepared to embark upon Wolfe's signal to commence the operation. By 1100, the two armed transports move in close to shore near the redoubt and become grounded, while at about the same time, the *Centurion* is positioned opposite the French fort. The 64-guns of the *Centurion*, and the guns of the transports commence a simultaneous bombardment. The first sounds of the naval guns also signal the batteries opposite Quebec to commence fire upon the city, while General Townshend's 40 guns at Montmorenci Camp begin to pound the French works opposite the camp.

Meanwhile, Monckton's brigade, aboard their boats since 1000, row towards the beach at about 1400 and at about the same time, General Townshend orders his force to drop their baggage and tents at the second line, then assemble at the line of march to await the signal to advance, once they receive the signal from Wolfe. In addition, Colonel William Howe, is to execute a diversionary move by advancing up the Montmorency River with the 58th and his light infantry and upon orders, swing back to join with the brigades of Murray and Townshend on the left and right respectively.

Finally, at 1600, Wolfe sends the order to advance to Townshend. His brigade, along with Murray's brigade move out. As they initiate the crossing at the ford by the mouth of the Montmorency River, the grenadiers (Monckton's force) reach the opposite shore, but it is not uneventful. Even before they hit the beach, problems develop as the boats become snarled among the rocks, compelling the troops to walk some distance, all the while under terrific fire of cannon and muskets. The beleaguered troops are decimated. Nonetheless, as the troops (about 800 grenadiers) debark during a nasty rainstorm and form into squares, the situation quickly deteriorates when a contingent of grenadiers, without orders, initiates a charge that has no chance of success and jeopardizes the entire operation. General Wolfe who had been aboard one of the stranded transports, moves aboard one of Monckton's boats and lands with his force.

The grenadiers, first to debark, during a terrible rain storm and form into squares. Meanwhile, the French abandon their redoubt and move to nearby high ground. Shortly thereafter, without orders, a contingent of grenadiers initiates an impromptu and imprudent charge that lacks even a hint of discipline. The grenadiers haphazardly dash in disorder and pass through a field and without forethought they begin to ascend the slope, while the trailing forces, the 15th and 78th Regiments are just forming in the beach. General Townshend, however, has not yet touched shore with his force. Nevertheless, the grenadiers remain determined to take the crest. Undaunted by the cascading shells, the grenadiers struggle to ascend the slippery slope. All the while, the French propel shot and shell that cascade down the slopes causing many to lose their footing and tumble down upon the trailing troops. The ghastly scene becomes more gruesome as the rain intensifies and hovers above the battle and pelts the troops as they attempt to complete the ascent. More troops fall as the slopes become inundated with rain that forms mud that causes yet more troops to fall prey to the French fire descending from the breastworks. As the grenadiers come close to the breastworks, the grenadiers falter and abort the charge and form in small groups, but all confidence has vanished and there is no inclination to advance.

Afterward, the grenadiers begin a haphazard retreat, again coming under sheets of fire during their descent. Meanwhile the heavy rain has also taken its toll, making it impossible to use their soaked muskets. The grenadiers make it to the redoubt, but still, they remain in untenable positions as the French in the heights still dominate from their point-blank range. More grenadiers are quickly picked off. A contingent of Royal Americans had been sent to support the grenadiers, but they too encounter a wall of fire. General Wolfe and General Monckton become only observers of the unfolding devastation as Wolfe's special corps (Louisbourg Volunteers), which he selected from various grenadier companies, is being mauled. Unexplainably, Wolfe does not commit the remainder of Monckton's brigade, Amherst's (15th) regiment and the Fraser Highlanders (78th) to support the grenadiers. The results of the disastrous charge amount to 33 officers and about 400 men, either killed or wounded. In addition, following the repulse of the attack, the French and the Indians begin a slow descent and along the way, they scalp the dead and wounded and liquidate the latter. A contingent of the 78th Highlanders advances up the slope to terminate the barbarous behavior and they succeed in driving the scalpers away. Nonetheless, the failed unauthorized charge prevents any chance of success and increases the chances of a genuine disaster for the entire force.

At this point, the failed attack against the redoubt and the nastiness of the weather forces the English to abort the assault. In the meantime, General Townshend's force completes its crossing and advances along the beach to a point about 200 yards from Wolfe's position. Townshend sends an officer to request orders from the commander and the officer soon returns with word that the attack is aborted and a retreat is in process. Townshend is to cover the retreat. Afterward, he re-crosses the Montmorency, while under heavy artillery fire from the French. The British are ordered to retire and to the sound of the drums banging retreat, the grenadiers head for the boats. Meanwhile, the French view the retreat from the slopes as the final victory and become convinced that the British, who had sustained tremendous losses, will retire from the St. Lawrence and return to England. However, the loss, compounded by the barbarous acts inflicted upon them by the savage Indians only galvanizes the English resolve to seize Quebec. About 450-500 become casualties. British losses are prevented from reaching catastrophic numbers due to the actions of General Amherst's regiment under the command of Major P. Irving and the

Highlanders who remain undaunted despite the waves of fire, hold steadfastly to cover the retreat and prevent the French from barreling through to cause a worse rout. Townshend's brigade also receive much credit for their participation in covering the retreat. During the retreat, Admiral Saunders, orders that the two stranded transports be destroyed; however, during the operation, which is carried out expeditiously, none of the naval guns or the two brass field-pieces, aboard are carried off. The only positive to be gained from the raid is that the English realize that the particular landing site appears to be impregnable.

General Wolfe, following the debacle, issues the following order: "The check which the Grenadiers met with will, it is hoped, be a lesson to them for the time to come. Such impetuous, irregular, and unsoldierlike proceedings destroy all order, and put it out of the general's power to execute his plan. The Grenadiers could not suppose that they alone could beat the French army, therefore it was necessary the corps under Brigadiers Townshend and Monckton should have time to join them and the attack might be general. The very first fire of the enemy was sufficient to have repulsed men who had lost all sense of order and military discipline. Amherst's (15th) and the Highland Regiment by the soldierlike and cool manner in which they formed, would undoubtedly have beaten back the whole Canadian army, if they had ventured to attack in time. The loss however is very inconsiderable and may be easily repaired when a favourable opportunity offers, if the men will show a proper attention to their officers."

The English however, despite the severe setback, maintain their positions outside of Quebec, and continue to probe for weaknesses in the defenses. Nevertheless, the various reconnaissance parties are under orders, as is the entire army, from Wolfe that women and children are to be spared from any harm and anyone disobeying is subject to being executed. Nevertheless, naval vessels attack the villages when possible during daylight and nighttime operations to destroy the homes (with prior authorization) in retaliation of acts of brutality including scalping and other forms of torture that have been occurring. For the most part, Wolfe's orders include sparing houses and churches in addition to women and children. The roaming parties succeed in acquiring much fresh meat as well as poultry and some dairy products, which contradicts some French statements, including those of Francis Bigot, that the citizens in the colony had diminished their food supply and to avoid starvation, they had been forced to survive on horse meat and salt cod. Food items, however, are not the only things the English patrols acquire. Some of the more prominent women are captured during the missions, but all are unharmed and taken directly to General Wolfe's headquarters, where they receive excellent treatment. In conjunction, the captive women are afterward returned to Quebec City under a white flag and Wolfe's forethought on this act pays huge dividends as the women and their families are elated upon their return, which aids the English after the city is taken.

Summer 1759 - Colonies - In New York, at Albany, Governor Burnett holds talks with the Indians which result in a treaty. The Indians agree to cede a body of land that stretches to a width of sixty miles and lies south of Lakes Erie and Ontario (from Oswego to Cleveland) and the territory also includes the land that lies west and north of Lakes each of the previously mentioned Great Lakes.

August 1 1759 (Wednesday)—**In Canada**, outside Quebec, a French deserter arrives at Townshend's camp. He provides the English with information about conditions in the French positions. He states that large numbers had deserted, but Indians intercepted them and they winded up getting scalped and that he nearly came to the identical fate. In other activity,

Townshend's guns at Montmorency initiate a bombardment to interrupt French troops who are moving aboard the two wrecked transports in the river. In New York, General Amherst is informed that the French have abandoned Ticonderoga (Carillon) on the night of the 26th-27th and that the commander (Francois Charles de Bourlamaque) had retreated to the North toward Isle aux Noix located at the northern tip of Lake Champlain. General Amherst's advance is halted at Ticonderoga due to four French armed vessels patrolling the lake, which could destroy his flotilla. Amherst, with control of Crown Point and now Ticonderoga initiates a project to construct vessels capable of matching the French force on the lake to defend his naval vessels and provide him the necessary strength to reinstate his advance to Montreal. Simultaneously, his force at Crown Point is building a formidable fort. The vessels are completed by mid-September; however, due to the imminent approach of the Canadian winter, the campaigns of the armies in the west and the south come to a close. In the meantime, Amherst attempts to get General Thomas Gage to speed up his advance against La Galette, but here too, progress is out of reach. Nevertheless, the English, despite having gained Crown Point, Ticonderoga and Niagara, Amherst is compelled to suspend operations for the winter. The delay also prevent Amherst from linking with Wolfe at Quebec. In other activity, Brigadier General Murray is informed by some French prisoners who were captured at Dechambault above Quebec that Fort Niagara had fallen to the British.

August 7 1759 (Tuesday)–In New York on or about this day, General Jeffrey Amherst dispatches a letter to Brigadier general James Wolfe by way of Nova Scotia and the Kennebec River; however, on the day after, after concluding it would be a long delay before reaching Wolfe, he sends a copy of the letter with a small detachment led by Captain Kennedy, a relative of General Murray. Kennedy's instructions include how to deal with any Indians encountered as the detachment passes by the villages on the south shore while moving through wilderness toward the St. Lawrence. Kennedy is to promise the Indians a bountiful reward if they guide his party to General Wolfe. As anticipated by Amherst, the detachment, traveling under a white flag encounters Indians, specifically the St. Francis tribe, which is aligned with the French. Kennedy's offer of the reward is ignored and the white flag is given no consideration; rather they are seized as spies and taken directly to the French commander, General Montcalm. Afterward, Montcalm pens a letter to General Amherst, which is delivered to him on 10 September of this year, notifying Amherst that Kennedy is a prisoner at his headquarters.

August 8 1759 (Wednesday)–In Canada, outside Quebec, an Indian swims across the ford in the river and before he can cause harm a vigilant sentry intercepts him and greets him by sticking a musket into the Indian's chest, which instantly drains his heroic confidence. The Indian drops his knife, then falls on his knees to end the threat. Several interpreters attempt to communicate with him, but the Indian either does not understand or he feigns ignorance. In other activity, Colonel Braggs returns to camp, following a reconnaissance mission. The column is fired upon by inhabitants, who had concealed themselves in a house. Five troops are wounded. In yet other activity, the bodies of two Royal Marines are discovered during the morning. Both had been scalped.

August 11 1759 (Saturday)–In Canada, outside Quebec, a large working party departs Montmorency Camp to cut fascines, but when they approach the woods, Canadians and Indians are lying in wait. Steps are taken to prevent the enemy from overwhelming the flank, but before the maneuver is completed, the woods come alive and the party comes under heavy fire. Reinforcements, upon hearing the sounds of gunfire speed to assist, but the Indians retire before

the column arrives. The work party sustains 33 killed or wounded. The ambush team sustains one fatality, a Canadian. In other activity, General Wolfe receives a letter from General Murray, which contains the intelligence (letters) he confiscated, regarding the fall of Crown Point and Niagara. In conjunction, Murray informs Wolfe that during the mission he had sustained 100 casualties including killed or wounded. Two officers Captain Delaur and Major Irwin Maidand are among the latter. Also, Captain Goreham, who had led a contingent of rangers to St. Paul's, reports that the village had been burned, but in the process, seven men had been wounded. Later, during the evening, General Wolfe, based on information received from General Murray, dispatches a 200-man contingent of the 43rd Regiment (Kennedy's), commanded by Major Elliot, to intercept a French-Canadian force reported to contain about 4,000 men. Also, General Wolfe had an earlier an order that offered a reward of five guineas to any soldier who sets up an ambush in the woods and gains a scalp of an Indian, but the volunteers had not succeeded. On the night of the 10th-11th, a detachment of 18 men ventured out in the woods to get some scalps, but they are detected by an overwhelming force of about 200 Canadians and Indians that surround the party. The English attempt to defend from the house, while one man is able to make it back to camp.

Reinforcements speed to intercept the enemy, with a contingent heading to the house, while light infantry is en route to high ground to encircle the attackers. Nonetheless, the Canadians and Indians retire, but the reinforcements succeed in rescuing the besieged party. The English sustain eight casualties, either killed or wounded. The troops spot one wounded Indian. A sergeant comes upon him and strikes him in the head with his musket. Soon after, the troops of the light infantry come upon him and they relieve him of his scalp. And in yet other activity, seven Marines deployed at Point Levi, desert their positions and join with the French. In England, a new regiment, Sutherland's Highlanders, is established. The Earl of Sutherland receives command. The regiment does not receive a number designation.

September 1759–In Canada, the siege of Quebec continues. The English still unable to reduce Quebec change strategy. The Fleet executes a ruse to confuse the French. The Army redeploys at Levi's Point following abandonment of the positions opposite Quebec along the Montmorenci River. Moving a few Vessels at a time, the English succeed in getting about twenty Warships beyond the batteries and west of the city. Although the English had determined their landing site, the maneuvers which include sending some vessels downstream every morning presents an illusion that they are searching for the proper site to land the troops. The ritual always occurs without any firing by the Ships to convey a message that there probably will be no attack. All the while, French troops high atop the sheer cliffs that drop hundreds of feet, monitor the peculiar maneuvers. In conjunction, the British troops which had earlier landed and become accustomed to the horrid ways of the Indians have hardened considerably. Initially, the Indians and some French costumed as Indians raided the English positions near the batteries and easily plucked a shiny Red Coat and greeted him with the sharp knives to relieve him of his scalp, but the Rangers imbedded new tactics into their strategy which confounded the foe. The British soon began to wear a modified but unauthorized uniform. To save their scalps and instead kill the Indians, they turned their coats inside-out and took concealed positions in the thickets. This cut their losses considerably and perplexed the Indians. Thanks to the North American Rangers, more often than not, the ravaging Indians would become the recipient of a bullet before their tomahawks could relieve a trooper of his scalp.

September 10 1759 (Monday)–In New York, General Amherst receives a letter from French general Montcalm and the news infuriates him. Montcalm informs Amherst that a party under

Captain Kennedy had been seized by Indians during the previous month and that they are now held at his headquarters as prisoners. In conjunction, Amherst had sent the detachment under a white flag to deliver correspondence to Brigadier General Wolfe. General Amherst immediately moves into action to retaliate. He prepares to dispatch Rogers' Rangers to seek vengeance against the St. Francis Indians who intercepted Kennedy. Rogers receives his marching orders on 12 September.

September 13 1759 (Thursday)-In Canada, The Battle of Quebec - The French had retained hope that the English might still retire and spare the city, but on this day, that possibility is eliminated. At about 0200, during a period of pitch-darkness a flotilla led by whaleboats using muffled oars quietly glides downstream toward an obscure cove, Anse de Foulon (later Wolfe's Cove) under a moonless sky. General Wolfe has been informed of the cove by a Scotch Officer who had escaped captivity in Quebec and accompanied the expedition. To the rear, a second part of the force, the frigates and sloops, as well as the second division of troops ("300 men of the 15th, 240 grenadiers, 250 Highlanders, 200 Light Infantry, 400 of the 35th, 400 of the 60th") follows. At 0100, while the tide begins its ebbing, Wolfe departs the *Sutherland* and moves into his boat. At the same time, two lanterns, one on top of the other, appear on the main top mast, which is the appointed signal for the flotilla to move down the river. In the meantime, while Wolfe is separated from his commanders, Captain Smith (light infantry) an astute officer informs the three commanders that he had been told by the naval officer charged with leading the first contingent of boats, that if he followed orders and moved on the south side of the river, the current's force would carry the boats well beyond the landing place. The officer also states that the troops would most probably wind up beyond both the city and the batteries. Unable to communicate with Wolfe and with no time to spare, the commanders (Monckton, Murray and Townshend), aware of possible catastrophic consequences, change the orders and direct that the boats proceed down river on the south side. With the tide swiftly carrying the boats, the sailors assigned to rowing barely place their oars in the water and still some of the boats land beyond the designated spot.

As expected, a French sentry spots the vanguard of the flotilla at about 0400, but he expresses no real concern due to the anticipated arrival of supplies and merely observes the boats as the vanguard inches toward shore. The sentry challenges the lead boat which contains General Wolfe, and the officer who will lead the vanguard, Lt. Colonel William Howe, but it is also transporting an officer, Captain Fraser, who speaks fluent French. The friendly challenge is met with the response, "France, and the sentry retorts: "What regiment?" But the Englishman is prepared and responds: "The Queen's (de la reines)," and he then names a corps that is attached to Bougainville's command. The ruse works and the sentry permits the boats to resume their journey. Shortly thereafter the vanguard encounters another sentry and he like the previous guard is unaware that Bougainville cancelled the convoy. The sentry challenges the first boat and the officer, Captain Fraser, again responds in French, saying "Provision boats," then improvises saying, "Don't make a noise or the English will hear." In turn the guard, standing in close proximity to the boat fails to detect anything suspicious as he waves in the darkness to permit passage, while other guards in the area become excited as they believe provisions are finally arriving.

Unexpectedly as Wolfe's boat encroaches Anse du Foulon, no guards are there to challenge, but although the French up to this point have inadvertently been cooperative, the currents lack

cooperation and instead, cause some problems as some of the boats in the vanguard are carried beyond the landing place. Nonetheless, the troops debark in stark darkness. After landing 24 troops of the light infantry under Lt. Colonel William Howe, who earlier volunteered for an extremely hazardous but unknown mission, begin the ascent, with their weapons slung over their shoulders. The danger was not understated. About 200 feet of near impenetrable brush stands between the single file column on the beach and the top of the cliff; however, the diversionary fire from the naval squadron continues to distract from the English encroachment of the French camp. Wolfe is acutely aware that if the vanguard is discovered, the entire force might be thrown back to the boats. Nonetheless, the light infantry volunteers overcome the obstacles and reach the top by just about dawn. In the meantime, once the troops of Monckton and Murray are debarked, the boats return to embark Townshend's force.

Meanwhile another segment of the assault-force, holds at Point Levis, poised to cross the Montmorcency River when the signal is given. All the while, English artillery fires against Quebec as a diversionary tactic to keep the French off-guard. Shells propelled from the artillery, east of the city begin to crash upon the French, while the fleet which is widely stretched along the river initiates a colossal bombardment. The French positions are not greatly affected, but the enfilade prompts many civilians to seek refuge within the city itself. By this time, the volunteers under Captain William Delaune, remain undiscovered, while they peers at the feint images of the camp, under a dim glow of the lamps in the tents. The French contingent posted there to guard the route has recently been thinned as many of the Canadians have some have gone home to harvest their crops. And those who remain are not on alert and in fact, despite the thundering bombardment, the French Commander remains asleep, but not for long. The Redcoats deliver a wake up call.

The French, stunned by the appearance of the English attempt to mount enough force to drive the Highlanders back to the beach, but to no avail. The Redcoats anchor themselves atop the slopes and signal the troops on the beach to join them. Meanwhile, a contingent under French captain Vergor (Louis Dupont Duchambon de) is driven back and Vergor sustains a wound in the leg. However, Vergor, reportedly a coward, shows only heroism as he stands and fires, while his troops flee towards the gates of the city. At about the same time, Wolfe receives the signal that the attack is on schedule at the top of the cliff and he gives the succinct order: "Advance"! The troops need no further prodding. They begin to bolt to the path and in a flash there seems to be an interlocking chain of Redcoats ascending the path from the beach to the top.

The English regroup and prepare to advance to initiate the battle which will seal the fate of Canada. While the French mount their troops to repel the invaders, even more English troops are closing on the cove. Slightly after dawn, many of the British are atop the slope and positioned to sprint to the Plains of Abraham, the immediate pathway to the entrance of the city. Meanwhile there in non-stop activity with the boats, which are debarking troops, then speeding away to pick up the troops of the second division. At the same time it becomes obvious that the French guns are active and firing at the boats in the rear and the guns are bombarding Holmes squadron. Undaunted the crews of the boats disregard of the incessant fire to continue picking up the second division troops and those under Colonel Burton on the opposite bank who have been waiting for the call. Amazingly, the English maintain their discipline during the pandemonium in the water and above the beach and they succeed in getting 4,500 men from the beach to positions

in front of the Plains of Abraham by about sunrise.

By this time, the sparse defense has been shattered, leaving the route fully accessible. At about this time, the clouds open and a rainstorm begins, but unlike the previous trek, the British hold solid ground and will not revert to retreat. By about 0500, the assault troops and some light artillery are above the slopes, but their crimson coats are not yet visible to the French, but that changes in a short while. At about dawn, Montcalm hears the faint sounds of gunfire west of the city, which is not where he had anticipated an attack. Shortly thereafter, a mounted soldier gallops into Montcalm's position with the disturbing news of the British closing against the city. Montcalm expeditiously reacts by directing the battalions to cross over the bridge at the St. Charles River and advance to positions west of the city to meet the threat at the Plains of Abraham. At about 0700, Montcalm, the French commander, peers across the terrain and clearly sees several rows of crimson-garbed infantrymen as they form for battle under the wandering sounds of the bagpipes. Silently, the troops hold the lines, their muskets loaded and their bayonets fixed.

All the while, the suspense builds on both sides while the anxiety intensifies. Wolfe, although having succeeded in getting to the front of the fortress, still has concerns about the forces of Bougainville's to his rear and as daylight emerges, Montcalm realizes that he is not facing a bold contingent; rather an entire army has eluded his defenses to reach striking distance of the city. Montcalm requests artillery (30 pieces) from Montreal, but the commander (Ramesay) refuses the request, claiming they were needed to defend the city, but he agrees to send 3 pieces, which essentially extends the life of Wolfe's command on the plateau. Meanwhile troops from Beauport are speeding to the city, but some those from the left side of the camp fail to arrive. Montcalm, surprisingly, holds a war conference and rather than making a more cautious decision to delay until he can fight on his terms with an advantage, he decides that the English must be engaged immediately, despite not having sufficient reinforcements, before Wolfe can be reinforced. In contrast, Wolfe had favored drawing out the French rather than initiating a siege, while his forces only possess two days rations, and Montcalm's strategy also aides Wolfe who otherwise might be coming under harassing attacks on the flanks during the night if the English had been compelled to establish night quarters. However, the battle is imminent and the fate of Canada hangs in the balance.

Meanwhile, the English are formed to meet any French attack as they stretch from the right wing at a point on the heights directly above the St. Lawrence, the positions of only one platoon of the 28th Regiment, which anchors the chain from left (Monckton) to right (Murray), the 35th (Otway's), three companies of Louisbourg Grenadiers, followed by the main body of the 28th (Bragg's), the 43rd Kennedy's), 47th Lascelles, Frasers' Highlanders (78th) and the 58th Regiment (Anstruther's). Wolfe's line crosses over the road that leads from Sillery to Quebec at a point where the Highlanders link with the 58th. Wolfe reinforces his position there with his heaviest artillery, a single light field gun. Wolfe's left flank lies near another road, the one leading from Sainte Foy to Quebec, but it is beyond the line of the 58th's flank. Wolfe plugs the spot with the 15th regiment to prevent the French from collapsing the left flank. Meanwhile Wolfe establishes a protective line to protect his rear by deploying the 2nd Battalion, 60th Regiment and the 48th Regiment of Foot on the left and right respectively, in scattered positions along the line. Wolfe takes the 3rd Battalion, 60th Regiment and posts it to the right rear in order

to preserve communications with his rear and lastly, Lt. Colonel Howe's light infantry moves into the thicket well beyond the rear in the event Bougainville's forces from Cap Rouge arrive. Wolfe's generals, James Murray and Robert Monckton hold the left and right respectively, while George Townshend holds command of the reserve. Wolfe, however, is not in the background. He positions himself with Monckton on the right.

While the English are deploying, the French are also arranging their formations and by 0900, the line is established about 600 yards from the English. Montcalm's right is held by one battalion of Canadian militia, posted on the road leading to Sainte Foy and from there, extending to Montcalm's left, the first unit is the Bearn Regiment, followed by the La Sarre Regiment. The chain continues with the regiments of Guienne and of Languedoc on opposite sides of the road leading to Sillery, followed by the Roussillon Regiment and to its left, the line is anchored by one battalion of Canadian militia; however, Montcalm also has a huge number of Indians and Canadians on his far right and far left who rush forward and draw a new skirmishing line in front of the main French line. The latter (Canadians and Indians) light the fuse and as they advance they are provided with cover on the flanks and by bushes to their front. Sharpshooters commence fire and a line of skirmishers advance from the English positions to neutralize the pressure; however, it build and Wolfe's left flank where General Townshend is posted, sustains heavy fire and alarming casualties.

Townshend calls upon the 2nd Battalion. 58th regiment to stabilize the line and prevent the collapse of the left flank. Elements of the 58th advance to evict the French who had taken positions in some houses near the road, while others bolster the 15th Regiment. All the while, Wolfe remains confident and undaunted by the French progress against the flank. During the melee, the light infantry moves forward to augment the 15th and correct the irregularity of the line in its sector. Although by this time, the action is still in the preliminary stages, the rear-guard and about one-half of the reserve is engaged. In the meantime, Wolfe's right flank fares better due to the inability of the French to maneuver around flank, lessening the effectiveness of the French sharpshooters.

While the English defend their flanks, the French commit their entire artillery contingent, the three guns acquired at Montreal, while the English return fire with their sole gun at the Sillery Road, with the latter delivering more effective fire; however the artillery duel is short-lasting as the French are preparing to launch the main charge to dislodge Wolfe's line, which to the French, appears passive and pensive as the entire line remains motionless, giving the appearance of a huge continuous red ribbon stretching across the plain. However, just as the French troops begin to bellow as they rush forward, the British spring from their prone positions as they observe the approaching blue wave, with seasoned regulars holding the center, flanked by the Indians and Canadians.

As the French reach a point about 200 yards from the English positions, they commence fire, but due to the distance, it is ineffective and the British refrain from returning fire. Meanwhile, the Canadians after delivering their volley, pause to reload, while the regulars maintain their pace, anxious to destroy the English line. Curiously, the French are unable to draw fire from the English, which inflates their confidence. Meanwhile, the Canadians who always reload while prone on the ground, find it difficult to catch up with the regulars who continue to close, but still,

as if paralyzed at the sight of the massive force approaching them, the British refuse to return fire. The French, meanwhile are rejoined by the lagging Canadians and by then, they are close enough for the English to describe their uniforms, white coats, with attractive blue and scarlet facings. As they move even closer, the English are able to see the metal buttons on the uniforms as well as the accessory items. Nonetheless, the British hold their fire, while the French prepare to crash through the passive line, unaware that Wolfe has ordered that no is to fire until he gives the signal.

Soon after, the French reach a point about fifty yards from the British defensive line, but still, the Redcoats stand rigid as if the line is manned by a legion of scarecrows dressed in British uniforms. During this period, Wolfe had been wounded, but he wraps his wrist with his handkerchief and remains in control of the line. Within seconds, the French are within thirty-five yards of their objective and in their minds, close to liquidating the insolent invasion force, when in an instant, the battle is settled. As the French cross the pre-designed point (35 yards), General Wolfe gives the order to fire. The Redcoats instantly become animated and a solid wall is formed. The front line snaps to one knee, while the second line raises its muskets and in an instant, both lines fire in unison and the volley is so well coordinated, it seems as if only one gargantuan weapon had been unleashed. Suddenly, the fine uniforms of the french are no longer in sight as the English are only able to see a huge wall of black smoke. Meanwhile, in quick motion, the British reload to prepare to resume firing when the French emerge from behind the smoke to continue their attack. The British remain in place, unaware of what the smoke is concealing, but they hear horrid sounds of the voices of men who are screaming. Soon after, the smoke clears and the British are poised to fire a second volley, but to their astonishment, there is no formation. The smoke had concealed a gruesome battlefield scene that displays a sea of carnage and explains the horrid sounds they had been hearing. The French had been at such close-range, that nearly every musket ball fired hit a target. The field is permeated with dead and wounded Frenchmen and some small groups of survivors.

General Montcalm on the French side of the dense wall of smoke observes his army fall victim to one staggering blow. Although stunned, he is able to maintain his composure and presence of mind, to move amongst his vanquished force in a vain effort to restore some order to enable him to regroup; but the English provide no reprieve. Wolfe again orders his force to fire and just as the volley is underway, Wolfe's Redcoats advance with fixed bayonets to seal the victory and due to the thoroughness of the English volleys, the only obstacles between the British and the gates of Quebec City are a small number of sharpshooters that have escaped disaster by being posted in the woods.

General Wolfe, at the front with the Louisbourg Grenadiers and the 28th Regiment leads the attack; however, one of the French sharpshooters wounds him. Wolfe, sustains a wound in his groin; but he ignores it and remains in the saddle, leading the charge against the fleeing French, when yet another more deadly shot strikes him in the lungs. Still unwilling to surrender to his wound, he attempts to take a few steps, but he staggers and asks for help from a nearby officer, saying: "Support me. Support me, lest my gallant fellows should see me fall." He is carried to the rear, but the troops are so involved with the chase that very few are even aware that Wolfe is wounded and knocked out of action. At nearly the same time, General Monckton at the head of the Lascelles' regiment (47th) sustains a severe wound that knocks him out of action. Wolfe's

aide-de-camp rushes to locate Townshend and the latter bolts from the left flank to assume command. Nonetheless, the pursuit continues uninterrupted, but some pesky sharpshooters continue to hinder the operation.

The 35th (Otway's, later Royal Sussex), the 28th (Bragg's), dubbed the "Slashers," the 47th (Lascelles'), and the Louisbourg Volunteers, seemingly cheering and yelling in unison continue the charge clearing the field with the points of the bayonets, while the 78th Highlanders, supported by the 58th (Anstruther's), finish the dislodgement of the French from the field. French artillery in front of the gates pummels the 47th and 58th, halting their progress. Confusion begins to emerge, but Townshend is able to get them regrouped. Meanwhile, the English find that in addition to the ongoing resistance, Bougainville's force has arrived from Cap Rouge to threaten the rear, while the Highlanders, continue to advance, armed only their broadswords, sustain casualties when they reach positions close to the city's gates and become targets of other sharpshooters posted outside the gates. In the meantime other regiments arrive to handle the sharpshooters for the Highlanders. The Canadians and the Indians, positioned in the thicket also begin a hurried retreat, but they too become the prey; however, once caught, they receive no mercy. Instead, the English avenge the deaths of the grenadiers who had recently been scalped on the slopes and for the horrors inflicted upon the English women and children at Fort William Henry (August 1757). During the fighting on the Plains, the French shoot the English colors bearer and the colors fall to the ground; however, Lt. Arthur St. Clair retrieves the flag and holds it aloft until the field is cleared of the enemy.

The French lose the ability to raise any further assistance and they too have lost their commander. General Montcalm is mortally wounded during the chase, but similarly to Wolfe, he pays no attention to the severity of the wound and remains on his horse until after he enters the city. Women who see him arrive can not help seeing the blood on his white uniform, but he attempts to calm them saying: "It is nothing, nothing. Don't stress yourselves over me, good people. At about the same time, he is taken off his horse and carried into the home of a surgeon; however, Montcalm is beyond medical help. After the doctor explains that he has only a short while to live, Montcalm responds: "So much the better. I shall not see the surrender of Quebec." During the fierce struggle two French regimental commanders, General Senezergues (LaSarre) and General Fontbonne (Guyenne) are also mortally wounded. Montcalm dies prior to dawn on the 14th and his demise increases the anxieties and fear of the citizens, who anticipate English cruelty. Meanwhile, General Wolfe, falls into at least semi-consciousness due to his mortal wound, while some officers continue to remain at his side. One of the officers observing the field excitedly mentions aloud, "How they run," but before he can speak further, General Wolfe, emerges from his state of unconsciousness and inquires asking: "Who runs?" And he receives the response: "The enemy, Sir, they give way everywhere." Wolfe remains coherent and issues an order: "Go one of you to Colonel (Ralph) Burton and tell him to march Webb's regiment down to the Charles River to cut off the retreat from the bridge." After completing the order, General Wolfe rolls over on his side and again speaks, saying: "Now, God be praised, I will die in peace." They were his final words. He died soon after praising God for the victory.

Back in the city, panic is becoming contagious and with the commander-in-chief on his death bed and his second in command having also sustained a fatal wound, there is no order. Many of the citizens are fleeing in an attempt to reach the St. Charles River to escape the English, but

those already across at the opposite bank begin yelling to burn the bridge of boats to prevent passage by the British which would give them a clear run to Beauport. Only the clear thinking of some officers prevents any attempt to burn the bridge, which would have trapped everyone who remained on the opposite bank. In the meantime, while there is confusion amongst the leaders, Governor Vaudreuil, his whereabouts prior to the battle until now had been a mystery, is also uncertain of what action to take. He convenes a council of war, and the others in attendance apparently share his indecision. A man is sent to attempt to get direction from General Montcalm. The general, although near death, still commands his faculties and composure. He gives Vaudreuil three options, "retreat up the river, to fight again, or to surrender the colony." Without too much contemplation, Pierre Vaudreuil (Pierre de Rigaud de Vaudreuil de Cavagnial) at about 2200, orders the army to retreat. Without needing any further orders, the French fly out of the city, without looking back and in a disorganized utterly unprofessional display, they expeditiously retire to the post of Jacques Cartier about thirty miles up the St. Lawrence River. The abandonment of the city unfolds so quickly that the troops that remain as a garrison receive succinct instructions, to capitulate once the provisions are expended. In the meantime, General Montcalm, who is left behind, receives the last Sacraments of the Church and at about 0400 on the following day (14th), the French commander succumbs.

Initially there is no one capable of building a coffin for Montcalm; however, the "general overseer" at the convent, an older man, named Michel, gathers debris from the bombardment and he is able to build a crude wooden coffin. It was noted that Michel had tears streaming down his face during his unpleasant task. A description of the somber scene had been captured for posterity: "Not a drum was heard, –nor a funeral note. No gun was fired, –not a bell tolled. Men and women, wandering dazed among the ruins, fell into line with the little procession that bore the dead soldier from the house of the surgeon Arnoux to his burial in the chapel of the Ursulines. Two little girls stealing unnoticed into the church, stood by his grave, while by the flare of torches, the body of the hero was lowered into a hole in front of the altar, made by the bursting of a shell. The service for the dead was chanted by three priests. The quivering voices of Esther Wheelwright and her sister nuns were heard in response, then sobs, repressed through all the horrors of the siege, burst forth."

Esther had been seized by Abenaki (Abenaki) Indians during August 1703 (10th) at Wells, Maine when she was about ten years old. She was the daughter of Colonel John and Mary Snell Wheelwright who had ten other children. At the time, France and England had been at war since August of the previous year. During the devastating attack, 39 persons, including children had been either killed or taken captive. Esther's father continued without success to gain her freedom; however she apparently did not want to return. After becoming a Catholic, Esther took her final vows on 12 April 1714 to become an Ursuline nun, with the name Sister Esther-Marie Joseph de l'Enfant Jesus.

Although the English prevail, their situation remains precarious because of Bougainville's superior numbered force in the rear of General Townshend, who succeeded in command following the death of General Wolfe; however, Townshend acts decisively and unleashes two battalions, the fresh 48th, followed by the 35th. Fortunately, Bougainville did not immediately strike Townshend's rear, buying him some time to reform his battalions into line and providing him an opportunity to deploy two artillery pieces, which commence firing in synchronization

with the 48th and 35th Regiments action. Bougainville is compelled to retire. Once the English halt pursuit, Townshend immediately directs his forces to erect entrenchments. The victory did not come without a heavy price. The Highlanders sustain the highest casualties, followed by the other units (15th, 58th and 2nd Battalion of the 60th Regiment) on the left flank who became recipients of the sharpshooters sniping. Total casualties including both flanks and the remainder of the force amount to about 630, killed and wounded, including officers and enlisted men.

General Townshend refuses to relax his forces while the danger still lurks. The French under Bougainville outnumber the English and there is considerable concern that he might join with the forces under De Levis to increase the chances of a disaster. The troops continue to work on the trenches and erect them closer to the city. The English work to force the city to surrender before the French can snap out of their despair. On the 17th, English warships move close to the Lower Town, while a column of ground troops moves across the field at the St. Charles River and marches to the gates of the Lower Town. The French order the drums to sound the alarm calling out the militia, but the Canadians ignore the call, forcing the French to hoist a white flag. An emissary moves out of the fort to initiate talks and he attempts to buy some time; however, General Townshend is not interested in any of the French proposals. He responds unambiguously by telling the messenger that the city has until 1100 to surrender and the refusal to capitulate would ignite an immediate attack to take the city by force.

The representative returns to Quebec and delivers Townshend's ultimatum to Ramesay, who convenes a council of war where it is agreed to surrender the city. Townshend's instincts and his fear of the French regrouping to launch a counter attack proves accurate and his entry into Quebec on the following day (18th), is none too soon. A contingent of French cavalry arrives with provisions and informs Ramesay that reinforcements including De Levis' command is en route. At the time the cavalry enters the city, the surrender papers are still en route to Townshend. Later, on the 19th, De Levis departs Jacques Cartier, but he soon discovers that he is too late to save the city.

In the meantime, the English are anxious to quickly stabilize the situation within the city. A contingent of soldiers on the evening of the 18th, takes control of the city's gates on the land side, while a contingent of seamen under Captain Sir Hugh Palliser (Later lord of the Admiralty) debarks at the Lower Town and secure the gates there. In conjunction, although the Royal Artillery had played a key part at the Isle of Orleans, the participation at this battle on the Plains of Abraham (13th), had been minor. Only fifty men and one gun under Captain Lieutenant Yorke had fought on the Plains. The remainder of the force had been across the river at Point Levi awaiting orders to bombard Quebec. Nonetheless, the fifty men and their gun accompany the grenadiers and General Murray when they entered Quebec on the following day to take possession of the city.

Just prior to his death, Montcalm had requested that the victorious English afford his Frenchmen, who had so valiantly fought, fair treatment. His statement in part: "...Do not let them perceive that they have changed masters. Be their protectors as I have been their father." Montcalm is buried in the Ursuline Convent at Quebec. After Montcalm had died, a nurse, Eleanor Job, known as "Good Mother Job," to the troops is selected to prepare the Marquis Montcalm's body for embalment. Eleanor, the widow of one of the gunners of the Royal Artillery had been in the

field during the battle as the head nurse of the “flying hospital.” Eleanor, having lost her husband, returns to her home, however, there are no monuments to her memory, nor even a pension. Eleanor Job, after her return, lives as a pauper in the parish of St. Giles for about fifty years. She dies at the age of 105 on 17 September, 1823.

The Marquis Montcalm’s opponent, General Wolfe, is transported across the sea and returned to England. Subsequently, a monument is erected at Quebec in honor of the commanders of each side and in solemn simplicity it merely states: “**WOLFE AND MONTCALM.**” Also, a British officer, Moses Hazen, of Haverhill, Massachusetts becomes seriously wounded at the battle for Quebec. He had earlier served in various campaigns, including Crown Point and Louisbourg (1758) as an officer in the British army, however, at Quebec he is serving with Roger’s Rangers. Subsequent to the close of hostilities, Hazen remains loyal to the Crown and during the initial days of the American Revolution, the British use Hazen as one of their spies. Nevertheless, he switches to the American cause and later is appointed a brigadier general.

After the surrender of the city, General George Townsend sends a letter, undated, but thought to have been penned on 20 September, to Secretary of State, William Pitt, which states in part: “I should not do justice to the admirals and the naval service, if I neglected this occasion of acknowledging how much we are indebted for our success to the constant assistance and support received from them, and the perfect harmony and correspondence which have prevailed throughout all our operations; in the uncommon difficulties which the nature of this country, in particular, presents to military operations of a great extent, and which no army of itself can solely supply; the immense labour in artillery, stores, and provisions; the long watchings and attendance in boats; the drawing up our artillery by the seamen, even in the heat of action. It is my duty, short as my command has been, to acknowledge, for that time, how great a share the navy has had in this successful campaign.”

Admiral Sir Charles Saunders Vice-Admiral Saunders selects Captain James Douglas to deliver the momentous news to the king. Douglas is accompanied by Brigadier General Townshend and Lt. Colonel Hale. Once news of the reduction of Quebec reaches England, the king again appropriates money for the purchase of a sword for each of the officers who carried the news. King George II, also knights Captain Douglas. Lt. Colonel receives command of a regiment of dragoons. Meanwhile, back in Canada, Admiral Saunders is no longer threatened by a French fleet. He orders the ships of the line, under the command of Rear Admirals Charles Holmes and Philip Durell, to return to England. Saunders remains for a while, but prior to the arrival of the Canadian winter, he embarks on 18 October for home. Saunders’ flag is aboard the HMS *Somerset*, however, the HMS *Devonshire* and the HMS *Vanguard* also embark. Those naval forces that remain, come under the command of Admiral Lord Colville. While en route to England, just as they encroach the English Channel, Admiral Saunders is informed that a French fleet is being chased by Admiral Hawke. Saunders, charts a new course and sails with his three ships toward Quiberon Bay to bolster Hawke, but it become unnecessary. Prior to joining Hawke, word arrives that Admiral Hawke had won a tremendous victory over M. De Conflans. Saunders then sails to Portsmouth.

In conjunction, General Charles Townshend’s actions subsequent to the death of General Wolfe have often been minimized; however, had the French prevailed, Townshend most certainly would have received eternal blame for the loss; however, his leadership from the time he

assumed command had been extraordinary. With Wolfe fatally wounded and Monckton totally debilitated, he was under enormous pressure, yet he restored order, rallied the troops, commanded the last phase to the gates of the city and simultaneously refused to bend under the pressure of a superior force to his rear. Consequently, his steady confidence, the front was totally cleared and the enemy to the rear was forced to flee. His victory had not been accidental. Nonetheless, the death of Wolfe overshadows Townshend's outstanding leadership during his short stint as commander. Also, Lt. Silas Newcomb (later brigadier general during the American Revolution) participates in the campaign to seize Quebec.

September 13 1759 (Thursday)–In New York, Captain Robert Rogers receives orders from General Amherst to repair to Canada to launch a raid in retaliation for the St. Francis Indians' seizure of a British party under Captain Kennedy, which had been traveling under a white flag. Amherst's orders, issued at Crown Point: "You are this night to set out with the detachment as ordered yesterday, viz. of 200 men, which you will take under your command, and proceed to Misisquey Bay, from whence you will march and attack the enemy's settlements on the south-side of the river St. Lawrence. in such a manner as you shall judge most effectual to disgrace the enemy, and for the success and honour of his Majesty's army. Remember the barbarities that have been committed by the enemy's Indian scoundrels on every occasion, where they had an opportunity of shewing their infamous cruelties on the King's subject, which they have done without mercy. Take your revenge, but don't forget that those villains have dastardly and promiscuously murdered the women and children of all age, it is my orders that no women or children are killed or hurt. When you have executed your intended service, you will return with your detachment to camp, or to join me wherever the army may be." Major Rogers departs this day; however, according to Amherst's plans to keep the mission secret, Rogers' public orders have him traveling on a completely different route, while his real orders direct him to advance directly to St. Francis. In conjunction, ironically, the initial intended recipient of Amherst's letter, General Wolfe is killed this day, while the English are seizing Quebec and General Montcalm who had been holding the English party as prisoners is also killed this day while defending against General Wolfe's victorious forces.

September 13 1759–6 February 1760--In New York at Fort Edward, Major Robert Rogers, subsequent to dusk, departs with a force of 200 men en route to Canada to strike the French in retaliation for the latter having seized a British party under Captain Kennedy, which had been traveling under a white flag. The column sustains some tragedy on the fifth day out, when an accidental explosion of gunpowder injures Captain Williams of the Royal Regiment. Due to his burns and the injuries of a few others wounded in the blast, Rogers directs Williams and the others to return to the fort. However, others who are sick also return, reducing Rogers' force by 40 men. Williams protests and he wants to continue the march, but Rogers insists that he return. Subsequently, on the 22nd day on the march after leaving Crown Point, the rangers, accompanied by a small detachment of Pequawket Indians, under Chief Philip, reach positions near the village of St. Francis, however, they are compelled to cross the St. Francis River at a point about 15 miles above the village where it is five feet deep, with a menacing fast-moving current. The rangers cautiously enter the river, one at a time and lock arms to form a human chain, which succeeds in holding. The entire contingent crosses safely and the only losses are a few muskets. Once on the opposite bank, the rangers resume the march and arrive at the village.

Rogers, soon after, gets a bird's eye view, seen from high in the air above the village, when during the evening, he climbs a tree to peer at his target. By this time, some others, suffering

from exhaustion or other ailments had also been detached and ordered to return back to Crown Point, reducing his force to 142 men, including officers. At about 2000, Rogers and two others, Lt. Turner and Ensign Avery creep into the village to gather some intelligence prior to launching an attack. Rogers observes the St. Francis Indians engaging in some type of celebration, which most probably permitted the rangers to complete their mission without being discovered. They return to the camp at about 0200 on the following day. However, Rogers does not take time to rest.

At 0300, the rangers move closer to the village at a point about 500 yards out. The rangers then remove their packs, form their line of attack and shortly thereafter at about one-half hour prior to dawn, while the Indians are still asleep, the rangers charge into the village from three separate directions. Rangers penetrate the right, left and center simultaneously. They strike enthusiastically and swiftly, so much so, that the Indians are unable to find time to react or even to raise their weapons. The rangers liquidate all warriors in sight and of those who break for the water, about 40 rangers are in close pursuit. Some of the Indians make it to boats, however, more devastating fire from the rangers sinks the boats and eliminates the Indians. After about one-half hour of incessant fire, just slightly after dawn, the rangers underscore their visit by setting nearly all the houses on fire. Three of the houses that contain corn are spared, but the rangers carry off the corn for themselves. As the houses burn, of those Indians, who attempted to conceal themselves in the cellars or lofts, many are consumed by the flames. While moving through the village, the rangers count about 600 scalps which are hanging from the houses and of those, most had been the scalps of the English.

By about 0700, the devastation is complete and the village has been transformed into burning debris. According to Rogers' report, about 200 Indians are killed during the raid and it is reported that the priest in the village had also perished. The rangers, in addition to seizing the corn, also carry off 20 of the women and children of the village. After getting away from the village, Rogers checks on his contingent. One man, a Stockbridge Indian is the only fatality. Six men are slightly wounded and Captain Ogden had sustained a serious wound; however, he continues with his duties. Rogers after questioning the prisoners learns that a force of about 399 French, bolstered by some Indians are at a place about four miles down the river and Rogers had learned that the French had destroyed his boats. It is decided that with the French on their trail, the only route to safety would be to move toward No. 4 on the Connecticut River.

Rogers leads the column on an 8-day march, but by then exhaustion was beginning to overcome some and their provisions are nearly exhausted. At a place close to Ampara Magog Lake (Lake Memphremagog) located at the border of Vermont with Quebec Province. Rogers concludes that it will be best for survival of the contingent if it separates into smaller units. Each small detachment, accompanied by guides, resumes the march with instructions to converge at the Amonsook River, which flows into the Connecticut River about sixty miles from Number 4 (Massachusetts, Later New Hampshire). Rogers had earlier sent a dispatch, while near Misisquey Bay, to Crown Point requesting that provisions and supplies would be sent there. Rogers' messenger makes it Crown Point in nine days and the supplies are immediately sent to the selected place; however, the officer with the supplies, Lt. Stephens, remains there only two days, then departs about two hours before the arrival of Rogers. Once Rogers sees the camp fire, he realizes that his provisions had gone. He fires his weapon to signal the party with the provisions;

however, Stephens, believing the fire to be from the French, continues moving back to Crown Point. He is later court martialed for his actions. Meanwhile, during Rogers' return to Crown Point, he releases 15 of his captives, but five (two boys and 3 girls) remain with the rangers under the care of Major Rogers. In an unexpected incident, the rangers also rescue five English prisoners that had been held captive in the village. Rogers takes the prisoners to No. 4, the frontier town, where they find an acquaintance, Mrs. Johnson, who at one time had been held there as a captive. In addition to the prisoners and the rescued English captives, the rangers save the bell at the Catholic chapel, but they do not preserve it for a new chapel; rather, they carry it off.

Two days after the rangers break into small detachments, Ensign Avery's party appears to the rear of Rogers. The French strike Avery's group and capture seven, but of those, two men escape and join Rogers on the following day. In the meantime, the remainder of Avery's group, including Avery, rejoin Rogers' party, which advances to Cohase Intervales. Rogers leaves Avery's and his party with Lt. Grant, while he and Captain Ogden, along with one Indian boy board a small raft and move down the river and find friendly territory at Wattockquithey Falls. From there, they reach a point near No. 4 on the following day. Shortly after reaching land, with the help of a lumber party, Rogers' party reaches the fort. Soon after, Rogers arranges for shipping provisions by canoe back to Lt. Grant at Cohase. They arrive in four days, ten days after Rogers separated from Grant. Two days after arriving at No. 4, Major Rogers leads a contingent of provision-laden canoes back up the river to bring relief to any of his party still trying to work their way to No. 4. Later, back at No. 4, Major Rogers receives a letter from General Amherst, in response to the letter sent to Amherst from Rogers on 5 November. Subsequently, Major Rogers sends a report to General Amherst and after receiving it, Amherst orders him to return to Crown Point by way of Albany. Rogers remains in Albany until 6 February, 1760.

The French records of the raid had been logged in a journal of the army of Montcalm. It is as follows: "Towards the fore part of October, a detachment of about 200 men of Mr. Amherst's army, headed by Captain Rogers, having had the boldness to traverse a pretty extensive tract of country covered with timber, succeeded, under cover of the surprise, in burning the Indian' village of St. Francis. M. de Bourlamayne was fully advised of his (Rogers) march; he had caused the removal of the canoes which Rogers had been obliged to abandon beyond Isle aux Noix, and expecting him to return by the same route, had him watched, at the passage, by a strong detachment of Canadians and Indians; but Rogers had anticipated all that, and had, in consequence, resolved to reach Orange by another way. He could not however escape the pursuit of a party of 200 Indians who rushed to vengeance. Want of provisions rendered it necessary for him to divide his force in small platoons, in order more easily to find subsistence. They massacred some forty, and carried off ten prisoners to their village, where one of them fell victim to the fury of the women, notwithstanding the efforts the Canadians could make to save them."

October 1759 - South Carolina Governor William Henry Lyttleton moves into Cherokee territory with a force of between 1,000-1,500 troops. Lyttleton is accompanied by Brigadier General Bulland by Colonel Howearth. Bull, recently had been appointed as Lt. Governor; however, his commission had not yet arrived in the colony. Lyttleton's staff includes Major Henry Hyrne (Adjutant General), Lieutenant Lachlan Shaw (Brigade Major), Ensign Lachlan McIntosh (Quarter Master and later Brigadier general during the American Revolution), William

Drayton (later governor of South Carolina) and William Moultrie (later, major general during the American Revolution). Others that participate include George Milligan (surgeon) and Christopher Gadsden.

The expeditionary force lacks skilled leadership and cohesion, but even worse, sickness strikes the ranks, prompting the mission to be aborted. Nevertheless, the tension between the colonists and the Cherokees does not dissipate, particularly because the Indians, based on stories told to them by the French, believe that the English have plans to annihilate the entire Cherokee tribe. The bad relations between the colonists and the Indians continue. Messages are sent to General Jeffrey Amherst requesting reinforcements to protect the settlements. Later during the following year, Amherst will dispatch a force to the Carolinas. Meanwhile, the Indians in the Carolinas remain unfriendly. Towards the latter part of this year, they venture close to Fort Loudoun and attempt to drive away the livestock. By the following March they launch a direct attack upon the fort. Also, Christopher Gadsden (later, brigadier general during American Revolution) participates in the campaign as a captain of an artillery company that he had he raised. At the same time, Gadsden remains a member of the legislature. Gadsden's company becomes the forerunner of the "Ancient Battalion of Artillery." Francis Marion (later a brigadier general during the American Revolution who becomes known as the "Swamp Fox," also participates in this campaign.

October 8 1759 (Monday)–In New York, a messenger arrives in Oswego and he informs General Gage that Quebec has fallen to the English. General Gage had been under orders to seize La Galette (the fort of the Presentation of the Blessed Virgin at Ogdensburg); however, with the seizure of Quebec, the campaign to seize Ogdensburg is suspended for this year. General Gage moves to Albany to establish winter headquarters. Sir William Johnson sends his Indians back to their villages and Lt. Colonel Haldimand, commanding the 4th Battalion of the Royal Americans remains at Oswego where he establishes winter quarters at the recently constructed Fort Ontario.

October 25 1759 (Thursday)–In Massachusetts at Boston, this day has been proclaimed a day of public thanksgiving "for the success of His Majesty's arms," for the victories at Niagara and at Quebec." In Pennsylvania, General Stanwix holds a conference at Fort Pitt with the Six Nations of the Delawares and Twithawies. At this conference and those before it the Indians arrive in large numbers. There is always an enormous amount of pomp and circumstance of an Indian Council as the Indians present themselves as "independent nations, in treaty with the victorious English for peace and the preservation of their own national integrity." Subsequently, during spring of 1763, a conflict known as Pontiac's War erupts, and although the Indians again ravage the frontier for awhile, the conflict is terminated with the termination of the Indians' hostilities. Later, during the spring of 1765, yet another grand Indian conference is held at the fort. George Croghan, Indian agent, On 9 May, Croghan meets with the chiefs of the Delawares, Munsies, Sandusky, Senecas and the Shawnees. About 500 braves, along with their families attend the conference. In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, General Stanwix holds a conference with the Indians, the second since his arrival at Fort Pitt during the previous August. The general demands that the Indians return any captive that they still hold. In addition, through his interpreter, Captain Montour, the Indians are informed that Quebec was now under the control of the English and that in the near future, the French would be driven out of America. Apparently, Stanwix's messages make an impression. Soon after hearing Stanwix's words, the Indians declare that they "formally bury the hatchet." At about the same time the Indians proclaim that they are "fast friends of the English for all time." Note from the conference state that after the Indians vow

their friendship, “General Stanwix drank to the health of the Indians and the meeting dispersed.”

October 30 1759 (Saturday)–In South Carolina, Edmund Atkin, superintendent of Indian Affairs in South Carolina, following meetings with 73 leaders of the Choctaw nation, concludes a treaty (Treaty of Wauyahatchey) on this day. In conjunction, Atkin in a later letter, dated 27 March, 1760 to William Pitt, informs him that the treaty was consummated. In addition, Atkin informs Pitt that the Indians “came empowered for that purpose, in Company with the Horses that carried the first Cargo of Goods...In the same month the Betaponcolon Mingo went in Person into the Chickasaw Towns with many of his Headmen & confirmed the peace in form with the Chicasaws, since which their people have hunted together. . . . Before I left the Creek nation I accomplished one thing hitherto thought to be impracticable considering the neutral Principles of those Indians with regard to white People. that is I engaged two principal Leading men, the most to be trusted, to take small English Colours from me, & head war parties against the French at Mobile, whenever any of the King's ships appear. Others will in that case follow their Example. At present it is kept a Secret....”

December 9 1759 (Sunday)–In South Carolina, Governor William Henry Lyttleton, somewhat enraged due to hostilities by the Cherokee Indians arrives at Fort Prince George with a force of about 1,000 militia and about 150 provincial troops and regulars. Shortly afterward a force of about 400 militia arrives to bolster Lyttleton’s army. Later on 26 December, Lyttleton consummates a treaty. Nevertheless, the Indians continue to ravage the region.

1760-In Virginia, Settler’s from Ingles’ Fort, under William Ingles, launch a surprise attack against a band of Indians near Ingle’s Ferry. The raiders are driven away with some casualties. The party of settlers sustains one killed. **In Pennsylvania**, Fort Venango, near Franklin, Pennsylvania is established at the location where Fort Machault stood until recently abandoned by the French.

January 1760–Arizona - Captain Juan Bautista de Anza II arrives at the Tubac Presidio and remains there until 1776. Under his command, the Spaniards build a chapel in honor of Santa Gertrudis. Subsequently, St. Ann’s Church is constructed there atop the chapel’s foundation. Construction of the church is completed by Franciscan priests during 1808. **In South Carolina** - Cherokee Indians raid settlements in Georgia and South Carolina. The attacks inflict civilian deaths numbering about 50 including women and children. **In England**, by this time, William Pitt decides to commit three additional British cavalry regiments to Germany to bolster Prince Ferdinand; however shortly thereafter, it is decided to send five cavalry regiments, then later, during May, Pitt commits an additional 6 battalions and two regiments of Highlanders. And still, more troops are committed during the following month (June) when 2 more cavalry regiments are committed, raising the total to nearly 10,000 troops. In other activity, Captain Charles Cornwallis (Lord Cornwallis) is elected to Parliament as a member of Eye, Suffolk County. Remains in the position until 1761 when he is elevated to the peerage during June 1762.

February 1 1760 (Friday)–In South Carolina, Cherokee Indians attack the Long Cane settlement at a time when the settlers are in the process of relocating the women and children to August, Georgia to keep them out of harm’s way. Patrick Calhoun, one of the settlers, describes the incident, which is published in the South Carolina Gazette on the 23rd as follows: “That the whole of those Settlers might be about 250 souls, 55 or 60 of them fighting Men; that their Loss in that Affair amounted to 50 Persons, Chiefly Women and Children, with 13 loaded Waggon

and Carts; that he had since been at the Place where the Action happened, in order to bury the Dead, and found only 20 of their Bodies, most inhumanly butchered; that the Indians had burnt the Woods all around, but had left the Waggons and Carts there empty and unhurt, and that he believes all the fighting men would return and fortify the Long-Cane Settlement, were part of the Rangers so stationed as to give them some Assistance and Protection.” There is some contradiction in the figure regarding losses. The number inscribed on a stone that is later erected by Patrick Calhoun places the losses at 23, but it could have been that the earlier number had been somewhat exaggerated or that some thought to be killed later came out of hiding and yet one of the other reasons could be that the number, 23, referred only to those buried at that spot. In conjunction, James Calhoun, the oldest of the Calhoun brothers and Catherine, their mother are among the fatalities. Patrick, later erects a monument in honor of his mother and the other victims. The inscription on the stone reads:

“In Memory of
Mrs. Catherine Calhoun
Aged 76 Years
who With 22 Others was Here Murdered by The Indians The
First Day of Feby. 1760.”

The stone had been placed at the site of the ambush about two and one-half miles from Troy and 12 miles from Abbeville at a spot about two hundred and fifty yards on the right side of the road, just beyond the bridge (Patterson’s) that spans Long Cane Creek. Also, Patrick Calhoun’s first wife Jane Craighead, the daughter of Reverend Alexander Craighead, dies at the age of 24, on 10 September, 1766. Her twin children also die on the identical day due to a miscarriage. Subsequently, Patrick marries Martha Caldwell, originally from Charlotte County, Virginia. Patrick and Martha have five children, including John Caldwell Calhoun, the future vice president of the United States. Their other children were: James, Patrick, William and Catherine. Also, there is some indication that Patrick Sr. Had actually married three times and that Martha had been his third wife. According to a diary maintained by William Calhoun (Publications of the Southern History Association, Volume VIII, 1904), it is mentioned that Patrick Calhoun married Sarah McKinly on 26 February, 1767.

February 6 1760 (Wednesday)–In New York, Major Rogers, having been at Albany since his departure from No. 4, after his return from the raid against the St. Francis Indians in Canada the previous November, departs for Crown Point. Thirteen new recruits accompany Rogers. While en route, Indians ambush the party on 13 February at a point between Ticonderoga and Crown Point. The Indians, numbering about 60, kill 5 and capture four others. Rogers, however, survives and he is able to get the remainder of the party to Crown Point. Once at the fort, Rogers is prepared to set out to intercept the Indians, but Colonel Haviland, the fort’s commander objects and informs Rogers that the garrison has too much sickness to permit the chase. Nonetheless, Rogers remains at Crown Point for the remainder of the winter.

February 27 1760 (Wednesday) - North Carolina - A Cherokee war-party of more than 50 braves raids Fort Dobbs (a three-story structure) on the frontier at Piedmont near the Blue Ridge Mountains. The defenders including Waddell’s Rangers (Colonel Hugh Waddell, later brigadier general) are prepared. Initially the Cherokees fire and immediately thereafter continue the charge, war-hoops and yells accompanying the advance. The troops all the while had awaited the first fire, and when the Indians got within range, the defenders deliver a hurricane of fire, causing many tomahawks to drop suddenly along with the Indian carrying it. The musket fire and buckshot quickly terminates the attack. However, during the attack, the militia loses two

men wounded, one of whom was also scalped and near death. The Indians also kill one young boy outside the fort. Reports filed with the North Carolina assembly estimate the Indian deaths at about 10-12. This is the only major attack launched against the fort. During the following year, the fort is abandoned. In conjunction, the frontier at that time will expand following a major victory over the Cherokee. Also, Edward Vail (later, brigadier general during the American Revolution) who joined the military as a captain in the Chowan County (North Carolina) militia as a captain, participates in this action under the command of Waddell. In conjunction, Colonel Waddell also becomes a brigadier general; however, he dies during 1773. It is thought that if General Waddell had lived, he would have been commissioned as a brigadier in the Continental Army.

March 3 1760 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, a group of Indians attempt to murder the post storekeeper, Nathaniel Holland, but they are foiled when Colonel Burd arrives with a guard to intervene and save Holland's life. Also, soon after, Colonel Burd completes his business at the fort and then he departs from there for Pittsburgh, where he arrives by 6 July. Subsequently, he arrives at Lancaster, Pennsylvania on 4 November. Upon his arrival, he dines with Colonel Bouquet and other officers.

March 20 1760 (Thursday)-n South Carolina, Cherokee Indians openly attack Fort Loudoun, which has been under siege and lacking sufficient food and supplies. The fort remains under fire for about four days, but the small garrison does not capitulate. Although the attacks subside, the fort remains under siege and it is low on both supplies and ammunition. A relief force under Colonel Archibald Montgomery is dispatched to lift the siege, but it never reaches the fort. In the meantime, food and supplies at the fort continue to dwindle. On 2 June, several men, thinking the Indians had lifted the siege move out to forage and immediately come under fire. Reinforcements rush to their aid, but enemy fire forces them back into the fort.

March 31 1760 (Monday)–In New York, Captain James Tute leads a small detachment of 2 other officers and 6 rangers on a reconnaissance mission. None return to Crown Point as the entire party is captured. No relief detachment is sent out due to Colonel Haviland being concerned about too many sick troops in the garrison. Colonel Haviland had been the commander during March 1758, when he sent Major Rogers out on a mission with less than 200 rangers; rather than the 400 that were anticipated, with the knowledge that the contingent was to do battle with a far superior force and it was Haviland, the recently prevented Rogers from pursuing the Indians that had attacked the Rogers' party earlier this month. In other activity, Major Rogers receives a letter, dated 1 March, 1760, from General Amherst. The general informs Rogers that the king expects him to "complete the companies of Rangers." The letter in part..."Capt. Wait called upon me yesterday, and represented that he could easily complete the one he commands in the colony of Connecticut and the Province of the Massachuset's Bay, I have furnished him with beating orders for that purpose, as also with a warrant for 800 dollars on account of that service. This day I have wrote to Capt. John Stark in New Hampshire, and Capt. David Brewer in the Massachuset's Bay, inclosing to each of them a beating order for the respective provinces; and I herewith send you a copy of the instructions that accompany the same, by which you will see they are ordered, as fast as they get any number of men, to send them to Albany." Major Rogers responds and tells General Amherst that he will fully assist in the raising of the ranger companies. He also informs General Amherst that a large number of the rangers in his two companies at Crown Point are suffering from frost bite and other illnesses, which in his opinion will eliminate them from service in the upcoming campaign.

May 8 1760 (Thursday)–In Canada, Abbe Piquot, following consultation with his bishop and

the authorities, departs Montreal to ensure that he is not captured by the English. Governor Vaudreuil had claimed that Abbe Piquot had been “worth more than ten regiments.” He travels to Michilimackinac and Upper Canada to Illinois and from there to Louisiana, where he remains in New Orleans for about 22 months before returning to France where he later dies on 15 July 1781. In conjunction, it was Abbe Piquot who was instrumental in getting the Indians to side with the French. He was (during his lifetime) referred to as the “Apostle of the Iroquois.”

May 28 1760 (Wednesday)–In Georgia, the Upper Creek Indians murder more than 20 traders on this day. The traders in the Lower Creek region avoid a similar fate by finding safety in Savannah.

June 1760 - Colonies - In South Carolina, Colonial troops led by Colonel Archibald Montgomery arrive at Fort Prince George along the head of the Savannah River to lift a siege initiated by the Cherokees. These reinforcements, numbering more than 1,000 have been dispatched by General Jeffrey Amherst, the commander-in-chief of the colonial forces in the colonies. Subsequent to relieving the fort, Montgomery penetrates further into the Indian territory and raids every village encountered. Continuing, the force advances toward Etchoe, the Cherokees capital. On the 27th, while proceeding prudently along a precarious route, the vanguard, a contingent of Rangers under Colonel Morrison is ambushed. Morrison and a few others are instantly killed. Soon after, trailing troops sprint to the scene and initiate effective fire, but the Indians continue to raise tenacious resistance. After awhile, a contingent of Highlanders presses the Indians on their flanks and forces them to yield. The Cherokees retire toward their capital and prepare for an attack. However, the troops fail to advance beyond the pass. Instead, they return to Charleston. The retirement essentially abandons the besieged defenders at Fort Loudoun and places them at the whim of the Indians. Soon after, during August, the Cherokees attack Fort Loudon.

June 1-23 1760- In New York, at Crown Point, on or about this day (1st), Major Robert Rogers departs from Fort Edward with 250 men. The contingent, being transported aboard four vessels, moves down Lake Champlain. A contingent of Stockbridge Indians had not yet arrived at the time of embarkation, but they join the force later. The boats and the provisions are aboard the vessels, to attempt to keep the French from figuring out the object of the mission. On the 3rd, the flotilla arrives at Misisquey Bay. Major Rogers directs Lt. Holmes to debark with 50 rangers who receive instructions on their objectives. Rogers informs Holmes that a sloop will continue to lurk in the bay to retrieve his force when it returns. At the same time, Rogers gives a letter from General Amherst to General Murray at Quebec to one of his officers and directs him to deliver it to Murray. His escorts are all volunteers due to the extreme danger involved with the mission that requires the detachment to travel 500 miles to reach Murray. Sergeant Beverly, only recently back in service since his escape from Montreal, is in command of the others, John Shutet, Luxford Goodwin and Joseph Eastman.

Shortly after debarking the two detachments, Major Rogers crosses over to the west side of the lake and the troops during the morning of 4 June transfer from the vessels to their boats, then at a point about 12 miles south of the island of Noix, about 200 troops land and prepare to disrupt French operations to divert attention from the siege at Quebec; however nasty weather prevents immediate activity. Rogers' remains in place during a heavy rainstorm that continues into the 5th. Rogers is aware that the constant rain that has permeated even the bushes would most probably damage their ammunition and ruin their provisions.

Later on the 5th, during the afternoon, two French boats are spotted on the lake by the two sloops accompanying Rogers, but his land troops also detect them. The boats remain close by to

observe, but they keep at a safe distance. Rogers directs the two sloops to retire to Mott Island to rejoin with Captain Grant the commanding officer of the vessels. Rogers acts on his belief that the French have intentions to stay through the night to keep vigil on the sloops. Nonetheless, the French still discover where Rogers had debarked. However, the French plans to move against Rogers on the following morning with a surprise attack are foiled when reconnaissance detachments discover the scheme. Spotters count the French as they cross to the west shore and inform Rogers that the contingent numbers about 350 men. Meanwhile the English take precautions to meet the attack which occurs at 1130.

The French strike vigorously at Rogers' left, but they ignore the right which is protected by a bog. While the French pound their way against the near impenetrable wall of fire, Rogers dispatches a contingent under Lt. Farrington who maneuvers his command to reach the rear of the French. Suddenly, the hunters become the hunted. Farrington 70-man contingent pours fire into their rear, while simultaneously with the sounds of Farrington's weapons, Rogers orders a charge, which causes instant disorder within the French ranks as they disengage and retire, but not without pain. The English give chase and it lasts for about one hour before the French vanish into a cedar swamp, then scattered. As the French disappear, the haunting rain again intensifies. Rogers orders his troops to return to the boats. Upon reaching the boats, Rogers learns of grim news. Ensign Wood (British 17th Regiment) had been killed and Captain Johnson had sustained several wounds, one to the head, one to his left arm and another to his body. The rangers sustain 16 killed and 8 wounded and two troops attached to the Light Infantry are also wounded. The rangers report 40 French killed and their commanding officer, Monsieur la Force is reported as being mortally wounded. The troops also pick up about 50 flintlocks.

Subsequent to the termination of the fight, Rogers has the wounded gathered and the dead collected. All are transported back to the Isle la Mott. The body of Ensign Wood is taken aboard one of the vessels which will return to Crown Point. Captain Johnson is also taken aboard; however, Johnson dies of his wounds before the ship arrives at Crown Point. The others killed at the battle are buried on an island. Soon after, Major Rogers refocuses on the mission and he begins to plan for the next operation. Rogers intent on penetrating the French lines directs Captain Grant to move back down the lake to at least Windmill Point or to a place where he and Rogers had anchored the last time they had been together. In the meantime, the Stockton Indian Company, which missed the embarkation arrives to bolster Rogers' force. Grant's instructions direct him also to cruise in the area near the Point to distract the French and allow the land troops to advance with a better chance of not being detected.

Rogers informs Grant that he will debark on the west side of the lake across from the northern tip of the Isle la Mott and that he will return on the east side and rejoin Grant near Wind Mill Point. Rogers also sets up a recognition signal which will be "a smook and three guns, at a minute's interval each from the other, and repeated a second time, in half an hour after the first; but if the enemy should attack me on my march before I get to the place I am ordered, which I believe they will do, in case I am worsted I shall be obliged to come back on the west side, and shall make the before mentioned signals betwixt the Isle a Mot and the place where I had the battle with the enemy the 6th instant. It is uncertain when I shall be at either shore so that I would recommend it to you not to come back south of the Isle a Mot till my return, as a contrary wind might prevent your getting in with your vessels to relieve me..."

On 9 June, Rogers contingent of 220 troops debarks opposite the Isle la Mott on the west shore and advance to St. John's and from there the column swings to the road that stretches from there to Montreal reaching a point about two miles from the fort on the night of 15 June. Afterward at 2300, Rogers advances to a point about 400 yards from the fort. Scouts are sent out and it soon becomes obvious that the French garrison is much stronger than anticipated. In addition, the French spot the force and commence firing. By about 0200 on the 10th, Rogers cancels the attack and retires to St. D'Etrese. By dawn, Rogers becomes aware that the town contains a stockade fort and he spots two large store houses within the gates.

While the French remain unaware of the presence of Rogers' force, they are working to unload cartloads of hay. Rogers plans his strategy, which is bold and impetuous. He designates small detachments to move to separate houses (about fifteen), each within close proximity of the fort. The parties prepare to synchronize their attack on signal. In the meantime, Rogers moves near the gate and as a cart enters the fort, Rogers slips through the gates before they are closed and he remains undiscovered. At the assigned time, all of the houses targeted are hit simultaneously and the operation unfolds flawlessly taking every one without firing a shot and without any alarms being sounded.

The fort also falls to the rangers who seize 24 troops there along with 78 prisoners, including women and children in the raided houses. However some young men are able to escape and make it to Chamblee. After the stunning bloodless operation, Rogers quickly discerns that it would be too dangerous to proceed to Chamblee due to the captives. Consequently, Rogers orders the village and fort destroyed, including the store houses and stocks of provisions. The rangers seize 8 batteaux, but all others are destroyed. Prior to departing the rangers slay the livestock and everything else, including wagons or carts, thought to be of any use to the French. The women and children that had been seized are released and given a pass to permit them to move to Montreal. After re-crossing the river, the eight batteaux are also demolished by shredding them into debris.

Rogers reforms his column and advances along the east side of Lake Champlain. As the vanguard moves by Misisquey Bay, across from Isle Noix, the advance force of an -800-men contingent of the French engage Rogers advance troops. Surprisingly, the main body of the French force, trailing their vanguard by about one mile do not advance to reinforce the contingent at the front and instead, retire, leaving their vanguard on their own. Rogers, somewhat ecstatic, realizing the French had retreated, increases the pace as the command resumes the march to reach sight of his vessels on the lake, this same day, 20 June. A detachment moves out front and fires the prearranged signal and shortly thereafter, Rogers troops board boats and afterward, they re-board the vessels, which embark just as the French appear.

July 9 1760 (Wednesday)–In New York, General Amherst arrives at Oswego from Schenectady. He is in the process of launching an invasion of Canada to seize Montreal. Meanwhile, thanks to General James Murray, the British outlasted the French siege of Quebec when the French lifted the siege and returned to Montreal during the previous May. In conjunction, Amherst orders Murray to leave a defensive force at Quebec, then depart for Montreal via the waterways. Amherst has also ordered Colonel Haviland, in command of troops from Crown Point, to advance to Lake Champlain to seize Ile aux Noix and once it is secured, Haviland is ordered to move to the St. Lawrence River. While the previously named contingents are in motion, Amherst, leading the main body of the army,

composed of about 10,000 men, including friendly Indians, is making his way across the New York frontier toward Lake Ontario via the rivers of the Mohawks and the Oneidas. General Amherst upon reaching Lake Ontario intends to sail to the St. Lawrence River and once there take the final steps to sail to Montreal. In contrast, Governor Vaudreuil the governor of New France anticipates the attack and is heavily engaged in building the defenses and he is attempting to raise morale. The Canadians have been disgruntled since they were ordered to abandon the siege of Quebec. Meanwhile, General Amherst also directs two armed sloops under the command of Captain Loring to operate on Lake Ontario, along with large numbers of bateaux and other small boats which will be required to transport the invasion force as well as the artillery, baggage and supplies. While General Amherst remains in Oswego, a pair of French warships arrive. Amherst sends a dispatch by bateaux to Niagara to summon Captain Loring's ships, but by the time he arrives, the French had departed. Captain Loring had sailed down the lake to Oswego from Niagara and he does spot the French vessels. Meanwhile, the French detect only the Onondaga and decide to attack; however, once they spot the other English ships, they flee and head for La Galette, while Loring moves into Oswego.

August 7 1760-In South Carolina, the English at Fort Loudoun, under siege by the Cherokees and nearly out of supplies, agree to surrender the fort. The commanding officer, Captain Paul Demere receives a promise that the colonists will not be harmed. The Colonists depart the fort, accompanied by Ockonostota and a party of Indians who pretend to be friendly; however, after dark, they vanish. The night passes quietly, but on the following day, the Indians spring a deadly ambush. Demere and nearly thirty others are massacred. The survivors estimated to number about 150, are seized, taken to Fort Loudoun and kept as captives (to be used as slaves). Only one officer, Captain Stuart(Steuart) survives. Ockonostota establishes his headquarters at the fort. Another Indian, Attakulla, learns of the fall of the fort and the capture of his friend, Captain Stuart. Attakulla travels to the fort and ransoms Stuart.

Meanwhile, the Colonists in South Carolina quickly find themselves in great jeopardy as the Cherokees are able to raise several thousand warriors to raid across the Frontier and there are insufficient troops to subdue them. Urgent messages are dispatched to General Amherst requesting immediate arrival of fresh troops. Amherst, aware that the French crisis in Canada had been terminated decides to send the Highlander Regiment, commanded by Colonel Grant with supporting colonial militia. The force, composed of many battle-tested troops who participated against the French and their formidable Indian allies, numbers about 2,600. Advance scouts, attired in Indian dress, act as vanguard as the troops march toward the treacherous pass outside of Etchoe, where a contingent under Colonel Archibald Montgomery had previously been ambushed. The troops execute a massive assault, but the Cherokees raise fierce resistance. The tenacious battle ensues for nearly three hours before the army forces the Indians to fold and retire. Nevertheless, the English and the colonists relentlessly pursue. The troops drive the Indians back through the forest, which forces them to take refuge deep in the mountains. Meanwhile, the colonists demolish their villages and plunder their fields to sever their food supply. The destruction is total causing the Cherokees to sue for peace. The Colonists still infuriated by the massacre at Fort Loudoun lay out conditions for the peace which are somewhat peculiar for the English. They demand as a stipulation for peace that the Cherokees first provide either four warriors who would be shot in front of the Army or provide to the colonists "four green Indian scalps within twenty days." In conjunction, during the battle, Lt. Francis Marion, attached to the command of Colonel William Moultrie, leads a 30-man contingent (Forlorn

Hope) against a key enemy position and the unit sustains devastating casualties during the attack, but Marion escapes unscathed and the objective, to open a gap had succeeded, and the main body plowed forward to devastate the Cherokee. In conjunction, both Moultrie and Marion become generals during the American War for Independence.

August 10 1760 (Sunday)-In New York at Oswego, General Amherst's final preparations for the invasion of Canada continue. By this time, a large number of allied Indians, under the command of Sir William Johnson, arrive to bolster the force. In conjunction, at about this time, Amherst detaches Colonel Haviland and directs him to move his command (light infantry, grenadiers, and one battalion of Highlanders) to deploy at the lower end of Lake Ontario. Meanwhile, on this day, the army, aboard a variety of vessels including bateaux and whale boats, departs Oswego en route to the mouth of the St. Lawrence River. From the mouth of the St. Lawrence at the point where it converges with the St. Charles River, Quebec stands at a distance of about 230 miles. As the improvised flotilla embarks, Amherst is aware that one of two roaming French ships had become inoperable after running aground and the other ship (The *Ottawa*) is operating near La Galette. The initial objective is a French fort in the vicinity of Swegatchie at Le Royale a primary post on the St. Lawrence.

August 16-9 September 1760-In New York at Crown Point, while General Amherst is at sea en route from Oswego to the mouth of the St. Lawrence, an army embarks from Crown Point. The naval flotilla is composed of one brigantine, three sloops and four rideaux. The vanguard, composed of 600 rangers and 70 Indians under Major Robert Rogers, aboard whale boats hold the point, followed by as described by Rogers: "the light infantry and grenadiers in two columns, two boats a-breast in each column, commanded by Colonel Darby. The right wing, composed of Provincials, commanded by Brigadier Ruggles, who was second in command of the whole army. The left was made up of New Hampshire. and Boston troops, commanded by Colonel Thomas. The 17th and 27th Regiments, with some few of the Royals, that formed the center column, were commanded by Major Campbell of the 17th regiment. Colonel Haviland was in the front of these divisions, between those and the light infantry, and grenadiers. The Royal Artillery followed the columns, and was commanded by Colonel Ord, who had, for his escort, one Rhode Island regiment of Provincials. The sutlers, &c. followed the artillery." The flotilla advances down the lake about 40 miles before pausing for the night.

On the 17th, the flotilla remains in place; however, one obstacle, a French ship, the *Ottawa* stands in the way. General Amherst dispatches Colonel George Williamson (Royal Artillery) to eliminate the problem (See August 17, 1760). On the following day, with favorable winds, the cruise resumes and on the same day, the force arrives at a landing place on the west shore about 10 miles below Isle le Mott. The operation is somewhat hindered by severe gales that inflict some damage, particularly to the rangers' whale boats, some of which are mauled and literally broken open by the strength of the waves. Ten of the rangers die during the ordeal. On the morning of the 19th, the flotilla advances to the northern tip of the Isle la Mott where the force establish a night camp.

Following the breaking of camp on the morning of the 20th, prior to dawn, the flotilla resumes its voyage and begins to encroach the French fort at about 1000. At that time, Rogers' Rangers, along with the Grenadiers and the Light Infantry debark on the east shore and without hesitation, the troops sprint to secure the ground opposite the fort without incident. Afterward, an officer is dispatched to make contact with Colonel Haviland (General Amherst's command) with the rest of the army, who is already in place where the rangers had landed. Haviland is informed that

there was no imminent danger from the French.

By the morning of the 21st, the English initiate the construction of batteries. In addition, Rogers' Rangers advances further down the lake, with instructions not to advance beyond the French fort nor to move any further movement toward Montreal. Prior to dawn, the rangers embark on boats and they arrive at St. John's at about dawn to discover some artificial illumination. The French had set the fort afire and abandoned their positions to head for Montreal. The rangers, however, give chase and succeed in seizing two prisoners. After questioning the prisoners, Rogers learns that Monsieur Bonville, the fort's commander had fled from the fort during the previous night in anticipation of the arrival of the English. It is also learned that the French would make camp this day at a point about mid-way between the fort and Montreal and that a large number of the total force, estimated to be about 1,500, are sick. The captives also claim that the rear troops would not arrive at the camp until at least mid-afternoon.

Rogers immediately directs that the log house near the lake be fortified to provide strong positions to protect the batteries. By about 0800, leaving 200 rangers at St. John's, Rogers moves out with 400 rangers and 200 Indians to intercept Bonville. The information gained from the prisoners proves accurate. The rangers catch the rear guard at about two miles outside of Bonville's camp. The rangers, without warning, pounce upon the French column, composed of about 200 troops, but the French, apparently stunned by the sight of the rangers, make a hurried escape and run toward Bonville and the main body. The rangers remain on their heels, but Rogers insists upon some prudence in anticipation of Bonville making preparation to engage. Rogers' instincts prove inaccurate. Bonville expeditiously takes flight and his force speeds toward the river where he had expected to establish his camp. After crossing the river, the French raise the bridge, compelling Rogers to halt the pursuit due to the strong works on the opposite bank. Rogers' rangers, however, had instilled some additional anxiety into the French under Bonville and they had also succeeded in reducing his numbers. The rangers return to their camp without further incident.

Later on this same day (21st) Colonel Haviland arrives at St. John's. He is briefed by Major Rogers on the details of the operation and he transfers his two prisoners to Colonel Haviland's command. Haviland orders his force to establish a night camp. The army and the rangers pass the night without incident and on the following morning, Colonel Haviland embarks with his force and advances down the Sorrel River to St. d'Etrese and after debarking there, his force erects sturdy breastworks as a precaution against a possible surprise attack by the French. Meanwhile Major Rogers is ordered to move down the Sorrel River to inform the inhabitants that they are no longer living under the French flag and that now, they are subjects of the king of England.

The rangers arrive at the settlements during the night and their initial activity includes the rounding up of the Catholic priests and any militia troops discovered. Some of the priests and militia are afterward directed to gather the inhabitants that reside near Chamblee. Afterward, the people, obviously passive, receive the news and Rogers informs them that they must take an oath of allegiance to the king in order for them to keep their possessions. The inhabitants are also ordered to surrender their arms. Once Rogers completes his task, he joins his rangers with Colonel Darby at Chamblee to bolster the former's force which had arrived to seize the fort. Shortly thereafter, the garrison at Chamblee, composed of only about 50 men, needs little time to

contemplate whether or not to attempt to hold the fort. The garrison surrenders on 1 September. In conjunction, Darby's artillery had been deployed, but he found no occasion to use it.

On the day following the capture of the fort, no tasks remained for the army that had embarked from Crown Point. Colonel Haviland, having received correspondence from General Amherst and General Murray, which essentially underscores that their work had been completed, the rangers are ordered by Colonel Haviland to move out to join with General Murray, while he leads the remainder of the army to La Pierre. Major Rogers and his rangers arrive at Longville, less than 5 miles from Montreal on the 5th. He halts at positions opposite of those held by General Murray. Due to his late arrival, Rogers withholds informing Murray of his arrival until the following morning (6th). In the meantime, General Amherst's army arrives and it had debarked about 2 miles outside of Longville. On this same day, the governor (Monsieur Vaudreuil), the French governor (also commander-in-chief of Canada) dispatches a party that requests terms of surrender. Consequently, all activity is ordered to cease. Later on 8 September, the terms of surrender are agreed upon and signed. Afterward, the English take control of Montreal.

On 9 September, the English Light Infantry and Grenadiers from the entire army, accompanied by one company of the royal artillery, led by Colonel Haldiman, move into Montreal. Shortly thereafter, the English regain the colors of General Shirley's regiment and the regimental flag of General Pepperel, both of which had earlier been seized at Oswego.

August 17 1760 (Sunday)–In New York, row galleys attached to the force of General Amherst and commanded by Colonel George Williamson (Royal Artillery), encounter a French sloop, the *Ottawa*, Commanded by M. De la Broquerie. The French topsail schooner has a crew composed of 100 men and she carries one 18-pounder, seven 12-pounders, two 8-pounders and four swivel guns. Williamson's five galleys each carry five officers and 25 artillerymen, excluding the men who row. One of the galleys has one howitzer and the other four are each armed with one brass 12-pounder. Williamson takes on the more powerful vessel and during the unusual duel, he boards a little rowboat and moves about from galley to galley to oversee the battle and give instructions. The French commander, De la Broquerie had initiated the fight by firing broadsides; however, the colonel, improvising as a navy officer, encircles the sloop, and his row-galleys trade blows with equal tenacity and in fact, the English boats fire more shells than the French. Williamson's diminutive command fires 118 shots in response to the French's number which totals 72. After blasting each other for slightly more than two hours, the French colors are struck, giving the colonel a victory on the water. The French sustain 3 killed and 12 wounded. In contrast, the English sustain 1 killed, a sergeant of the Royal Artillery and 1 or 2 privates wounded. In addition, the French vessel is commandeered by the English and pressed into the service of the English. General Amherst is especially pleased with Williamson's actions. He renames the prize, the *Williamson*. In conjunction, the ship is often referred to as a sloop and a brigantine as well as a schooner. The French commander and the crew are taken to General Amherst's encampment at La Presentation. Meanwhile Amherst's force continues toward Swegatchie to seize the post there before continuing to Montreal. In conjunction, Amherst dispatches a contingent of engineers to run a reconnaissance mission near Isle Royale to gain intelligence regarding the coasts and neighboring islands. Friendly Indians, along with the engineers become incensed when they discover some scalps, abandoned by the French when they fled one of the islands. In retaliation, the Indians burn down all the homes and a chapel.

Afterward Amherst seizes the islands then constructs batteries on islands close to the French fort at Isle Royale. Following a prolonged pre-invasion bombardment, Amherst prepares to assault the French strong point; however, before the signal is given, the sounds of drums, coming from the fort are heard and Amherst, suspends the attack. M. Pouchot's drum signals for a parley halts the assault and it becomes unnecessary. Pouchot capitulates without a fight. Subsequently, General Amherst, assesses the value of the fort and determines that it is strategic. He chooses not to reduce it and instead deploys a garrison to hold it and give the English domination of Lake Ontario and the Mohawk River. In conjunction, following some additional time to further fortify the fort, General Amherst resumes the advance to Montreal, but the voyage along the St. Lawrence River is treacherous and the pernicious rapids and dangerous falls hinder progress and cause casualties. **In Pennsylvania**, General Robert Monckton at Fort Pitt, consummates a treaty with the Six Nations. Monckton impresses upon the Indians that the king had sent him to build the forts to prevent the enemy from returning and he informs them that the king does not intend to English to establish settlements on land that belongs to them. In conjunction, General Monckton remains in command until the following October.

August 24 1760 (Sunday)–In Canada, General Murray's flotilla continues to advance toward Montreal. At a point about 30-35 miles below the city, Murray dispatches a detachment to attempt to locate Brigadier General William Haviland, but the flotilla maintains its progress and advances the Isle Sainte Marie, slightly below the main objective, Montreal, where Murray pauses to await a rendezvous with Haviland. General Haviland's force totals about thirty-four hundred men, including two battalions of regulars, supplemented by provincials and Indians. Haviland embarked from Crown Point during the third week of August and while en route to meet Murray, he seizes Isle aux Noix. After the English land, a siege is initiated. Rangers set up some artillery and begin firing on the rear positions of Bougainville's positions and they redirect the guns to also fire upon the ships in the harbor, prompting the vessel to weigh anchor and sail out of harm's way, however, while retiring the ships get hung up at the next bend in the river. In the meantime, Haviland's batteries begin to pound the French fort, which is taken on the 28th. Also, on this day, General Murray in a letter to William Pitt informs the secretary that his garrison at Quebec had not received any pay since 24 October, 1759. Murray also states that the English now totally control the navigation between Quebec and Montreal. In conjunction, William Haviland had accompanied Lord Loudoun to Halifax as colonel of the 27th regiment. In 1758 he had served with Abercrombie in the Ticonderoga campaign, and, in 1759, he commanded the advance column of the army under General Jeffrey Amherst. In 1760 Haviland, now brigadier-general, was placed in command of that division which penetrated Canada by way of Lake Champlain. His force consisting of about thirty-four hundred men had departed Albany during the previous June.

September 1 1760 (Monday)–In Canada, General Amherst force passes the long Saut (rapids), en route to Montreal. The boats take a beating from the currents. Detachments advance along the shore, while the boats proceed in single file due to the unmanageable currents. At the head of the long Sault Rapid (known as Cat Island) the waters are extremely dangerous. The batteaux begin to take on water. During the ordeal, one corporal and three men of the Royal Highlanders drown. Nonetheless, Amherst is able to make camp at Johnson's Point (Known as Point Maline by the French), just under 15 miles beyond Isle au Chat. After establishing his camp, Amherst dispatches Sir William Johnson to an Indian village, Asquesaskua to speak with the Indians to declare that the English will provide protection for them because of their "good behavior."

September 5 1760 (Friday)–In Canada, a force composed of about 10,000 colonial and

English troops, bolstered by about 1,000 Indians arrives at Montreal, Canada from Oswego, New York. In addition, about 4,000 troops under General Murray will also arrive from Quebec. Also, General Amherst's force halts the advance to repair the many boats that had been mauled by the rapids, particularly on the previous day when a large number of boats were lost. On the following day, the flotilla clears the rapids and arrives at La Chine, along the left bank of the St. Lawrence, less than ten miles from Montreal.

September 7 1760 (Sunday)–In Canada at Montreal, the French convene a council of war and determine that it would be fruitless to attempt to repel the English. A surrender proposal is drawn and General Bougainville presents it to General Amherst. The French insist upon the honors of war, which would permit them to march out of the fort in formation, but Amherst denies that request and demands instead that the French lay down their arms and terminate their service until the war ends. Amherst's intent is to punish the French due to their unacceptable actions at Fort William Henry where English wounded were massacred and other similar activities at places such as Ticonderoga, but also because of their inciting of the Indians to massacre the English. The French attempt to persuade Amherst to lessen the severity of the terms but to no avail. On the following day, Montreal is surrendered to the English. Colonel John Thomas (later, major general during the American Revolution) who is a surgeon, participates in the campaign. Also, M. Bougainville, subsequent to his return to France, serves in Germany as an aide-de-camp to M. De Choiseul Stainville. During the American Revolution, M. Bougainville serves as a commodore. Later, he circumnavigates the world. M. Bougainville dies on 31 August, 1811.

September 13 1760-14 February 1761–In Canada, at Montreal, pursuant to orders from General Amherst, Major Robert Rogers, accompanied by several army officers, embarks from Montreal with 200 rangers en route to Detroit. They arrive at St. Francis Lake on the 16th and after resuming the trip from the latter, the rangers arrive at the Isle de Gallettes on the 19th. By that time, their whale boats require repairs due mostly to passing through some rough water. On the following morning ten rangers who have become ill are ordered to return to Oswego to receive medical help before continuing to Albany. Subsequently, the rangers depart on the 21st and move toward Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario Canada) and arrive there on the 23rd, where they discover that the Indians seem jubilant when they are told of the defeat of the French.. By this time, the weather turns nasty and the rangers remain at the fort until clear skies return

September 13 1760-14 February 1761–In Canada, at Montreal, pursuant to orders from General Amherst, Major Robert Rogers, accompanied by several army officers, embarks from Montreal with 200 rangers en route to Detroit. They arrive at St. Francis Lake on the 16th and after resuming the trip from the latter, the rangers arrive at the Isle de Gallettes on the 19th. By that time, their whale boats require repairs due mostly to passing through some rough water. On the following morning ten rangers who have become ill are ordered to return to Oswego to receive medical help before continuing to Albany. Subsequently, the rangers depart on the 21st and move toward Fort Frontenac (Kingston, Ontario Canada) and arrive there on the 23rd, where they discover that the Indians seem jubilant when they are told of the defeat of the French.. By this time, the weather turns nasty and the rangers remain at the fort until clear skies return

Meanwhile, the Indians present the rangers with an abundance of venison and fresh fowl. On the 25th, the rangers resume the trip and on the 28th, they encounter a river, called Grace of Man, by the Indians. The rangers encounter about 50 Mississagua Indians who are fishing for salmon, but upon sight of the rangers' boats flying the English flag, the fishing momentarily stops as the Indians, including men and boys head for the shoreline to greet the rangers. Rogers informs the

Indians that the French had been vanquished and the Indians act as if they are jubilant, however, Rogers is unsure of whether their expressions are genuine or merely a pretense. Nonetheless, the Indians give the rangers a freshly killed deer, which they had split in half. While there some of the rangers join in with the Indians and do some salmon fishing. Rogers note tat after being invited to fish, the rangers “filled a bark-canoe with salmon in about half an hour, and he describes how the salmon are caught, explaining, “One person holds a lighted pinetorch, while a second strikes the fish with a spear.” On the following morning (29th), the rangers depart an later enter another river Life of Man) about 15 miles distant where they encounter another group of Misissaguas, a hunting party of about 30 men. These Indians also exhibit joy at hearing of the defeat of the French and once aware of the gifts from the early encounter, the rangers are presented with a bear.

The rangers remain overnight and resume the journey on the following day (30th) and later that same day, after traveling about 70 miles, they reach the Toronto River and soon after, a French post, Fort Toronto. Indians there inform Rogers that he is about eight days out off Detroit. On the 31st. The rangers depart Toronto and by about dusk, they arrive across Lake Ontario, at a point slightly west of Niagara. By this time, again, the whale boats require heavy repairs. After departing Niagara on or about 5 October, Rogers arrives at Presque Isle on 8 October, and from there, the rangers arrive at Pittsburgh on the 17th. Once there, Rogers delivers the correspondence from General Amherst to General Moncton. Rogers departs Pittsburgh on 20 October and arrives back at Presque Isle on the 30th. On the following day, Captain Campbell, dispatched by Moncton, arrives with one company of the Royal American Regiment and other rangers arrive from Niagara.

Rogers begins to repair the boats, prior to embarking to continue the journey to Detroit; however, a contingent under Captain Brewer is ordered to move by overland route to Detroit and drive about 40 oxen (supplied by Colonel Bouquet) with his detachment. Brewer is also accompanied by a group of about 20 Indians (of the Delawares, Shawnees and Six Nations) in the event the party encounters any hostile Indians while en route. At about the same time, Rogers dispatches Captain Wait to Niagara to pick up additional provisions and afterward, Brewer is to cruise near the northeast coast of Lake Erie and pause at a point about 20 miles east of the strait between Lake Huron and Lake Erie until new orders arrive.

Meanwhile, Rogers’ main body embarks from Presque Isle on 4 November. After moving about 20 miles, they encounter inclement weather, which prompts Rogers to halt for the night; however, on the following morning the force reembarks during the early morning hours. When they reach the mouth of the Chogage River (probably the Cuyahoga River at Cleveland Ohio), the party encounters a band of Indians that had just arrived from Detroit. Rogers once again explains to these Indians that the French in North America had been vanquished and he offers to take the Indians with him on the journey to Detroit to validate what he had told them; however, the Indians give no immediate response. They tell Rogers he will have an answer on the following morning. The English and the Indians spend the night together, but the rangers maintain a constant vigil in the event of any attempt at treachery. Nonetheless, on the following morning, Rogers is informed that the younger braves will travel with him and the older men will remain to continue hunting. Rogers also persuades the chiefs to dispatch the word to ensure that the party moving overland under Captain Brewer does not come under attack.

Following another period of nasty weather, Rogers finally embarks on 12 November. The boats advance to the Elk River, where they again encounter nasty weather and are forced to suspend the trip for two additional days. Afterward, on the 15th, Rogers resumes the journey and arrives at Sandusky Lake on the 19th. While at the lake, Rogers sends an advance detachment to Detroit to alert the French commander (Monsieur Belaher) of the imminent approach of Rogers' force. The commander of the detachment, Lt. Brheme, carries a letter from Rogers, detailing the capitulation of the French at Montreal, but he receives it with a high degree of disbelief. The letter: "SIR: That you may not be alarmed at the approach of the English troops under my command, when they come to Detroit, I send forward this by Lieut. Brheme, to acquaint you, that I have Gen. Amherst's orders to take possession of Detroit, and such other posts as are in that district which, by capitulation, agreed to and signed by the Marquis de Vaudreuil. and his Excellency Major Gen. Amherst, the 8th of September last, now belong to the King of Great Britain. I have with me the Marquis de Vaudreuil's letters to you directed, for your guidance on this occasion, which letters I shall deliver you when I arrive at or near your post, and shall encamp the troops I have with me at some distance from the fort, till you have reasonable time to be made acquainted with the Marquis de Vaudreuil's instructions and the capitulation, a copy of which I have with me likewise. I am, SIR, Your humble servant, Robert Rogers." Nonetheless, Rogers embarks on 20 November, trailing Brehme.

In the meantime, while en route Rogers encounters a few Huron sachems on the 21st, who inform him that about 400 Indians had deployed at the entrance of the great strait by Monsieur Beleter, to prevent passage of his flotilla. Rogers directs the sachems to repair to where the Indian had prepared an ambush and instruct them to retire to their villages until his party arrives at the fort. Rogers also promises to call the sachems to the post shortly after the French are replaced, something, he expects to occur two days after his arrival. Rogers also states to the Indians: "Your brothers have long desired to bring this about. Tell your warriors to mind their fathers (the French) no more, for they are all prisoners to your brothers (the English), who pitied them, and left them their houses and goods, on their swearing by the Great One who made the world, to become as Englishmen forever. They are now your brothers; if you abuse them, you affront me, unless they behave ill. Tell this to your brothers the Indians. What I say is truth. When we meet at Detroit, I will convince you it is all true." By the 22nd, the flotilla pauses on the west side of Lake Erie and on the following day, Rogers reaches Cedar Point, where his party establishes camp. While there, some of the Indians, whom they encountered earlier return and inform Rogers that the French under Monsieur Belestre have been preparing to repulse any attempt to take the fort and that they are bolstered by Attawawa Indians.

On the 24th, with the Indians accompanying the rangers, Rogers advances closer to Detroit. Later, during the night, 60 Indians come into their camp to inform Rogers that they will move against Detroit with him to provide an escort for his party. In addition, the Indians provide Rogers with some distressing intelligence by informing him that Lt. Brheme and his party are being held as captives. The Indians also inform Rogers of an action taken by Beleter (Belestre) that he thinks will intimidate Rogers. The Indians according to Rogers, had stated: "Monsieur Beleter (Belestre) had set up an high flag-staff, with a wooden effigy of a man's head on the top, and upon that a crow; that the crow was to represent himself, the man's head mine (Rogers), and the meaning of the whole, that he would scratch out my brains." Rogers after being told of his imminent demise shows no signs of any timidity and the Indians then do their own interpretation

and tell Rogers “that the reverse would be the true explanation of the sign.”

Later on the 25th, Rogers travels only about six additional miles before the Indians request that he suspend for a while to invite the “chief captains” of the Indians that continue to lurk at the mouth of the great straits to hold a parley. Rogers agrees and remains in place until the 27th, spending time with the hostile Indians to persuade them of the folly of attacking Rogers’ force. In the meantime, some correspondence continues to be exchanged between the French commander and Rogers, including a request that Rogers remain outside the entrance of the river until he receives the copy of the Marquis de Vaudreuil’s letter. The commander also express surprise that no French officer is with Rogers. In turn Rogers informs the French commander that he has permitted the inhabitants to arm themselves because he (Belestre) had told Indians aligned with him that they could plunder. Afterward, the letter of capitulation is sent and Belestre is directed not to detain the officer (Captain Campbell) who delivers it. Nonetheless, on the 29th, Rogers lands within one-half mile of the fort.

While deploying, Captain Campbell, accompanied by a French officer, arrives at Rogers’ positions. The Frenchman gives Rogers the commander’s compliments and indicates that he is under Rogers’ command. The saga terminates peacefully. Shortly thereafter, Lt. Leslie, Lt. McCormack and a 36-man contingent of the Royal American Regiment enters the fort without incident. The English bring down the French colors and hoist the British ensign over the fort, while the garrison lays down its arms. At the time the Union Jack is unfurled, the Indians, numbering about 700, let out a vociferous yell in celebration of their joy in the prophesy that the crow on top of the effigy, the head of a man, had been the English. Afterward, Rogers notes that “the inhabitants expressed their satisfaction at our generosity in not putting them to death, and said they would always for the future fight for a nation thus favoured by Him that made the world.”

Rogers, after taking possession of the fort, continues to diligently gather information and attend to other tasks. By 1 December, at about noon, the rangers and army troops complete disarming the militia. The militia then assembles to take an oath of allegiance to the English king. The French prisoners, including Monsieur Belestre are placed in the custody of Lt. Holmes and a 30-man detachment of rangers, which transports the prisoners to Philadelphia, Pennsylvania. Belestre is the final French commander at Detroit, which had been under French domination since 1701 when Antoine Laumet de La Mothe Cadillac, arrived to find the area uninhabited. Cadillac founded Detroit.

Captain Campbell is placed in command of the fort. At about the same time, Major Rogers dispatches a 20-man contingent under Lt. Butler and Ensign Wait, to repair to Fort Miami and Fort Gatanois to escort the garrisons of the French forts back. The instructions to Butler and Gaits include leaving a detachment at Fort Gatanois if feasible, to spend the winter (1760-1761) there to maintain a vigil on the frontier. The post, at first notice of any French movement in the county of Illinois, is under orders to speed the news back to Detroit. In conjunction, Major Rogers, later during 1763, returns to Detroit when it comes under siege by Pontiac, who begins to ravage the entire frontier at that time.

Major Rogers also dispatches Mr. McGee, accompanied by a French officer, to the Shawanese

town along the Ohio river to bring the French troops there back to Detroit. In addition, with winter approaching and the provisions becoming dangerously low, Rogers dispatches most of the rangers under the command of Captain Brewer to Niagara; however, 37 rangers and Lt. McCormack remain with Rogers, who repairs to Michilimackinac. Once there, Rogers concludes several treaties with some of the tribes that inhabit the area. Afterward, Ensign Wait returns with provisions, but Rogers immediately directs him to return to Niagara. Afterward, on the 10th of December, Major Rogers embarks for Lake Huron; however, the journey becomes increasingly dangerous as the days pass due to the weather. By 16 December, the lake becomes impassable due to ice and after conferring with some Indians, Rogers is informed that without snow shoes it would also be impossible to make the trip by an overland route. Following a hazardous and exhausting return trip, the party arrives back at Detroit on the 21st.

Rogers delivers ammunition to Captain Campbell and after a short reprieve at Detroit, Rogers again departs from there on the 23rd, en route to Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. After yet another harrowing journey, the party arrives at Lake Sandusky on 2 January, 1761. After spending time in a Windot (Wyandot) Indian village, the rangers depart on the following day. By the 8th, their provisions are depleted. A party of ten rangers and Rogers moves out to hunt for some food. By 1000, they return with more venison than they require. When the rangers resume the march, the trek becomes no less difficult; however, the party finally comes within sight of the Ohio River on the 20th. Nonetheless, the weather again becomes too nasty to travel, preventing the rangers from resuming the march until the 22nd. By the following day (23rd, the memories of the dreadful journey suddenly begin to fade and morale picks up. The rangers reach another point on the Ohio River on the 23rd and glance at the opposite bank to see the Union Jack flying atop Fort Pitt. The rangers become anxious to enter the fort and relax, if only for a short while. After arriving at the post, Rogers orders Lt. McCormick to return to Albany with the party.

Meanwhile, Major Rogers remains at Fort Pitt until the 26th, when he departs and repairs to Philadelphia and from there, he moves to New York where he arrives on 14 February, 1761, bringing finality to the mission that began at Crown Point during the previous September.

Autumn 1760 -In Tennessee - Timothy Demonbreun and a small party arrives by boat in the area of French Lick (later Nashville) to the surprise of the Indians there who for the first time see a boat under sail. Demonbreun, formerly a French soldier who had participated in the French and Indian War, had begun his journey during the previous spring moving first from Quebec to Kaskaskia, Illinois and from there he ventured down the Cumberland River with his craft laden with goods to establish himself as a trader.

1761-In Virginia, at about this time, contingent of Virginia troops under Colonel William Byrd establish Fort Chiswell, named in honor of Colonel John Chiswell. In conjunction, Fort Chiswell remains active as a defensive post to protect the settlers from the Indians. In conjunction, later, Byrd and Chiswell, while seeking safety in a cave to remain undiscovered by Indians, stumble upon lead and shortly thereafter, they form a mining operation in the area near Austinville.

February 1761-In New York, Captain Philip Schuyler (later major general) embarks for New York aboard the packet *General Wall* on a personal mission for Colonel John Bradstreet to handle the colonel's affairs in the event, Bradstreet should be killed during an upcoming campaign against the Indians allied to the French in the west. At the time, the war had been terminated in the colonies, but not in Europe, where France and England continue the hostilities. Prior to reaching England, the *General Wall* is seized by a French privateer. Schuyler, while aboard the French vessel is able to converse with the captain because of his ability to speak

fluent French. Nevertheless, Schuyler does not reach France. Prior to arriving at a French port, an English warship encounters the privateer and the *General Wall*. The English frigate seizes the privateer and recaptures the *General Wall*. Afterward, Schuyler reaches England safely. In conjunction, General Bradstreet succumbs during 1764.

June 17 1761 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Captain Donald Campbell write to Major Walters at Fort Niagara in New York to inform him about intelligence that has apparently detected a plot by the Seneca Indians to persuade all of the Indian tribes to join together to isolate Fort Pott and Fort Niagara.

July 30 1761 (Thursday)–In New York, Major Henry Gladwin, accompanied by Captain George Ethrington and his company of Royal Americans, embark from Fort Niagara en route to Detroit. Gladwin is to assume command at Detroit as successor to Captain Donald Campbell. The Royal Americans are being sent to various posts on Lake Superior. In conjunction, upon their arrival at Mackinac, it is decided that it is too close to winter to initiate the expedition to Lake Superior to garrison the posts at Sault Ste. Marie, Kaministiquia (Fort William, Canada), and Chequamegon (Fort La Pointe, Wisconsin). Ethrington remains at Mackinac. He dispatches a small contingent under Ensign James to Salt Ste. Marie (Fort Repentigny); however, no changes are made at the other posts. Ensign Edward Jenkins remains at Quiatenon (southwest of present-day Lafayette, Indiana), Ensign Robert Holmes holds the post at Fort Miami (present-day Fort Wayne, Indiana), while Ensign Francis Schlosser remains at St. Joseph's (Niles, Michigan). In addition, Ensign Christopher Pauli remains at Sandusky (Ohio) and at Green Bay, Wisconsin (Le Baye), remains under the command of Lt. James Gorrell. Also, Ensign Thomas Hutchins is dispatched on a missions upon the lakes to deliver various messages to the Indians. Subsequently, he returns to Fort Pitt in Pennsylvania. During 1764, Hutchins participates in Colonel Bouquets campaign as Bouquet's topographer. Later, at the outbreak of the American Revolution, Hutchins is in England. His devotion to the Americans' cause cost him his freedom and he loses a large amount of money. After being released, Hutchins arrives in France and from there he returns to America, where he joins the army under General Nathanael Greene at Charleston. Hutchins, at the time (1781) holds the rank of captain. Congress on 4 May, 1781 Resolves: "that the said Captain Hutchins be appointed a Geographer to the army acting to the South, and that he repair to the Hd. Qrs. of the said Army with all convenient speed, and put himself under the orders of the Commr. of the said Army for the time being. Resolved, That the pay and emoluments of the said Hutchins, be the same as those of the Geographer to the Northern Main Army."

July-August 1761–Indian representatives from various tribes, including Cayugas, Convoys, Delawares, Kanticokes, Mohicans, Oneidas, Onondagas and Tutelos arrive in Easton. In addition, they bring other Indians and their respective families raising the total number of visitors to about 500. Talks are held with Lt. Governor Hamilton and others, including Peters, Chew and Joseph Fox. The Indians complain of settlers moving across the mountain and they complain of the lack of ammunition and other items including their discontent with Sir William Johnson who had promised them that after the French were vanquished, he would establish trade with the Indians to permit them to acquire goods without much expense. Yet other complaints include the Indians not being able to receive a fair price for their furs but an even greater problem according to the Indians is that they are being surrounded by forts, "so that they were penned in like hogs and threatened with death. By this time, the Indians had lost confidence in Sir William Johnson; rather they will speak only with Hamilton, the governor of Pennsylvania. During the course of the talks, the Indians request a trading post at Tioga "to supply powder and

lead, but not strong liquor, the prices to be reasonable, so as to make Johnson sell cheaper.” Nonetheless, Governor Hamilton informs the Indians that Tioga is too far away, then informs them that there are trading posts at Pittsburgh (Pittsburgh) and at Shamokin. And yet other subjects of the long list includes complaints of earlier treaties regarding the sale of lands. In conjunction, Johnson arrives at Easton and inspects the papers regarding the sale of land and it is determined by him that the papers are in order. Teedyuscung, the primary complainant regarding the sale of the land is afterward shown the legitimacy of the transactions.

August 19 1761 (Wednesday)–In New York, Sir William Johnson embarks from Niagara at 1600, accompanied by a contingent of the Royal Americans and the Yorkers, commanded by Lt. Ogden. The Royal Americans are commanded by Ensign Holmes and Ensign Slosser. Johnson is en route to Detroit to hold a conference with the Indians.

September 4 1761 (Friday)-In New York, Sr William Johnson notes in his journal on this date, his feeling regarding provision expected from Fort Pitt: “I am greatly distressed for the want of provisions for the Indians, having received none from Fort Pitt as I expected; wherefore am obliged, at a very great expense, to purchase cattle and what I can get here.”

September 7 1761 (Monday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson, notes in his journal: “Monday 7th. A fine morning. Montour not yet Come, nor the Mohawks. I shall send the interpreters this day to desire that all the nations may be ready to attend the meeting tomorrow, or next day at farthest. The light infantry and Royal Americans are making ready to set off to-morrow, or next day at farthest. I had all the Delawares, Shawanese, Six Nations, and Huron chiefs from the south side of the lakes this afternoon, when I told them I should speak to all on Wednesday, when I desired that they and all the other nations would be ready to attend. Gave them pipes, tobacco, and rum, for their whole number, and parted very friendly.”

September 9 1761 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Detroit, two cannon are fired at 1000 to signal the Indians to gather for the meeting with Sir William Johnson. Johnson is accompanied by Captain Donald Campbell, along with the latter’s officers. Others that attend include the officers of the light infantry as well as the merchants of Detroit and others including George Croghan. Interpreters for the Hurons and Ottowas also attend. Following the meeting, at about 1700, Johnson and the others share dinner with the Indians. About thirty chiefs had attended the speech. The Indians had wanted to do some drinking and had requested to meet again on the following day to answer some questions. Johnson approves and he agrees to again fire the cannon to call the chiefs together. In other activity, the contingents of the light infantry and the Royal American regiments under Captain Balfour embark to garrison Michilimackinac, La Baye and St. Joseph’s embark. Each contingent carries provision which should last for 10 months. Sir William Henry gives Lt. William Leslie, who is to command at Michilimackinac, about 50 pounds of tobacco as a present.

September 10 1761 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson again meets with the Indians. The various chiefs have some complaints about other tribes. The Six Nations reject various accusations made against them by the Hurons. Johnson notes in his journal: “After all was over, the White Mingo (Seneca chief), whose home was on the Allegheny not far above Pittsburgh came to my quarters where all the gentlemen were with me, and desired I would return to the meeting, as he and the Six Nations from Ohio had something to say in answer to what the Hurons had charged them with. We all returned to the council, where we found every nation by themselves. Then Kaiaghshota, a Seneca chief and one who accompanied the two messengers who came here with the war axe to the Hurons, stood up, and with great oratory and resolution, endeavored to clear himself of the imputations laid to his charge, when one of the

Hurons named Adariaghta, the chief warrior of the nation, confronted him and the White Mingo, and discovered everything which had passed. Upon which, the White Mingo told them that they had come several times to him at Ohio, and pressed him and others living there to fall upon the English, which he as often refused. After a great deal of altercation I got up, and desired that they would not go to too great lengths, being now joined in stricter friendship and alliance than ever. Left them liquor and broke up the meeting, telling them I intended next day delivering them some goods, &c., which I had brought for their use, and desired they would be punctual as soon as the cannon was fired.”

September 11 1761 (Friday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson again meets with the Indians, who according to Johnson number about 500. Later after dinner, about 40 Chippewas who had just arrived at Detroit visit with Johnson and after making a speech, they present Johnson with a string of wampum. Afterward, they inform Johnson that they are in agreement with all that he had said. Johnson afterward provides them with “pipes, tobacco, and rum” before they depart.

September 12 1761 (Saturday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson again meets with the Indians of several tribes including “Ottawas, Shaganoos [Shawnee], Chippewas, &c., who made many demands and requests for their several nations, and gave the strongest assurances of being happy in what I (Johnson) said, and of their adhering inviolably to the promises and engagements entered into here, as did the Delawares, Shawanese, &c. by belts and strings.” Afterward, Johnson calls for White Mingo (Kanaghragait) and , and the Seneca, Kaiaghshota who arrived with Tahaiadoris, bearing a message from the Senecas. Johnson relates: “I said a great deal concerning the late design of the Indians in their quarter; set forth the madness of it, and desired them, by a large string of wampum, to reform and repent, which they assured me they and all their people, would pay the strictest observance to; then condoled the Seneca who was killed by our troops stealing horses, with two black strouds, two shirts, and two pairs of stockings; gave them their liquor, I promised, and parted.” In related activity. At 2100, a York officer arrives and delivers a dispatch to Johnson, which had been sent by General Amherst at Niagara. In addition to Amherst’s letter, the officer carries “the belt, which the Senecas sent here, to desire the Hurons, &c., to join against the English.:

September 13 1761 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson meets with representatives of the Chippewa nation at his quarters. The chiefs resolve to “live in the strictest friendship” with the English. The Chippewa also thank Johnson for the way he treated them, which convinced them that Johnson was indeed a friend, stating that Johnson’s presence “had made the sun and sky bright and clear, the earth smooth and level, the roads all pleasant, and the lakes placid.” Afterward, the Indians pause for prayer. Johnson then gives the Indians liquor and beef and then they leave, according to Johnson, they “parted very happy and well pleased.”

September 14 1761(Monday)–In Michigan at Detroit, Sir William Johnson begins to settle accounts with the two French interpreters who assisted during the conferences with the Indians. He also meets with the Huron chiefs and presents them with a “private present.”

September 16 1761 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, at Detroit, Sir William Johnson warns the Ottawa Indians not to “neglect their friends and allies, as the Six Nations have done, notwithstanding all my admonitions.” He also states during the meeting be wary of evil minded people or their wicked schemes” and laid before them the danger of quarreling with the English.” In conjunction, the Indians inform Johnson that the Shawanese had received yet another war-belt from the Senecas.

September 28 1761 (Monday)–In Michigan, a contingent of the Royal Americans (Colonel

Balfour's 60th Regiment), arrives at Fort Michilimackinac and the detachment's arrival is timely for one man, Alexander Henry, whom the Indians are preparing to murder. Lt. Leslie, commander of the diminutive garrison requests a transfer during 1762. That same time, Captain George Ethrington arrives with reinforcements to bolster the garrison and Lt. Leslie assumes the position of second in command. Subsequently, during the following year, Pontiac's Indians massacre nearly the entire garrison; however Ethrington and Leslie are among the few who are spared. See also June 4, 1763.

November 6 1761 (Friday)–In New York, at Fort Niagara, at the request of Sir William Johnson at Detroit, Major Walters dispatches a contingent, led by Lt. Edward Jenkins (Royal Americans) to establish a garrison at Fort Quiatenon (present-day Fort Wayne, Indiana). Jenkins holds the post until it is seized by Pontiac's Indians on 1 June 1763.

May 1762 -In England, Captain Sir Joshua Rowley receives command of the HMS *Superbe* and he is assigned as escort for a convoy of East India Company vessels. Other ships under Rowley's command include the 44-gun *Gosport* and the 38-gun *Danae*. In conjunction, on 10 June, 1786, Rowley becomes a baronet. Subsequently, during September 1787, Rowley is promoted to his highest rank, vice admiral of the White. He succumbs at the age of 58, on 26 February, 1790. **In Wisconsin** - At Fort Edward Augustus in Green Bay, Indians (Menominee and Winnebago) arrive to seek friendly relations and establish an alliance with the British.

May 1762 -In England, Captain Sir Joshua Rowley receives command of the HMS *Superbe* and he is assigned as escort for a convoy of East India Company vessels. Other ships under Rowley's command include the 44-gun *Gosport* and the 38-gun *Danae*. In conjunction, on 10 June, 1786, Rowley becomes a baronet. Subsequently, during September 1787, Rowley is promoted to his highest rank, vice admiral of the White. He succumbs at the age of 58, on 26 February, 1790. **In Wisconsin** - At Fort Edward Augustus in Green Bay, Indians (Menominee and Winnebago) arrive to seek friendly relations and establish an alliance with the British.

December 10 1762 (Friday)–In Canada at Sault Ste. Marie, the post is destroyed by fire and the post commander, Ensign John Jamet sustains severe burns. The garrison transfers to Mackinac. Jamet, while at Fort Michilimackinac, is the first man murdered when the post is attacked by Pontiac's Indians during early June 1763. In conjunction, Jamet had arrived at Detroit during the previous year with Captain Ethrington from Niagara and from there he was dispatched to Sault Ste. Marie.

1763–In the Colonies, the hostile raids unleashed by Pontiac in Pennsylvania and Virginia during the spring, prompt urgent messages to be sent to England to suggest that Great Britain to maintain 10,000 Regulars troops as a supplement to the militia to ensure peace and maintain the defense of the Colonies against the Indians. In reaction, Parliament receives legislation introduced by Charles Townsend which would institute Stamp Duties in the Colonies to offset some of the expenses which would be incurred by such a force. Parliament moves out of session before any action can be taken. In conjunction, the plea from the Colonists for help from England becomes a classic example of the expression, "Be careful for what you wish, as you might receive it. As England dispatches more and more troops and institutes various acts which impose on the rights of the Colonists as they view their rights, the differences between the Americans and the English continue to widen. In conjunction, in Western Virginia settlers establish Kisner's Blockhouse near Fort Edwards at Capon Bridge. **Also**, at this time, according to an official report, the Wyandottes and the Twightwees had previously been strong tribes, but at this time, the men of the Wyandotte tribe number about 250 men, with their villages scattered close to Fort Sandusky (Ohio). The Twightwees number about 2230 men

and their villages are located near the Miami (Maumee) River. Nevertheless, their power evaporated after being overcome by the Six Nations. The same report indicates that sub-tribes of the Miamis (Kickapous, Mascoutens, Piankashaws and Wawiaghtonas) have a combined total of 570 warriors. **In Florida** - Subsequent to the close of the French and Indian War, the English take control of Pensacola, Florida. In conjunction, many people flee including about 100 Indians who had converted to Catholicism; they relocate in Spanish controlled territory. Pensacola is made the capital of British West Florida. The British establish Fort George atop Gage Hill in the vicinity of at present-day Lee Square. Also, Fort Barrancas at Pensacola is now controlled by the British; they reconstruct it during 1771, but later lose it again to the Spanish during 1783. In addition, Fort San Marcos de Apalache at St. Marks, Florida also comes under English control. The fort at St. Marks, remains incomplete, although its construction began during 1739. **In Louisiana (Alabama)** - A key French fort, Fort Toulouse, Alabama comes under British control; however, despite the transfer of the fort being peaceful, the English do not get to use the fort. The Indians who had become friendly with the French refuse to accept the English. Later during the War for Independence, the fort is unused except by Indians. The site of the fort returns to prominence during the 1800s (Creek Indian War 1813-1814) when Fort Jackson is established there. **In Missouri**, St. Louis (Missouri) is founded by Pierre La Glède, a French fur trader. **In Pennsylvania** - Fort McAlister is established in Cumberland County by Pennsylvania militia. In other activity, Fort Ralston is established at Bath, Pennsylvania near Allentown, about mid-way between Philadelphia and Scranton. Also, during the French and Indian War, many colonial settlements had suffered greatly due to raids and full-scale attacks by the French and their Indian allies. In one county in Pennsylvania (Berks), records indicate that about civilians 150 including women and children had been killed and many also scalped. In addition, about thirty were captured by the Indians. In contrast, only about four Indians had been killed. Also, two English astronomers, Charles Mason and Jeremiah Dixon, lay out the "Mason and Dixon Line" between Pennsylvania and Maryland.

April 1763 - In the Colonies, subsequent to the English victory over France in North America (French and Indian War), there were problems with hostile Indians in the Northwest Territory (Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Ohio). Settlements in western Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia often become targets of the hostile Indians, particularly when the crops would be harvested. At this time an Ottowan Indian named Pontiac assumes a leadership position among the tribes and the plan to oust the whites from the Ohio Valley commences. rises to prominence among the tribes. The Indians in the west had continued hostilities with the colonists after the French defeat, usually with support from Canada. Pontiac, gathers many braves to attack the white settlers that have crossed the Alleghenies (Alleghenies) to settle the valley. He leads several Indian tribes, including the Delawares, Miami, Sciota, and Shawanese in a series of raids against the Colonists who have settled in the frontiers including western Pennsylvania and Virginia and Maryland.

April 1763 - In the Colonies, subsequent to the English victory over France in North America (French and Indian War), there were problems with hostile Indians in the Northwest Territory (Indiana, Illinois, Michigan and Ohio). Settlements in western Pennsylvania, Maryland and Virginia often become targets of the hostile Indians, particularly when the crops would be harvested. At this time an Ottowan Indian named Pontiac assumes a leadership position among the tribes and the plan to oust the whites from the Ohio Valley commences. rises to prominence among the tribes. The Indians in the west had continued hostilities with the colonists after the French defeat, usually with support from Canada. Pontiac, gathers many braves to attack the

white settlers that have crossed the Alleghenies (Alleghenies) to settle the valley. He leads several Indian tribes, including the Delawares, Miami, Sciota, and Shawanese in a series of raids against the Colonists who have settled in the frontiers including western Pennsylvania and Virginia and Maryland.

These attacks succeed in overwhelming thinly manned outposts stretched between the Ohio River and Lake Erie. The situation becomes grim, but the posts at Detroit, Niagra and Fort Pitt (formerly Fort Du Quesne) do not fall. However, Fort Edward Augustus in Wisconsin is abandoned. In addition, fresh troops rush toward the defenses at Detroit and Fort Pitt, and encounter tenacious opposition as they advance. In conjunction, the Six Nations had contemplated joining Pontiac, but through the efforts of Sir William Johnson, they are dissuaded. During these hostilities, the settlers at Greenbrier County (western Virginia) at Lewisburg are attacked and the Indians seize women and children and murder the men, terminating settlers from moving there until 1770. Also, Sir William Johnson dies on 11 July, 1774. His son, John Johnson inherits the estates and he becomes a major general in the army. Sir William Johnson's son-in-law, Guy Johnson assumes responsibility for Indian Affairs.

During 1776, both Guy Johnson and Sir John bolt to Canada to fight alongside the English. Joseph Brant having become a chief, leads his forces against the Americans, primarily in New York state. However, later, Joseph Brant become an ally of the English and he receives a large land grant. Having been a Christian, Brant translates the Liturgy of the Anglican Church into the Mohawk language. He dies on 24 November 1807. His last words: "Have pity on the poor Indians; if you can get any influence with the great, endeavour to do them all the good you can." Chief Joseph Brant is buried in Brantford, Ontario Canada alongside the Old Mohawk church, which was a gift from Queen Anne to the Indians during 1712.

April 3 1763 (Sunday) - New York - In the Mohawk valley, a peace treaty is signed with the Seneca Indian nation **In Pennsylvania**, Teedyuscung, King of the Delawares, is killed while he sleeps when his house burns down. He had gone to sleep after becoming drunk and it is thought the fire was set intentionally by Indian enemies.

April 17 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, the Indians convene a grand council near Detroit along the banks of the Ecores River. Pontiac rants about the conduct of the British and in contrast, he proclaims that the French had always "treated them as brothers." And then he boasts: "The redcoats have conquered the French, but they have not conquered us. We are not slaves or squaws and as long as the Great Spirit is ruler, we will maintain our rights. These lakes and woods were given us by our fathers and we will part with them only with our lives." Pontiac continues to blast the English, while telling those gathered that they will soon receive support from the French, saying: "The Indians and their French brethren would fight once more side by side as they had always fought; they would strike the English as they had struck them many moons ago, when their great army marched down the Monongahela, and they had shot them from ambush like a flock of pigeons in the woods." Pontiac's words win the day and the chiefs in attendance agree to launch a massive attack during the following month. Eighteen of the major tribes, that inhabit the area between the Mississippi River to the Allegheny Mountains begin preparation to strike their foe all along the frontier. The scheme remains secret and word of the imminent conflict does not get leaked.

The Indians intend to strike across the entire frontier, beginning with Detroit to shock the British by reducing every fort and post in their path, along with the British settlements. The settlements are to be decimated by fire and the tomahawk with lightning speed. The Indians launch the

offensive during May and they achieve total surprise. The warpath carries them to twelve separate forts and of those nine fall, with many of the garrisons after capitulating being completely or partial massacred, including women and children. The forts or posts that fall: Le Boeuf; Venango; Presque Isle (Lake Erie); St. Joseph's (Niles Michigan); Miamis (Fort St. Philippe), Indiana; Fort Quiatenon (Ouachtanon) along the Wabash River in Indiana; Fort Sandusky (Ohio) and Fort Michilimackinac (Machinaw). Fort Le Baye (Green Bay--Lake Michigan), known also as Fort St. Francois (St. Francis) is renamed Fort Edward Augustus during 1761 is abandoned during the raids by Pontiac's Indians. Later, the post is again renamed Fort Crawford. The forts are attacked nearly simultaneously, however, despite the tremendous success, the Indians fail to gain the three primary posts, Detroit, Niagara and Fort Pitt, all of which repel the assaults.

May 1 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Detroit, Pontiac, accompanied by about 40-50 Indians arrives at the fort and informs Major Gladwin that when the remainder of his nation arrives, he (Pontiac) would return to officially visit with him in accordance with the annual tradition when the Indians arrive to celebrate friendship with the British an dance the Calumet, a piece (music and lyrics) apparently written by Jacques Marquette during the 1670s. In conjunction, the Indians return on 7 May and their number amounts to several hundred; however the celebration they intend to cheer is the destruction of the fort. Many of the Indians have weapons hidden under their clothes.

May 7 1763 (Saturday)--In Michigan, Fort Detroit becomes a target of the Indians under Pontiac. In an attempt to gain the fort by trickery, the Indians inform the fort's commander, Major Gladwin that they would like to give a performance to express friendship. The ruse fails; however, because Gladwin had been alert and the garrison is on guard, armed and well deployed to annihilate the Indians if they unfold their treacherous plan. The troops permit the Indians to enter the post, but some reports state that only about sixty are granted entrance. To the surprise of Pontiac's Indians, when they begin to scrutinize the fort's defenses, they immediately sense that they are in an armed camp. The troops all bear arms and they are deployed from where they can rapidly cut down the foe if it becomes necessary. Within about one-half hours, the Indians realize their plot cannot be carried out. They make some speeches and afterward the troops provide them with gifts of bread, tobacco and other items and afterward they depart. The Indians place Detroit under siege on the 10th as part of the unfolding plans to attack all the English forts. Although the garrison due to the vigilance of the troops remains unharmed, the Indians do intercept traders and others near the posts and other posts as well. All people caught are killed.

May 8 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, Pontiac returns to Fort Detroit. He carries a peace pipe and requests that he and his Indians return on the following day “to bury all bad Reports.” However, Major Gladwin responds, saying that “if he had anything to say, he might come back with the rest of his Chiefs and he (Gladwin) would hear them.”

May 9 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, at Detroit, Pontiac breaks his camp and crosses the river at a point less than one mile from the fort. Nevertheless, Pontiac's interpreter informs him that Gladwin would not grant permission to enter the fort. Pontiac afterward departs and initiates his raids. The Indians embark in their canoes and move to a small island several miles from the fort, where they begin to kill the cattle; however, the king's cattle are not the only victims. Those people tending the livestock are also murdered, along with other families in the region, including

one family on the island that had just completed construction of their house. In addition, a family (James Fisher, formerly a sergeant in the British Army) that lives in close proximity of the fort is also killed. In addition to Fisher's wife, there are also about four soldiers there, who are killed. Pontiac also begins to isolate the garrison by threatening death to anyone attempting to take supplies or provisions to the fort. By the following day, the fort is encircled. In other activity, near Detroit, Sir Robert Davers, a son of the late Sir Jermyn of Suffolk, who arrived in America about 1761 comes under attack while he is with a small party. After spending the winter of 1762-1763 at Detroit, Davers had embarked during early May to join with Captain Charles Robertson (Robinson), who is searching for a channel. On this day, a small party including, Davers, Robertson, six soldiers and two sailors are attacked "while engaged in taking soundings near the mouth of the River Huron (later St. Clair River)." Robertson had been trying to discover a water route on the lakes and rivers that would accommodate a schooner, moored at Detroit, while en route to Mackinac. Pontiac's Indians murder most of the party; however some of the boat's crew are taken as prisoners. One man, Samuel Rutherford, is sold to a Frenchman; on 4 June, however, Pontiac learns of the incident. Pontiac, accompanied by 50 braves, regains Rutherford on 6 June. Nonetheless, later Rutherford escapes his captivity and makes it back to Fort Niagara on 1 August of this year. This incident is essentially is the beginning of the siege of Detroit. In conjunction, the men murdered by the Indians are the initial fatalities of Pontiac's War. Reports state that Davers' body was "devoured at a cannibal feast." Daver's demise is also reported in the Pennsylvania Gazette that Ensign Christopher Pauli (Pully) had seen the skin of Captain Robertson's arm "in use as a Tobacco Pouch." In conjunction, Pauli is captured on 16 May of this year at Sandusky; however, he later escapes from his captors.

May 10 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan at Detroit, the Indians inform the commander, Major Gladwin that if he surrenders, the garrison will be spared. Gladwin, aware of Indian treatment declines the offer. A small contingent including Captain Donald Campbell and George McDougal, despite having been forewarned several day ago not to venture out of the fort, moves out of the post under a white flag to parley. The Frenchman, M. Gouin, who sent the warning stated that the Indians had already begun to imperil one of the French interpreters (La Butte). The party is confronted by a band of Indians who rush it; however, Pontiac calms the situation. Nonetheless, the men are seized and taken to an Indian lodge. As the men attempt to return to the fort, they are restrained and taken to the home of M. Meloche close to Parent Creek. In the meantime, two of Pontiac's Indians who were captured several days before remain inside the fort, which most probably is the reason the English captives are not harmed for the time being. In conjunction, at the time Pontiac initiates the siege, Gladwin is bolstered by two ships, the *Gladwin*, a schooner and the *Beaver*. The presence of the ships protects the fort from coming under attack from the water. The garrison is composed of only 122 troops and 8 officers, along with 40 fur traders and engages. The fort's defenses include one row of palisades that stand about 25-feet high and blockhouses at the gates and angles of the quadrilateral post. Inside the fort, there are about 100 small houses, a church and a council house all packed along diminutive streets, which makes them a lucrative target for burning arrows. There is only one wide street in the entire complex. The most obvious target is the church, which had been constructed close to the palisades. However, the church has some additional protection, a French priest who demands that the Indians refrain from targeting the church or face "the anger of the Great Spirit." The garrison is acutely aware of the possibility of raging fires; however, Gladwin's troops are able to possess an abundance of water from the nearby river and they are able to quickly extinguish any

fires that break out. The artillery includes two 6-pounders and three mortars; however, the latter are deployed in bad positions and present more of a pernicious threat than they can actually inflict. Nonetheless, the Indians throughout the country are known to fear artillery and here too, it is conspicuous. Although they surround the garrison and maintain a constant vigil, they refuse to venture close enough to enter the range of the guns. The Indians, however, jump at the opportunity to strike any of the troops that might stick his head above the palisades or provide a target by peering through a port hole.

May 11 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, Pontiac informs Major Gladwin that he must abandon the post and take sufficient provisions to last for the journey to Niagara; however, Pontiac also demands that Gladwin “leave all the merchandise.” In turn, Gladwin responds by saying that no terms will be met until Captain Donald Campbell and Lt. McDougal are released and returned to the fort. Gladwin informs Pontiac that once his officers are returned, the two Indians being held in the fort will be released. In conjunction, some Frenchmen encourage Gladwin to abandon the fort and embark upon the vessels because about 1,000-1,500 Indians are preparing to storm the fort. Meanwhile, the garrison prepares to defend. All of the troops remain close to their weapons throughout the night.

May 12 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, Pontiac sends Major Gladwin another ultimatum. Gladwin obfuscates by responding with an ambiguous answer that buys some additional time. In the meantime, Gladwin had on the 10th, secured some Frenchmen who secretly began loading supplies during the nights on the two vessels. On this day, the fort is totally surrounded and Pontiac’s force initiates its firing upon the two ships and the fort; however, they fire from a great distance. Consequently, losses were low. One man in the fort is wounded and aboard the ships only one man is wounded. The fort’s return fire kills about three of the attackers and it is estimated that about 9 or ten are wounded during the 4-hour exchange. After dark, the garrison again for the fourth night remains with their arms throughout the night.

May 13 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan, a trader, Chapman, is ambushed by Indians when his group of batteax or canoes arrives close to Detroit. Th Indians seize a large amount of merchandise, including powder and rum. A detachment of volunteers, under Captain Hopkins (a ranger), from the fort is taken by the sloop to retaliate against the Huron camp. While en route, the winds drastically change and the sloop is unable to reach the objective. In the meantime, the Indians continue to fire upon the fort throughout the day. The trader is held captive and subsequently, it is decided to kill him by fire. After he is tied to a stake, the fire is started. Soon after, one of the Indians brings the trader a container of soup; however, it is boiling hot and causes the trader to toss the soup at the Indian. Nonetheless, surprisingly, he is not immediately killed; rather, the Indians are stunned and conclude that the trader is crazy. Suddenly, cries of “he is mad” ring out and the superstitions of the Indians actually saves the traders life. Believing that he is a lunatic, the Indians extinguish the fire and release him. Subsequently, on 12 July is “brought in and (he) surrendered.”

May 14 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan at Detroit, the Indians resume firing at the fort and the ships at about 1100. The firing continues until dusk; however, yet again, the Indians refuse to move close to the fort. Two men of the garrison are wounded. In related activity, Major Gladwin is able to get a message for General Amherst out of the fort. It arrives safely and Amherst on 22

June, writes to Colonel Bradstreet regarding Gladwin's letter. Gladwin letter detailed the situation regarding the siege and the high morale of the garrison. Gladwin remains confident that he can hold the fort until reinforcements arrive from Niagara. Amherst's letter informs Bradstreet that Captain Wilkins had informed him (Amherst) that upon the arrival of the schooner from Detroit, a 5-man contingent under a lieutenant was sent to reinforce the garrison at Detroit. **In New York**, Lt. Cuyler and his 96-man contingent embarks from Niagara en route to Detroit to bolster the garrison and deliver supplies and provisions. The contingent travels in 18 boats.

May 16 1763 (Monday)--In Michigan, the siege of Fort Detroit continues; however, the garrison remains on high alert; however, there is hardly any activity, except for some sporadic fire upon the ships. **In Ohio**, Fort Sandusky (Ohio) garrisoned by Ensign Christopher Pauli (Paully) and a small contingent come under attack. The Indians set the fort afire and massacre the troops. Pauli is spared and taken captive. He is taken to Fort Detroit (under siege) and within view of the fort, he is prepared for his execution. to be burned to death.

May 17 1763 (Tuesday)--In Michigan, the garrison at Fort Detroit although constantly under arms, day and night, receive a slight reprieve. The Indians remain docile for the greater part of the day. Only a small number of Indians fire upon the fort and the total of the shots fired amounts to only 20. **In Pennsylvania**, at Fort Pitt, a group of Indians (Six Nations) that had traveled about ninety miles from a point on the Ohio arrive near the fort and settle at Pine Creek. Several days later, the chiefs arrive at the fort to return horses that some younger braves had stolen. The Indians begin to plant corn and continue with the task until the 26th. Later this same month, two scouts return from a Munsie village about 7 miles from the fort, but discover the village is deserted and the cornfield is unattended. A pattern begins to develop that causes alarm at the fort. The reasons for the uncharacteristic behavior remains unknown; however, the commander at the fort instinctively realizes that an Indian scheme is developing.

May 18 1763 (Wednesday)--In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the garrison remains under siege; however, again the Indians remain inactive, except for a few sporadic shots that are fired from behind the houses of two men, St. Martins and M. Babie, the latter having become an ally of the English. Babie at the risk of his own life has been secretly funneling provisions into the fort. Later, on 3 July, M. Babie abandons his home and moves into the fort. Subsequently, on 25 August, the English destroy his house to prevent it from being used by the Indians.

May 20 1763 (Friday)--In Michigan, a survivor of the Crawford party that was ambushed earlier this month arrives at Fort Detroit through the efforts of some Frenchmen. He had been captured, but later he was able to escape. In other activity, the fort remains under siege, but again, the Indians this day are relatively inactive.

May 21 1763 (Saturday)--In Michigan at Fort Detroit, one of the two vessels embarks for Niagara at the mouth of the Detroit River. Reports differ on whether it was the *Gladwin* or the *Beaver* that embarked. Later in the day, the ship grounds at about 1800. Indians attempt to board the vessel; however, some accurate shooting from the ship kills one of the Indians that is in the lead canoe, causes some panic. The Indians abort the attack and move back to shore. Afterward, the ship gets free and resumes the journey to arrive at Niagara on the following morning.

May 22 1763 (Sunday)–In Maryland, the region surrounding Fort Cumberland continues to come under attacks by Indians. About nine settlers living near the fort have been murdered during the last ten days. **In Michigan, at Fort Detroit,** Mr. St. Martin arrives at the fort to give Major Gladwin a message from the Hurons. The Hurons claim that they had been coerced by the Ottawas to take up the hatchet and the message St. Martin delivers also expresses a desire for peace. They admit to having taken the trader Chapman prisoner and another party of five Englishmen, who were en route from Sandusky to Detroit. The Hurons propose turning the prisoners over to Gladwin in exchange for peace and they offer to compensate Chapman “for the Part of his merchandise that fell to their Lot in the Division of them with the other Indians.” In response, Gladwin, through the interpreter, St. Martin, agrees to the peace under the previously stated conditions and Gladwin tells the Indians that “he wou’d recommend them to the general (Amherst).” In other activity, it is reported that the garrison is not fired upon during the entire day.

May 23 1763 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, a large band of Indians launches an attack against Fort Ligonier. The Indians continue the attack into the following day, without success. The fort is located about 60 miles east of Fort Pitt. Other points in Pennsylvania and Virginia are also threatened. The settlements west of Shippensburg and Carlisle in Pennsylvania by this time have been abandoned, except for a few who remain in well fortified settler’s forts or blockhouses. The residents had moved eastward to avoid being attacked. In Virginia at Winchester, hundreds of settlers (women and children) have fled to Fort Loudoun to seek safety.

May 24 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the Indians surround the fort during the evening and they open fire upon the sloop. The crew spots a large concentration of Indians in one place and soon after a 6-pounder goes into action. The Indians apparently sustain casualties because afterward, the fire which had been incessant suddenly tails off to less than ten additions rounds being fired. In addition, the fort comes under fire; however, Gladwin responds by returning fire with a 4-pounder. Shortly thereafter, the Indians fire no more that about 20 shots before they retire, while singing the “Death Song,” a sign that the 4-pounder had inflicted casualties. In conjunction, the Indians had attempted to set the fort on fire, but the effort failed.

May 25 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, the Indians again surround Fort Detroit in another attempt to set the fort on fire. Nonetheless, again the garrison drives them back. In other activity, Fort St. Joseph (Niles, Michigan), manned by only fourteen men, commanded by Ensign Francis Schlosser, is attacked by Pontiac’s Indians. The fort is set afire and the troops are seized. Eleven of the troops are murdered. Four including Schlosser are taken captive and moved to the vicinity of Detroit and used by the Indians as an exchange to free a group of Potawatomi held at Detroit. Schlosser is exchanged on 15 June of this year. In conjunction, the English regain control of Fort St. Joseph during the following year.

May 26 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin is informed that a band of Ottawas had arrived from Sandusky on the previous night and that they had brought the commander of the fort there, Ensign Pauli (Pully), with them. Pauli had been a survivor of the massacre at Sandusky on 16 May. During the journey, Pauli had been harshly treated and he was told he would be burned to death after reaching Detroit. Shortly before he was to be burned, his life is again spared when through some fortuitous luck, a squall chooses to adopt him. Pauli

agrees to the adoption to buy time and save his life; however, later, he escapes and makes it safely to the fort where he arrives during early July. Afterward, during 1770, Pauli is commissioned as a lieutenant and later during 1775, while based in the West Indies, he is promoted to the rank of captain. Captain Pauli does not serve in America during the Revolution. He succumbs while in the west Indies.

May 27 1763 (Friday)–In Indiana, Fort Miami (formerly Fort Miamis and also Fort St. Phillippe) at Kekionga (Fort Wayne, Indiana) is seized by Indians under Pontiac. The small garrison is easily taken. Initially, the commander Ensign Robert Holmes and a soldier are killed when Holmes leaves the fort after being fooled by a young Indian girl with whom he was living. She convinces Holmes to leave the post to help a squall who she claims is ill in a wigwam that is close to the fort. Once there, Indians shoot him. A sergeant rushes to the sound of the gunfire and the Indians seize him. The raiding party relieves Holmes of his head and catapults it over the fence into the gate, apparently terrifying the remaining troops. Soon after, a Frenchman, who is with the Indians, calls out for the fort to surrender and be spared death. Lacking a commander, the troops capitulate. Once the Indians pass through the gates, the garrison, except six troops is massacred. The six survivors, receive only a short reprieve as each is soon after, tied to a stake and burned to death. **In Michigan**, at Fort Detroit, two canon are fired as a warning to the vessel that Pontiac's illusion of peace is only a ruse to ensure the ship is not tricked. Also at about 1500, Pontiac arrives back at the siege with Captain Donald Campbell. Afterward, Pontiac issues an ultimatum to Major Gladwin that demands the vessel be surrendered to him; however, Gladwin refuses to comply with the demand. In response, Pontiac proclaims that he would return and attack. Nonetheless, Pontiac makes camp on a nearby island; however, the ship weighs anchor and departs. Also, the Frenchman, St. Martin, informs Gladwin that the Hurons intend to remain neutral and they said that if forced by the Ottawas to fight, they would disperse and vanish in the woods. The Hurons also claim that if the Hurons still at Sandusky attempt to fight alongside of the Ottawas, the former would have their weapons seized.

May 27-28 1763–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, Mr. McKee informs Captain Simeon Ecuyer that trouble with the Delawares and Mingoes is imminent. McKee reports that those Indians had sold many skins for about £300 and the money was used to purchase ammunition. On the 28th, Ecuyer dispatches McKee on a reconnaissance mission to investigate the activity at the camps of the Indians. Nevertheless, McKee carries out his mission, but it only confirms the intelligence he gave Ecuyer on the previous day. The Indians had abandoned their villages.

May 27-15 June 1763--In Pennsylvania, during the night (27th) at about 2300, a trader named Calhoun receives a visit from Chief Shingas and several of his warriors. The Indians inform Calhoun that bands of Ottawa and Ojibwas are en route to raid the region and they wanted him to escape before they arrive. Calhoun is also informed that the Indians had already seized a large number of posts. Calhoun and his thirteen employees take the advice and depart; however, the Indians con Calhoun by compelling the men to leave their weapons behind in exchange for guides who will escort them to Fort Pitt. Unwittingly, the twelve men accompanied by three guides set out for Fort Pitt. The journey is uneventful until the party reaches Beaver Creek, where allies of Chief Shingas lay in ambush. The colonist, lacking weapons have no opportunity to defend themselves, are struck by a sheet of fire that kills eleven men. Calhoun and two others escape death and break away. They reach Fort Pitt safely. Nonetheless, at Fort Pitt, word of the massacre from the survivors places the fort on full alert. The houses outside the fort are destroyed to prevent the Indians from setting them on fire, which would compel the garrison to evacuate. The commanding officer, Captain Ecuyer, is able to raise about 330 men, including

his troops, along with some woodsmen and traders. However, the fort also contains about 100 women and children, primarily family members of the settlers. Although Ecuyer has a grave crisis due to the threat of the Indians, the crowded conditions within the fort create another dilemma. An epidemic of small-pox breaks out. A hospital is constructed under the drawbridge and the garrison also creates a fire engine. Meanwhile, the fort had been encircled by Indians and anyone daring to leave the fort faces probable certain death. In conjunction, Fort Venango falls on 18 June and no one survives. On the following day, June 19, Fort Leboeuf falls. A few men escape from Fort Leboeuf and two of them reach Fort Pitt on 25 June, followed later by some others. Also, Fort Presque Isle is placed under siege on 15 June and after several days, the fort capitulates, but the garrison is not massacred. The troops are taken to Detroit. One man, Benjamin Gray escapes and makes it to Fort Pitt.

May 28 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the siege continues; however, this day there is little activity. The Indians in anticipation of ambushing a work detachment, establishes an ambush site, where the troops had gone several days ago. Nonetheless, no troops arrive. **In New York**, a contingent led by Lt. Cuyler (Queen’s Rangers) arrives at the mouth of the Detroit River. His command includes about 96 troops (60th Regiment). They are transporting 139 barrels of provisions for the garrison at Detroit. Later during the night, the contingent is ambushed while encamped at Point Pelee (Ontario, Canada) by a large band of Indians. The English sustain heavy casualties. Two sergeants, 52 privates, one woman and one child are killed. Lt. Cuyler and 3 privates are wounded and of the three men, two die of their wounds. Five of the bateaux attempt to escape; however Cuyler saves only two, while the Indians seize eight, along with the supplies and provisions. Cuyler leads the survivors to Fort Sandusky (Ohio); however, he finds it destroyed. Afterward, Cuyler, with about 35 others, arrives at Fort Detroit (30 May). Subsequently, Cuyler becomes captain in the 46th Regiment and afterward, during 1777, he is promoted to major in the 55th Regiment and later that same year, he is promoted to the rank of Lt. Colonel. He attains the rank of colonel during 1782, but his name disappears from the British army list after 1789. **In Pennsylvania**, a band of Delaware Indians under their chief, Wolfe raids Northumberland County. They strike the Claphams at Sewickley Creek, close to West Newton. Colonel William Clapham, along with his wife, one of his men, 2 women (including Mrs. Clapham) and one child are barbarously murdered at about 1400, during this raid.

The report of the details regarding the condition of the bodies of the murdered women was described as being so “brutal that decency forbids mention.” Later, this same day, two soldiers from Fort Pitt are killed and scalped at the saw mill. Three other men who had been near Clapham’s residence, escape harm and arrive at Fort Pitt on the following day. They inform Ecuyer that Clapham and everyone in his house had been killed. In conjunction, there is some doubt as to whether or not, Clapham’s wife had been in the house at the time of the massacre; however, a letter dated 31 May, from Colonel Bouquet (at Fort Pitt) to General Amherst, it states: “We have most melancholy accounts here—the Indians have broke out in several places, and murdered Colonel Clapham and his family.”

May 29 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, word arrives that the Indians had ambushed a small party that was snagged on the Huron River when the two bateaux were intercepted. The party, composed of 19 troops and one woman is thought to have been Sergeant Shaw returning from Michilimackinac after transporting provisions to the garrison. Also eight

bateaux that had been seized by Indians from the contingent under Lt. Cuyler are spotted. Cuyler's party was ambushed on the 28th of May at Point Pelee (Ontario, Canada) while the detachment was en route to Detroit. Later, Cuyler's party (36 survivors of the attack) is seen as it passes the fort. They are within sound of the voices of men in the garrison who instructs Cuyler to row to the vessel under their cover fire. One man falls into the water and is killed by the Indians, but the others reach the safety of the ship. In other activity at the fort, two inebriated Indians attempt to sneak up on the fort to set fires; however, the two courageous braves cannot reach the fort. One dies suddenly and drops to the ground. The other retreats, but he does not get very far before he too gets liquidated. Otherwise the fort has been spared fire from the Indians for two days because of over indulgence of spirits. Less than five shots are fired at the fort this day. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Pitt, a small 3-man detachment returns to the fort. The men report to Captain Ecuyer and inform him of the massacre at the Clapham residence that occurred on the previous day. Also, most if not all of the nearby inhabitants begin arriving at the fort to seek safety from the Indians. At about 1600, a man named Coulson arrives. He had been held captive at the lower Shawanese town. He provides new information and explains that he and some other traders had entered the town and soon after, an Indian arrived that said Detroit had fallen and Fort Sandusky (Ohio) had also fallen. In conjunction, Pontiac's Indians had seized Sandusky, but Detroit had not been seized. Also, Coulson informs Captain Ecuyer, that once the Indians heard the news, two of the Delaware chiefs, known as Chief Beaver and Chief Shingess, but more often referred to as King B and King S, speak to Mr. Calhoun, the trader at the village and tell him to depart from the fort immediately. The Indians provide three escorts to get Calhoun and the other white men to Fort Pitt. Nonetheless, when the party of fourteen reach Beaver Creek they are fired upon. Coulson, at this time believes he is the sole survivor. However, on the following day, two of Calhoun's men arrive and confirm the attack and Calhoun also survives.

May-June 1763--In Pennsylvania, Chief Pontiac, gathers many braves to attack the white settlers that have crossed the Alleghenies (Alleghenies) to settle the valley. He leads several Indian tribes, including the Delawares, Miami, Sciota, and Shawanese in a series of raids against the colonists who have settled in the frontiers of Pennsylvania and Virginia. These attacks succeed in overwhelming several Outposts stretched between the Ohio River and Lake Erie. The situation becomes grim, but the colonists at Detroit, Niagara and Fort Pitt (formerly Fort Du Quesne) do not fall. In addition, reinforcements rush toward the defenses at Detroit and Fort Pitt, and encounter tenacious opposition as they advance. In conjunction, the Six Nations had contemplated joining Pontiac, but through the efforts of Sir William Johnson, they are dissuaded. Retaliation is swift. The Colonists attack a tribe along the Susquehanna River at Conestoga, but it had not been involved and in fact has been friendly to the Colonists. Their vengeance goes beyond retaliation. These Scotch and Irish Colonists from Paxton Township essentially slaughter these non-violent Indians (Conestoga, formerly Susquehannock) who are residing with some Moravian missionaries. Men, women and children succumb to the unexpected violence as the men drive even into Lancaster slaying Indians who had taken refuge. Following this incident, the violent raid extends all the way down into Philadelphia. Indians who had fled to Philadelphia for safety are tracked down and killed during January of 1764; this activity which had taken the lives of innocent Indians infuriates Benjamin Franklin and other prominent leaders. Franklin raises the Philadelphia militia, which comes to the aid of the Indians and forcefully evicts the "Paxton Boys" as they are known. In conjunction, the men who had committed these atrocities receive no punishment as at this time, there is no authority in Pennsylvania capable of carrying out justice,

essentially allowing them to get away with murder. In conjunction, these murdered Conestoga are the last of the tribe.

June 1 1763 (Wednesday)–In Indiana, Pontiac's forces attack and defeat the English at Fort Quiatenon (Lafayette, Indiana). The fort is commanded by Edward Jenkins, who has been there since 1761, when his contingent seized it from the French. The fort, which is thinly garrisoned is seized, but due to the efforts of some Frenchmen, the troops are not massacred. Jenkins later escapes and makes it to Mobile (Alabama). Afterward, Jenkins makes it to New York. Nevertheless, Jenkin's regiment, the Royal Americans (60th Regiment) by that time is being shaved down. Consequently, Jenkins departs from the service; however, he reenters the army during 1771, when he receives a lieutenant's commission in the British 65th Regiment of Foot. He retains his rank until 1775. In this instance, French traders are able to persuade the Indians to spare the lives of the garrison. However, the fort is burned to the ground. The garrison is taken to Illinois. **In Michigan,** at Fort Detroit, at about 1500, voices, coming from a hill behind the fort are heard. The men (two) informs guards that they are traders who had escaped from the Indians. Both men are admitted to the fort through a small port. Less than one-half hour later, the crew aboard the vessel hears a voice from the opposite bank and he too claims to be a trader who escaped from the Indians. Nevertheless, the trader's call for a boat to carry him to the ship is handled cautiously for fear of it being a trap. Two Frenchmen, using a canoe are sent to pick up the man, who had been with Lt. Cuyler when his contingent was ambushed (28 May). In related activity, Indians are observed as they row down the river in what is thought to be a mission to intercept other traders en route from Niagara. **In Pennsylvania,** on the previous night, Captain Ecuyer had dispatched dispatches two riders to Venango; however, they are intercepted by Indians at Shanipin's Town. One of the men sustains a wound to his leg, but both riders arrive back at the fort this day. In yet other activity, another man arrives at the fort from Redstone about noon. He is immediately dispatched with instructions to return to Redstone and instruct the sergeant there to repair to the fort. The sergeant is also ordered to bring the 600 pounds off gunpowder that belongs to some traders. Later on this day, Mr. Calhoon arrives at the fort and he is carrying notes that he took at Tuskarawas. His notes indicate that five chiefs instructed him to leave for Fort Pitt at about 2300 on the night of the 27th. They were Beaver, Daniel, Shingess, Windohala, Wingenum and William Anderson. His notes also state that the Indians will protect his goods for six months and that he is to inform George Groghan that nor any other should question the news he received (attacks on forts and other items). Calhoon's notes also state that the Indians promise him that the one white man at Gichanga will be protected from harm and that he will be sent home.

June 2 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the garrison continues to be prepared for an attack; however, the day passes without any firing from the Indians. Nevertheless, once again about 15 canoes are spotted as the Indians row down the river in search of traders. In other activity, a Frenchman arrives at the fort and inform Major Gladwin that a peace treaty between France and England had been signed earlier on 20 February, 1763. **In Pennsylvania,** Fort Ligonier comes under assault by Indians at about 0500. By this time some reinforcements had arrived and some civilians, including Andrew Byerly who was forced to abandon Byerly's relay station at Bushy Run. Lieutenant Archibald Blane, the commanding officer, and his contingent of Royal Americans, along with the pioneers, repel the assault. Initially, the Indians fire from positions on the fringes of the town and Blane does not even return fire. Later when the Indians

change their positions, Blane dispatches a contingent to set the nearby house on fire, which apparently disappoints the Indians, who afterward depart. In other activity, Captain Ecuyer at Fort Pitt, again sends riders to Fort Venango. Three men depart from the fort. After traveling about twenty miles they are intercepted by a band of Indians and must abort the journey. Meanwhile, back at the fort, Indians set fire to houses outside the fort on the nearby hill.

June 3 1763 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Pitt, Captain Ecuyler concentrates on fortifying the post in anticipation of an Indian attack. The entire garrison is involved with the project, which continues into the following day. In other activity, Captain Lewis Ourry, the commander of Fort Bedford writes a letter to Colonel Bouquet explaining that due to the arrival of some express riders, he now has three corporals and nine privates that are regulars. In addition, his garrison now contains a “large body of settlers who, frightened by depredations of the Indians in the neighborhood, rushed pell-mell to the fort.” Ourry explains that from the families that number more than 100, he has been able to form two companies of volunteers. Nevertheless, Ourry describes some of the people as “silly People,” those who believing the crisis had passed, moved out of the fort in small groups, but many of those were in turn, ambushed, cut off from returning to the fort and afterward killed and scalped

June 4 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, Fort Michilimackinac falls prey to an Indian ruse on the Birthday of King George III (24 May Old Style). To distract the garrison, a group of Chippewa and Sauk begin a supposedly innocent game of lacrosse; however, unbeknownst to the garrison, the Indians are preparing to distract the troops and seize the fort. Meanwhile, some of the troops move out of the fort to observe the game, leaving the gates open. At one point, the ball is purposely kicked toward and through the gates. The Indians pursue the ball, but just before penetrating the gates, they receive weapons that had been concealed by Indian women. The Indians enter and slay everyone in sight. Ensign John Jamet is the first to fall. Two officers including Ethrington and about twenty troops survive the massacre. The intervention of a Catholic priest, Father du Juanay and a Frenchman, Charles Langlade are responsible for saving the lives of Ethrington and the others. Langlade had previously led Indians against the English during the French and Indian War, including a battle against Rogers during January 20 1757. In conjunction, the trader, Alexander Henry, stated that the fort fell on 4 June on King George III's Birthday; however, there were contemporary letters stating the fort fell on the 2nd. In the meantime, a party of Ottawa arrives at the fort and when no booty remains for them, they insist that the captives be turned over to them. The Ottawas receive Ethrington, another officer Lt. William Leslie and eleven other soldiers. Later following a council including some Sioux, the captives are freed at the suggestion of the Sioux. The troops thanks to the hatred between the Sioux and the Chippewa are permitted to go to Canada. Captain Ethrington, on 10 June places the Frenchman, Charles Langblade in command of the fort. The instructions to Langblade in part: “SIR-As I am oblig'd to leave this, and have a great confidence in you, I hereby empower you to take upon you the Command of this Post, and I order all the Inhabitants as well those that are within the Fort, as those that may arrive from the different places, to obey you as such, as they shall answer the Contrary at their peril...” In conjunction, during 1764, the 60th Regiment is severely reduced in size. Lt. Leslie transfers at that time to the 44th Regiment. Leslie, later, at the outbreak of the American Revolution transfers to the 46th regiment, which participates at Brandywine and Germantown in Pennsylvania, and during the following year (1778), it participates at the Battle of Monmouth in New Jersey; however, Leslie's name is not found on the regimental list after 1777. It is presumed that he was killed. In other activity, Ensign Pauli,

the former commander at Sandusky reaches the safety of Fort Detroit. Pauli had been captured on 16 May when the Indians seized the post and massacred most of the garrison. In other activity, at Fort Detroit, the siege continues; however, there is little activity. The Indians fire only some sporadic shots. Also, a Frenchman, Mr. Cuestere, buys Mr. Rutherford, a captive of the Indians; however, the Indians insist that he must keep him for himself. Later this same day, during the evening four Indians arrive at Fort Detroit and they have brought four prisoners and some scalps with them. They inform Major Gladwin that Fort Pitt is also under attack and they bring news that Fort Miami (Indiana) had fallen.

June 5 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, Fort Detroit comes under fire by about 50 Indians. The exchange lasts for about one hour and as usual, the Indians fire from great distance; rather than approach within range of the fort's guns. **In Pennsylvania,** at about 0200, Benjamin Sutton arrives at Fort Pitt with information that Fort Burd at Redstone had been abandoned when he passed it on the 3rd. Sutton spotted tracks leading toward Fort Cumberland in Maryland and believes the garrison headed there. At Fort Burd, an Indian named Kecois and a white man named Hicks were about to destroy the fort by fire; however, Sutton explains that he convinced them to spare it. Sutton also informs Ecuyer that Hicks had informed him that the Indians had ignited war. Hicks and the Indian had intended to keep Sutton as a prisoner, but while passing Fort Pitt, Sutton had taken advantage of the wind and the darkness to get ashore and hail a sentry. Nevertheless, the Indian and Hicks continued along in their canoes. In other activity, Colonel Burd arrives back at Fort Augusta, from where he departed for Pittsburgh during spring 1760. At this time, Lt. Samuel Hunter is commander of the post.

June 6 1763 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, an Indian who claims to be a friend of the English, informs Colonel Burd “that he feared it would soon be very bad for him and the garrison.” The Indian emphasizes that if the French and their Indian allies attack, “no quarter would be given.” Colonel Burd does not discount the advice. In addition to ordering reveille to be sounded at daybreak (7th), he assigns separate contingents to the bastions and he orders that every man in the garrison “to be under arms.” Other cautious steps taken include his order to secure the fort's gates at dusk, having a corporal check on the sentries every half-hour and the guard are to challenge any persons “passing after retreat.” In addition to the warning received by Colonel Burd, other things raise concern. Apparently, there is a sudden surge from Indians who arrive at the fort's store to acquire powder in exchange for pelts.

June 7 1763 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, a Mr. Wilkins arrives at Fort Pitt with his wife and child. They had arrived from Venango after a journey of one and one-half days. Before leaving Venango, they learned from an express rider that arrived from Presque Isle that a contingent of troops under Lt. Cuyler had reached the mouth of the Detroit River on 28 May; however, they were ambushed by Indians. In other activity, Fort Bedford, under Captain Ourry, remains secure; however, it is still isolated and imperiled. Captain Ourry writes to Colonel Bouquet and expresses his yearning for reinforcements stating: “I long to see my Indian scouts come in with intelligence; but I long more to hear the Grenadiers march and see more red-coats.”

June 8-18 1763–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, the garrison continues on high alert. Lt. Hunter is handed an alarming message from an Indian, Telenemut, who resides close to the fort, up on the west branch of the Susquehanna. Telenemut forewarns Hunter that precautions should

be taken and although, he did not know when, he believes an attack could come at any time. In conjunction, a dispatch is immediately sent to intercept Colonel Burd, who had departed the post. Other messengers are dispatched to inform the settlers and direct them to come to the fort for their safety. While the tension mounts, Lt. Hunter notices that no Indians arrive at the store on the 9th, which causes more concern for the garrison, which is already bordering panic. A sweep of the fort to gather all the available small arms so that each man has quick access to more than one weapon had already occurred. Nonetheless, while anxiety builds, no attack occurs and no hostile Indians are discovered. Later, on the 11th, the Indian, John Shikellimy arrives at the fort in his canoe. He does not report spotting any of the enemy; however, he tells Lt. Hunter, that he will maintain a watch and if the enemy is detected, he will speed o the fort to give a warning. In the meantime, Colonel Burd is still at Wyoming. Subsequently, during the evening of the 15th, Lt. Graydon, a former commander of the post, arrives at the fort at about 2100. He is accompanied by a small detachment. Graydon succeeds Hunter as commander of the post. Afterward, the work to strengthen the fort's defenses continues. On the evening of the 18th, the tension eases and the morale of the garrison suddenly raises when Colonel Burd returns to the post. He assumes command of the fort and as if in cadence with his arrival, the confidence of the garrison is restored.

June 9 1763 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, a fire in the distance is spotted and it is thought that Indians had set George Groghan's residence on fire. At about 2100, two additional express riders are dispatched to Venango; however, similarly to the earlier attempts to reach the post, the riders fail to reach their destination. After getting confused and lost in the woods, they return to the fort and arrive there at 1000 on the following day.

June 10 17763 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, a work party, which is installing some defensive fencing comes under attack. The party returns fire to repel further action and afterward, the men return to the fort.

June 11 1763 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Pitt, sentinels at about dawn, spot a band of Indians that are spotted in and about the ruins of the upper town. Later at about 2200, they set one house on fire; however, one of the fort's guns lob a shell in their direction and they disperse.

June 12 1763 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Pitt, throughout the day, Indians are spotted in various places near the fort. Nevertheless, fire from the fort drives them away. For the following two days, there is no Indian activity; however, the garrison remains prepared to meet an attack when it comes.

June 15 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit a group of about five Indians, along with Chief Washee (Puttawattamees) arrives at the fort with prisoners to make an exchange for two of his braves held at the post. Gladwin refuses to give up both prisoners; however, he agrees to release one in exchange for Schosser and the two soldiers that were brought to the fort. Gladwin makes the exchange and informs the chief that when he arrives with the remainder of the prisoners he will release the other Indian. Gladwin is convinced if both Indians are released, that there would be no opportunity to get back the other eleven men being held. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Pitt, a work party is fired upon by Indians. The leader of the party, Sergeant Miller of the militia, disregards orders and moves to Grant's Hill with only three other men. The Indians there

wait until the detachment reaches the crest then they open fire. Miller is killed. Other troops rush to aid the party and the Indians are driven from the hill in time to prevent them from taking Miller's scalp. **In Wisconsin**, Lt. James Gorrel at Fort Edward Augustus (Formerly Fort St. Francois, Fort Le Baye and later Fort Crawford), receives orders, dated 11 June, from Captain Ethrington, to evacuate the post. The fort is abandoned without incident and the garrison receives an escort. A large contingent of Indians (Fox, Menominee, Sauk and Winnebago) escort the garrison to l'Arbre during the evening of 30 June.

June 16 1763 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Pitt, four Shawnees appear on the opposite bank of the Ohio River and request that Mr. McKee cross the river to hold a parley. The Indians apologize for the murders at the Clapham residence and they mention some captives (Messrs. Baird and Gibson) that had been captured and they inform McKee that they will protect them until the war is over. Later on this same day, subsequent to dusk, Captain Ecuyer dispatches a rider with instructions to repair to Fort Bedford.

June 17 1763 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania, the Indians that spoke with Mr. McKee at Fort Pitt on the previous day, reappear and request a second parley; however, McKee declines. Afterward, the Indians attempt to persuade McKee to depart with them for his safety. They exclaim that a large body of Indians is close and that other posts including Venango had already fallen. In other activity, at about midnight (17th-18th), two riders arrive at the fort from Fort Ligonier with messages from General Amherst. In other activity in Pennsylvania, Lt. Archibald Blane continues to preserve Fort Ligonier; however, its defenses are weak. On this day, he writes to Colonel Bouquet, stating: "I hope soon to see yourself and live in daily hopes of a reinforcement. Sunday last a man straggling out was killed by the Indians. I believe the communication between Fort Pitt and this place is entirely cut off, not having heard from them since the thirtieth of May, though two expresses have gone from Bedford to that post." In other activity, the situation at Fort Bedford changes drastically. Captain Ourry, in a letter to Colonel Bouquet, after the "country people in fancied security had returned to their plantation," he states: "I should be very glad to see some troops come to my assistance. A fort with five bastions cannot be guarded much less defended by a dozen men, but I hope God will protect us." At this time, Ourry has only 12 men of the Royal American Regiment in the garrison and they are holding 7 Indian prisoners. Ourry, in his letter also states: "The killing and scalping of some families on Denning's creek threw the settlers into a panic again, and in a few days the militia were back from their farms and with difficulty could be prevented from murdering the Indian prisoners."

June 18 1763 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians under Pontiac seize Fort Venango (western Pennsylvania). The small garrison under Lt. Francis Gordon is unaware that some approaching Seneca Indians (Iroquois) thought to be friendly were there to destroy the fort. To their dismay, once the gates were opened the Indians enter and massacre the garrison. The Indians save the commander for last and inflict a horrible merciless slow-death by torture that keeps him suffering until he expires on the following day. The Indians burn the fort, but later during 1787, Fort Franklin will rise in its place. In other activity in Pennsylvania, Colonel Burd returns to Fort Augusta. See also June 8-18 1757.

June 19 1763 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania, Fort Le Boeuf in Waterford, Pennsylvania is taken by Pontiac's Indians and as with several others, they use a ruse. Appearing friendly and in need

of some utensils, the Indians seek entry, but are refused. Later, the fort is besieged with flaming arrows that set the fort afire. The small garrison of eleven men escapes and makes it to Fort Pitt. Also, at about the same time, Indians initiate a siege of Fort Presque Isle (Erie, Pennsylvania), manned by less than thirty men. The fort surrenders after several days. The fort is destroyed by fire, but the garrison is not massacred, rather the captives are taken to Detroit to be used later for a prisoner exchange.

June 20 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, the Indians again fire upon Fort Detroit. In other activity, word arrives at the fort that the French post at Presque Isle (Erie Pennsylvania) and Fort Leboeuf, at the head of the Beef River, also captured by the English had been destroyed by Indians.

June 21 1763 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Ligonier, a small contingent departs from the fort and shortly thereafter, the Indians show themselves. An attempt is made to cut off the retreat to the fort, but the troops get back safely.

June 22 1763 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, smoke is seen ascending from the rear of Grant's Hill during the morning at about 0900. Later, Indians appear in a wheat field (Spelt–German wheat) and they drive off some horses and some cattle. One man, James Thompson, moves to get one of the horses and he is intercepted by the Indians. The scalp Thompson within sight of the fort. Afterward, a large number of Indians appear and from their positions on Grant's Hill, they fire upon the cattle and the horses. The garrison responds by commencing fire with a howitzer. Nonetheless, within about one additional hour, the Indians from two separate positions, Grant's Hill and the opposite bank of the Ohio River, begin to fire upon the fort, but no direct attack is launched. During the firing one soldier, posted in the Monongahela Bastion sustains a wound. Later, at about 1900, several Indians posted along the Monongahela riverbank are spotted. Mr. McKee and two others open fire and kill one of the three.

June 22-23 1763–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, the Indians scatter the horses and seize or slaughter the cattle. Afterward, the Indians launch a major attack; however, the fort's guns force the Indians to pull back out of the range of the guns. During the assault, two soldiers are killed. Nevertheless, they return, but by dusk the fire subsides. Although the firing slows down, the noise continues throughout the night (22nd-23rd) as the Indians continue yelling their war cries. At 0900, on the morning of the 23rd, a party of Indians, including Turtle Heart approach the fort. Turtle Heart, while standing near a ditch outside the walls, informs the English garrison claims that they have come in "great friendship" to forewarn them that many forts had fallen and that the Six Nations are expected to arrive at any time. Turtle Heart urges the garrison to abandon the fort and move with their families to the eastern settlements. In addition the garrison is told that Turtle Heart and his followers would protect the garrison from the other Indians that have the fort encircled, but he insists they must move quickly, because they could not be protected once the Six Nations arrive from the west. Captain Ecuyer listens attentively; however, when he responds, the Indians realize that the garrison will fight; rather than run or surrender. He makes it explicitly clear that the fort will be held when he states that his command has an overabundance of ammunition to repel any number of Indians that seek to reduce the fort. He graciously thanks Turtle Heart and the others and because of their kindness, he had some information for them.

Ecuyer tells Turtle Heart that he should return to his village with his followers and their families. Afterward, he informs them that a huge army of 6,000 men is en route to relieve the fort, while several thousand other troops had advanced up the lakes to retaliate against the Ottawas and the Ojibwas. Ecuyer then tells Turtle Heart that yet another force had moved to Virginia to deal with the Catawbas and the Cherokee. As a final caution, Ecuyer tells Turtle Heart to conceal the information from the hostile Indians still surrounding the fort to ensure that they don't escape the army's wrath. The visit is about to end, but Ecuyer has some gifts for Turtle Heart before he departs. Ecuyer removes a two blankets and a handkerchief from the small-pox hospital, hands the presents to Turtle Heart and in his parting remarks, "I hope the present will have its desired effect." Turtle Heart accepts the presents, but apparently, he is not capable of keeping a secret. By the following day, the number of Indians maintaining the siege becomes greatly reduced and within a few additional days, most have abandoned the siege to move westward. In conjunction, once the threat had ended, the garrison initiates a project to repair the ramparts, which had been damaged by the spring floods. In addition, work to further fortify the post begins. Ecuyer direct the troops to strengthen the barracks to make them bullet proof. He also orders palisades to be erected at the base of the ramparts. The garrison sustains only some minor raids into July; however the Indians remain active by attacking various settlements located close to the forts that had already been lost to Pontiac's warriors.

June 23 1763 (Thursday)–In New York, General Amherst directs Major Campbell to depart New York for Philadelphia with the remainder of the 42nd Regiment (Royal Highlanders) and Montgomery's Highlanders, composed of 214 troops and 133 troops, respectively. These troops are battle tried, having just arrived from combat duty against the Spanish in the West Indies; however, they are inexperienced in the art of fighting Indians and most are in poor health due to the torrid weather they had experienced in Cuba.

June 25 1763 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, the post remains on high alert. Colonel Burd meets with a group of Indians at the fort's store. Nevertheless, while the conference continues, the entire garrison is under arms to ensure there is no chance of chicanery.

June 26 1763 (Sunday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, the garrison is delighted when they see a convoy, carrying ammunition and provisions. On the following day, Colonel Burd takes duty as officer of the guard. In addition, Colonel Burd initiates stronger restrictions. He orders "that no soldier belonging to the garrison, or any person within it, should have any dealings with Indians on any pretence whatever."

June 27 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, Major Gladwin at Fort Detroit receives another message from Pontiac. The letter is delivered by Mr. Gamelin. The message claims that 800-900 Indians under Kee-no-chameck, are at Michilimackinac and that because of his (Pontiac) compassion, he urges Gladwin to surrender to save the garrison before the other Indians at Michilimackinac arrive. Pontiac's message also states that "the Roads were all shut up round us and we cou'd receive no Succour." Gladwin is not intimidated. He informs Pontiac that no answer will be forthcoming until Captain Donald Campbell and Lt. McDougal are both released and returned. Later, Pontiac sends another message that states that he "had. too great a Regard for Capt. Campbell & McDougal than to send them to the Fort, for if he did that, as the Kettle was on the Fire he shou'd be oblig'd to boil them with the rest." Also, at about 1000, the schooner enters the

Detroit River and at about 1800 she comes into view while passing the Isle au Deinde, where more than 150 Indians have concealed themselves. At that time, the winds shift and the ship drops its anchor about less than five miles from the fort in a slim channel. Gladwin, concerned that the schooner would come under attack, feigned a landing of batteaux, that prompts the Indians to prepare to defend their positions in lieu of launching an attack. **In Virginia**, a band of about 60 Indians that initially profess friendship to the settlers along Muddy Creek are welcomed into the houses. The Indians are given food and there is even some entertainment. Nonetheless, the settlers are suddenly attacked in their homes. The men are killed and the women and children are dragged away as prisoners. After the massacre, the Indians move to the Levels where a group of settlers, estimated at between 100-150 people, have gathered in the residence of Archibald Clendenin at Greenbrier. Once again the Indians pretend to be friendly. While the Indians are there, Archibald Clendenin returns from a hunting trip and he has brought back three elk, which are prepared for a feast. During this time, one of the elderly women who is suffering from a lame leg is asked by one of the Indians if he can be of any help to her. He then tells the woman he can give her relief. At that instant, he kills her with his tomahawk. In quick succession, the men in the house are also slain, however, one man, Conrad Yolkom, escapes death. Yolkom, close to the house, after hearing the screams of the women and children rushes to the Jackson's River settlement to warn the people there, but they do not believe his story. Soon after, when they see the horde approaching the settlement, their disbelief is transformed into terror. The people hurriedly run for their lives with the Indians in pursuit. By the time the settlers reach Carr's Creek, in Rockbridge, the Indians are upon them. A new massacre unfolds there. Mrs. Clendenin is among the captives and she defiantly resists her captors, while giving them a tongue lashing. Surprisingly, she is not killed. Instead, one of the Indians beats her about the face with a scalp, that of her dead husband. While continuing the march, Mrs. Clendenin, at a point about ten miles from her house, hands her infant child to another woman captive. Within moments, with great cunning, she slips into some heavy brush without detection. Later, the Indians hear her baby crying and determine that she had escaped, but they have no idea where she sneaks away or in which direction she moved. The Indians retaliate in a most grotesque way. They take her baby and one of the Indians takes ghastly unconscionable action. He grabs the little infant by the heels, then "dashes out its brains against a tree! and as though this was not enough, the miscreant throwing it down into the van, the whole company marched over it, the hoofs of the horses tearing out its bowels, and the feet of the Indians tracked the ground as they went with its blood!" In the meantime, Mrs. Clendenin continues her harrowing trek back to her house. Once there, she discovers her dead husband, who was killed while trying to escape by jumping over a fence. One of their children, also murdered, remains clutched in Archibald's arms.

July 29 1763 (Friday)–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, the garrison remains on high alert in expectation of an attack. However, Colonel Burd also continues working on strengthening the post. He orders the construction of a tunnel, leading from the fort to the river to provide the fort with a concealed path to the river to acquire water if the Indians initiate a siege. The troops demolish several homes that are located at the southern fringe of the town are demolished as part of the project. Once it is completed, the passageway is also a route for reinforcements to reach the post without being discovered.

June 30 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, the schooner finally reaches Fort Detroit. During its approach, the Huron Indians maintain heavy fire. Nevertheless, it arrives with its complement of reinforcements and about 150 barrels provisions that are greatly needed. The reinforcements

include 22 troops from the 22nd Regiment with Lt. Cuyler and 28 rangers (Captain Hopkins' company of rangers). One sergeant and four men aboard the vessel are wounded during the exchange. Cuyler informs Major Gladwin that Presque Isle held out for three days before it was burned on 22 June. In other activity, Gladwin is informed that Pontiac had ordered the people living near the fort that they must dig trenches and if they refused, he would put them to the sword."

Late June 1763–In Pennsylvania, the frontier is threatened by the Algonquin Indians under Pontiac who are sweeping across the land in an attempt to liquidate the British garrisons and destroy the English settlements. The active forts in the province are garrisoned primarily by elements of the Royal American Regiment. On this day, Colonel Henry Bouquet's 1st Battalion of the regiment arrives at Carlisle from Philadelphia. Bouquet's force had been bolstered at Philadelphia by two companies of the 42nd (Highlanders) Regiment and the 77th Regiment. Upon his arrival, Bouquet becomes aware of how quickly the situation is deteriorating. Carlisle is packed with refugees who had fled their homes to escape the ravaging Indian raids. Bouquet is informed of the loss of several posts, those at Presque Isle, Le Boeuf and Venango and in the valleys abandoned by the settlers, plumes of smoke from the crops and buildings are spotted by scouts accompanying Bouquet. From Carlisle, after being in the town about eighteen days, Bouquet advances (18 July) toward Fort Pitt. His force is composed of about 500 men, but no volunteers from Carlisle accompany him. More than fifty of the troops are carried in wagons because they are too sick to march. Colonel Bouquet selects thirty of the Highlanders to move out in advance and by traveling only after dusk to speed to Fort Bedford and on to Fort Ligonier. At the latter fort, the contingent arrives while it is besieged by Indians and the detachment becomes a welcome sight and is greeted as reinforcements. Meanwhile at Fort Bedford, following the slaying of some settlers in the area, some of the men disguise themselves as Indians and form themselves into a mounted company. In addition, at about this same time, recruits are being rushed to Fort Augusta. Also, James Irvine of Philadelphia, later brigadier general during the American Revolution, serves in the conflict, initially in the company commanded by Captain Atleir. During Pontiac's War, with the rank of captain, Irvine serves under Colonel Henry Bouquet. Irvine had joined the military during 1760.

July 1 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Pontiac's Indians continue the siege. At the fort, the troops unload the provisions that arrived on the previous day aboard the schooner. In addition, the men load ballast onto the ship. Mr. St. Martin and his family who reside near the fort arrive. St. Martin had been told that the Hurons would be demanding that he accompany them to their village to act as an interpreter for them. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Augusta, an Indian, John Orby, speaks to Colonel Burd and informs him that while he was lying close to his fireplace, he was suddenly struck by a handful of dirt, which had been tossed by an Indian. The Indian, named Wingenam, after waking Orby, tells him that he and two others had been sent out in advance to scout the fort. The information is taken seriously by Burd. He directs that stipulates actions to be taken at the first signs of an attack. The women are to immediately converge at the well and carry water which can be stored.

July 2 1763 (Saturday)-In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Lt. McDougal, earlier captured along with Captain Donald Campbell, escapes and arrives at the fort. Another man, a trader is with McDougal and yet another escaped prisoner makes it safely to the schooner. In other activity, a contingent departs the fort to protect a working party. The Indians that are lurking nearby

commence firing; however, additional troops rush to bolster those under fire and the Hurons take off and hurriedly cross the river, then from the opposite bank fire upon the fort, before going back. In other activity, troops deployed in two block houses on the heights, fires at a passing canoe and wounds one of the chiefs of the Saggina tribe. In yet other activity, Gladwin is informed that Pontiac has taken custody of some Frenchmen, including Mr. Navarre, Mr. Hecotte, as well as the heads of the other families that reside on that side of the river. **In Pennsylvania**, at Fort Bedford, a band of about 20 Indians strike a party of mowers. Several men are killed, but the remainder get back to the fort. In addition, the Indians strike others. Eighteen people, including the mowers are killed near Fort Bedford this day.

July 3 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the garrison, except for 20 men, as usual since the beginning of the siege is lying on the ramparts. The 20 troops on other duty are building a ditch around the fort. In other activity, Mr. Navarre, as directed by Pontiac, writes a letter to Major Gladwin to inform him in Pontiac's name that the fort must be surrendered. The other people recently taken into custody are also compelled to write similar letters. The letter also states that if Gladwin does not capitulate, Pontiac intends to force all the inhabitants to bear arms. A Mr. Louis Campo enters the fort with the message during the evening and while there he requests permission to bring his family into the fort. Gladwin responds by telling Campo that he can bring all the families that could carry provisions with them. That same night, the Babie and Recme families, who live on the opposite bank of the river, arrive by midnight (3rd-4th). **In Pennsylvania**, Captain Ourry receives some news this day, but it is not inspiring. Word arrives from Captain Blane at Fort Ligonier, that Forts Venango, Presque Isle and Fort Le Boeuf had fallen. Ourry sends a letter to Colonel Bouquet mentioning that Captain Blane is contemplating either abandoning or surrendering Fort Ligonier. Late, Ourry receives a response, in which Bouquet states: "I shivered when you hinted to me Lieut. Blane's intentions. Death and infamy would have been the reward he would expect instead of the honor he has obtained by his prudence, courage and resolution. * * This is a most trying time. * * You may be sure that all the expedition possible will be used for the relief of the few remaining posts." In conjunction, Bouquet believes that if Ligonier falls, his entire campaign would fail and most probably, his entire force would be annihilated. Also, an express rider arrives at Carlisle from Fort Bedford and delivers the news that the Indians under Pontiac had seized Fort Presque Isle, Fort Le Boeuf and Fort Venango. The people there had been apprehensive before hearing the distressing news because the Indians had already ravaged the area near Carlisle, where at this time, is overcrowded as people are gathering even in the fields outside the town as they prepare to head for Philadelphia. In addition, the regiments under Colonel Bouquet are preparing to advance to Fort Pitt. Circumstances at Carlisle compel Bouquet to distribute some of his force's provisions to help the refugees, who had been forced to abandon their homes. Pontiac's warriors have by this time plundered the region far east of the Allegheny Mountains and hundreds of families have been decimated. Farmers and their wives and children, numbering in the hundreds have been murdered or carried away. The messenger from Fort Bedford does little to raise the morale of the pioneers when, while approaching Colonel Bouquet's tent, he announces: "The Indians will soon be here"! At this time the Indians are ravaging the Juniata region and near the border with the Cumberland Valley. The buildings are all afire and corpses are being devoured by swine. Meanwhile, Colonel Bouquet immediately sends out riders to spread the alarm and as they gallop in all directions, scores of refugees are encountered and they too are urged to head for Carlisle. Other men are dispatched to warn those still alive and they are also directed to bury the

dead. Some become ill at the dights they encounter in Shearman's valley. In addition to the settlement being consumed by flames, the patrol observes the "horrible spectacle of groups of hogs tearing and devouring the dead bodies of men, women and children." Another group of 12 young men depart from Carlisle to alert the settlers in the Tuscarora valley; however, when they arrive within sight of the village, it becomes apparent they are too late. They see the flames that are reducing the village. Nonetheless, they too become imperiled. The Indians have not yet left the village. They ambush the party and nearly all are killed. The situation has passed well beyond grave. The land stretching between the Allegheny Mountains and the Susquehanna River is abandoned by about 2,000 families, with large numbers seeking safety in forts and many others in flight toward Lancaster and Philadelphia.

July 4 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, a detachment, led by Lt. Hay, departs the fort and moves to the home of Mr. Babier (abandoned on the previous night) to acquire powder and lead that was stored there. While on the mission to protect the work party, the troops also demolish a trench that had been built by the Indians. During the demolition operation, Indians begin to fire upon the troops; however a 20-man ranger detachment under Captain Hopkins, supported by about 10 Frenchmen, moves out to bolster the troops. The Indians retire with the rangers in pursuit. About three of the Indians are wounded during the chase. The rangers sustain 1 man wounded. They return to the fort with one Indian scalp. The lone known Indian fatality is the nephew of a prominent Chippewa chief. He learns of his nephew's death and becomes enraged. The chief speeds to the home of M. Meloche, where the English hostages (captured while under a white flag during the previous May) are being held. Major Campbell is dragged from the house, tied to a fence and executed. After killing him by arrows, Campbell is "shockingly mangled, and it was reported that his heart was eaten by the savages." The other hostage, Lt. McDougal, is able to seize the moment to escape before he too is killed. McDougal races back to the fort and reaches it safely. In conjunction, conflicting details surround the murder of Campbell, with some contemporary authors reported that the execution was condoned by Pontiac and others profess that Pontiac disapproved, stating that "the Murderer was obliged to escape beyond his (Pontiac) reach." Also, during the evening, it is learned that 140 Frenchmen had at the Huron village and that they had agreed "to defend one another against all Enemies." In conjunction, Major Gladwin meets with the Frenchmen who have sought safety in the fort. They agree to fight alongside the English and number about 40 men. Mr. Sterling is selected as their leader.

July 5 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a Frenchman, Mr. Labute enters the post and informs Major Gladwin that the Chippewas, once informed of the death of the chiefs nephew on the previous day, caused an uproar. He states that the Chippewas accused Pontiac "caused all of their ill look, that he (Pontiac) caused them to enter into the War and did nothing himself, that he was very brave in taking a Loaf of Bread or a Beef from a Frenchman who made no Resistance, but it was them that had all the Men kill'd and wounded every Day, & for that Reason they wou'd take that from him which he intended to save himself by in the End." LaBute also describes the grotesque circumstances of the death of Captain Campbell as follows: "They went and took Capt. Campbelle, strip'd him, & carried him to their Camp, where they kill'd him, took out his Heart & eat it reaking from his Body, cut off his Head, and the rest of his Body they divided into small Pieces."

July 6 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin, at about noon sends

the sloop on a mission to bombard Pontiac's camp. The operation is commanded by Captain Hopkins (rangers) and Ensign Pauli. The sloop moves slowly because of the lack of wind, which permits the Indians sufficient time to remove the women and children to safety. Nonetheless, the camp is heavily bombarded. Meanwhile, a group of Puttawattamees arrive at the fort under a white flag, while their camp is under attack. The Indians tell Major Gladwin that they have learned of peace between the French and English and they believe the information to be true. They also state that some chiefs with their braves have already departed for their villages. They also request the Indian being held in the fort in exchange for the two prisoners they hold. Gladwin responds by telling the Indians that they must bring in all of their prisoners and the horses they have taken. And he insists that they must "promise not to do any more Mischief either to the French or English as we were now one, he wou'd give up the Indian he had, and wou'd recommend them to the General, but if they made the least Difficulty in it he wou'd not hear them any more and they must take the Consequences of his Displeasure, upon which they hung their Heads."

July 7 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, for the second day in a row, the Puttawattamees arrive at the fort under a white flag to receive a "Belt of Wampam that the Commandant promis'd them to carry to the reft of their Nation at St. Josephs & to the Miamees to tell them what they had done & how much they were pitied by the Commandant whose Advice they must always follow." Also a group of Hurons also arrive at the fort. They inform Major Gladwin that "neither they nor the Puttawattamees knew any thing of this Affair at the Commencement, for Pontiac never consulted them about it until he had got such a Number of Men together that overpower them both, and then he told them his Design & threatened them that if they would not join with him he would cut them to pieces." Gladwin gives the Hurons the same directions which had been given to the Puttawattamees.

July 9 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, six Huron chiefs arrive at the post and they have brought Ensign Christie (a ranger) with them. Five other captives, along with one woman and a baby also accompany the chiefs. They speak to Major Gladwin and state that "they were drawn into the War before they knew where they were and many things to the same Purpose of what they had told him the 7th Instant, they ask'd him if it was not advisable for them to retire until such Time as we receiv'd Succours enough to assist them in case they should be attack'd." In addition, the chiefs tell Gladwin that they will join with the Puttawattamees to construct a stockade at the Huron River to defend against the Ottawas if they launch an attack.

July 10 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the Indians at midnight (9th-10th) send a floating improvised barge, composed of 4 batteaux which are loaded with combustible items to sink the two vessels at the fort; however, the burning craft is easily evaded and it causes no damage. Later at about 1600, a group of the Miami Indians, under a white flag, approach the fort; however, they remain several hundred yards from the entrance. The Indians have brought a prisoner named Levy. A Frenchman advances to deliver the message, which details a list of items they want in exchange for the release of their captive. Major Gladwin responds by stating that nothing would be provided. **In Pennsylvania**, Indians raid settlers in Perry County. William White opens his door and he is immediately killed. The others inside the house bolt the door. Meanwhile the Indians set the house on fire. One man, William Riddle escapes. Another man, McMachen, arrives at White's house and he is fired upon and wounded, but he escapes.

Afterward, the Indians move against Bingham's Fort. Meanwhile the Robinson brothers and other settlers from Fort Robinson initiate pursuit. The Indians are intercepted and during the exchange of fire, William Robinson is fatally wounded. In related activity, on this same day, Indians attack a nearby home, that of Robert Campbell. At the time, six others are with Campbell. The Indians burst through the door and one of the men is killed struck by a tomahawk. Meanwhile, another, George Dodds fires a rifle and mortally wounds one of the Indians. Nevertheless, Dodds is the only man to escape. In yet other activity, Indians also attack the house of William Anderson. He is killed along with one boy and one girl. Separate detachments depart on the 11th and scour the valley, burying the dead as they move. Colonel John Armstrong is leading one of the parties. Later other relief parties move out, but the situation remains grim. Houses are left in ashes and much grain is burned. North of Carlisle, hardly any colonists are found. To further complicate their plight there is an acute shortage of ammunition and arms, and scarce amounts of money to buy powder. One of the wounded men is found just before he dies. He tells the men who discover him: "Here, take my gun and kill the first Indian you see, and all shall be well."

July 11 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the Indians again attempt to set fire to the vessels. Two more burning floats are prepared. At about midnight (10th-11th) the burning floats are taken down river. Captain Hopkins (ranger), aboard the sloop is able to destroy one. The Indians then head for shore and the remaining float is left to drift by itself and it is towed to shore by the English.

July 12 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a group of Puttawattamees again arrive at the post. They bring some prisoners including Mr. Chapman and a ranger attached to Captain Hopkins company. The Indians indicate that other prisoners will be brought to the fort once they arrive. Later at 1600, other Indians arrive with four troops of the Royal Americans and another man. The Indians demand that the Indian being held in the fort be released to them. Nevertheless, Major Gladwin has not modified his position. He informs the Indians that they still had not returned all of their captives and the Indian will be held until ever prisoner held by them is returned. Gladwin also notices that an Ottawa Indian had accompanied the party and when confronted, the Indians claim that he was left behind by a band that departed. Gladwin, aware that the Ottawa Indian had entered the fort to check for a weakness in the defenses, is unimpressed by the pretentious response. He informs the Indians that the spy would be detained. Gladwin instructs the interpreter to tell the Indians that the new prisoner would not receive the same fate as Captain Campbell had recently received, but he would be held until all the prisoners are returned to the fort. In other activity, the schooner embarks for Niagara at about 1600, but unfavorable winds impede progress. After traveling a short distance, the schooner drops anchor to await fairer winds. In yet other activity, in conjunction with the peace treaty, the French in the fort are placed under the command of Mr. Sterling.

July 13 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, during the early morning hours at about 0230, sentries detect two Indians as they crawl toward the fort. One of the men, however, is a Frenchman, rises and attempts to run away. As he runs, the Indians shoot him. Later at 1300, the Puttawattamees yet again arrive back at the fort. The Indians bring a white belt and proclaim their friendship; however, the primary purpose of coming is to persuade Major Gladwin to release the Ottawa Indian they detained on the previous day. Nonetheless, Gladwin is not

swayed. He warns the Indians saying that “they would do better if they not even speak to that Nation, as they only fought their Ruin.” The Indians also promise to bring in the other six captives they hold if Gladwin will release the prisoner from their village. Gladwin responds by telling the Indians that he will release the man because he believes they are sincere. **In Pennsylvania**, at Carlisle, Colonel Bouquet writes a letter to General Amherst regarding the conditions in the area: “The list of the people, known to be killed, increases very fast every hour. The desolation of so many families reduced to the last extremity of want and misery; the despair of those who have lost their parents, relations and friends, with cries of distracted women and children who fill the streets—form a scene painful to humanity and impossible to describe.” Also, the Pennsylvania Gazette, which has published articles on the Indian rampage. Publishes another article this day that includes: “Last night Colonel Armstrong returned. He left the party, who pursued further and found several dead, whom they buried in the best manner they could, and are now all returned in. From what appears the Indians are traveling from one place to another, along the valley, burning all the people they meet with...” The article also mentions that “William Anderson was killed without warning, while reading the Bible.” From the 10th, the Indians have killed 25 and wounded about 4 or 5.

July 14 1763 (Thursday)—In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the siege continues; however, the garrison is undisturbed this day.

July 15 1763 (Friday)—In Illinois, Nyon de Villis, commander of the Illinois district, abandons the region. His command (six officers, 63 soldiers and 80 civilians, including women and children) arrives at New Orleans on 2 July. **In Michigan** at Fort Detroit, a man, named Clermont comes into the fort and speaks with Major Gladwin to explain that he had been a major in the militia and that most of the younger men in his command were preparing to depart for Illinois. He inquires as to whether he should issue an order to direct the men to remain at the settlement. Gladwin concurs and directs him, if necessary, to send out detachments to intercept and bring back those who attempt to leave. In other activity, Gladwin is informed that arguments have erupted between the Chippewa and the Ottawa tribes, causing a break between them.

July 16 1763 (Saturday)—In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the garrison remains on the alert at their stations; but again, the day passes without any interference from the Indians. In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, Colonel Burd continues to keep the garrison on full alert. He notes in his journal that work has begun to demolish the Indian trading house, which is outside the walls of the fort; however, the building materials will be salvaged and carried into the fort.

July 17 1763 (Sunday)—In Michigan at Fort Detroit, some Frenchmen arrive at the fort to request arms due to intelligence that the Hurons and the Puttawattamees are preparing to attack the French settlement on the southwest side of the fort. Nonetheless, the attack is not launched. Also, Major Gladwin is informed that the Indians had demolished two barns to use the wood to construct six rafts, which they intend to tie together in an effort to strike the vessel and destroy it. The Indians do not carry out the mission. **In Pennsylvania**, Colonel Bouquet has a force that includes troops (contingent of the 78th) sent to him by General Amherst, two companies of his own regiment, the German Swiss and the Royal American; however, most of the men of the 78th are ill and not fully recuperated. Nonetheless, on this day, he departs Carlisle along a treacherous route to relieve Fort Pitt. Most of his force has no knowledge regarding fighting Indians as their experience had been in combat had been gained in the West Indies against the Spanish. As the

column (about 500 troops) moves slowly through Carlisle on its westward trek, it is thought that the journey would be too perilous for such a small force and the column would never reach Fort Pitt. Nonetheless, Bouquet is determined to relieve the fort. He has trained his troops as well as he could on the art of combating the Indians from his own experiences. The townspeople and the others gathered there watch the wagons roll, guarded by the Highlanders in their kilts and ponder their own fate once the military departs. The column arrives at Shippensburg on 20 July.

July 18 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan, Captain Ethrington, in a letter, dated this day, to Major Gladwin at Detroit: “DEAR Sir–The Express which I sent off to Lieut. Gorrell at LeBay (Fort William Augustus) arrived very luckily one day (15 June) before that Post was to have been cutt off. The Savages of that Post came down [to] the Indian Village where I was Prisoner, & brought with them Lieut. Gorrell and all his Garrison, and they with Mr. Lesley, me and fourteen men that remained of the Garrison of this Place, are just embarking for Montreal under a guard of sixty savages of the Outawa (Ottawa) Nation. I have a thousand things to tell you but I cannot trust them by this conveyance, I have heard nothing of the four men that I sent last May to St. Josephs, there is two of my men yet with the Chippewas...” In other activity, Major Gladwin, Fort Detroit, is informed that the raft being built by the Indians is about 300-feet long. He also learns that the young Frenchmen close to Gross Point had planned on traveling to Illinois because they believed that if they remained in the area they would be hanged. Also, another day passes at the fort without interference from the Indians. However, a group of Ottawa Indians approaches the sloop from the river bank at about 1100 and requests that some rum be brought to them. The Indians become angry when the call out “all is well.” The Indians react by firing. Return fire originates from the sloop and one of the Indians is wounded. **In Pennsylvania,** in an attempt to bolster Fort Pitt against the forces of Pontiac, a force under Colonel Henry Bouquet departs Carlisle Barracks (west of Harrisburg, Pa.). The columns advance (uphill through wilderness and mountains) towards Fort Pitt (Pittsburgh) about 200 miles distant. The column reaches Fort Bedford, which is not attacked and while there some scouts agree to acts as guides along the treacherous advance. En route, there is no communication with the garrison at Fort Pitt, keeping open the question of whether or not it had fallen to the ravaging raids that are swiftly eradicating the English outposts. Bouquet’s force reaches Fort Ligonier (Loyal Hanna in - Westmoreland County) during early August where British forces earlier staged to seize Fort Duquesne (Fort Pitt) from the French. Meanwhile, the garrison at Fort Pitt still holds, but fierce attacks by several tribes are launching constant assaults that last for four days and only terminate when the Indians, alerted of the reinforcements, alter their plans. They end the siege at Fort Pitt to go after Bouquet’s force which departs Fort Ligonier on 4 August.

July 19 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a band of about 60 Indians advance to within about 350 yards from the post. While the Indians are in an orchard, the fort fires one of its guns to scatter them. Nevertheless, the shell fails to detonate, giving the Indians a reason to celebrate by their traditional crying. Meanwhile, the fort catapults another shell and its trajectory plants it in the middle of the gathering as it burst about three feet off the ground to cause panic. While the Indians hurriedly abandon the orchard, yet another shell burst among them to inflict more grief. The cries had succinctly ceased and they retire in absolute silence. Later, on this same day, Major Gladwin is informed that the Indians are building 24 rafts, each about 30-feet in length and of those four have been completed. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Augusta, Colonel Burd receives at about this time a new and nasty weapon, known as the Crowfoot, for use against the

Indians. The Crowfoot is diminutive in size and essentially undetectable in the darkness. The Crowfoot is a 3-pronged device with pointed tips. Wherever, they are tossed, one of the barbed prongs points up. They are scattered in great numbers and various places in the woods as well as in the swamps and even the conspicuous foot paths. The Indians who wear moccasins have no defense because the prongs quickly penetrate the moccasins and enter the skin to cause immense pain. In addition, the crowfoot cannot be pulled out. They must be cut out of the wounded Indian's foot. The device is proved effective because they are subsequently discovered miles away from the fort, indicating that the wounded Indian had reached his thresh hold of pain and needed to have it removed in order to continue the journey. In addition, the penetration of the skin by the rusty prong could cause even fatal infections. In conjunction, it is thought that the initial supply of the crowfoot had arrived from England; however, the device most probably had also been made by blacksmiths.

July 20 1763 (Wednesday)--In Pennsylvania, Colonel Bouquet's column arrives at Shippensburg from Carlisle and encounters a town filled with half-starved people, numbering about 1,384, including men women and children. The civilians had been forced to flee their homes to escape the Indian raids. These refugees sleep in barns, sheds stables and even cellars. Colonel Bouquet, unaware that reinforcements from Fort Bedford had arrived to bolster Lt. Blane at Fort Ligonier dispatches thirty specially selected troops to speed to Ligonier. Bouquet had earlier dispatched two companies to relieve Fort Bedford. From Shippensburg, Colonel Bouquet advances to Fort Bedford. While en route, the troops frequently encounter gruesome scenes, including entire families that have been massacred and scalped; however, they detect no Indians between Shippensburg and Fort Bedford, where the column arrives on 25 July. In conjunction, Bouquet had received word a large Indian force is at Bedford and despite their superior force, they have not yet attacked the fort. It is Bouquet's intent to initiate the battle there. Also, at this time, the situation at Shippensburg is similar to that of Carlisle. The town is crammed with refugees including about 301 men 345 women and 738 children. The settlers are described as being "benumbed with fear and despondancy." Later, on the 25th, Colonel Bouquet writes to General Amherst and states: "I find myself utterly abandoned by the very people I am ordered to protect * * * I have borne very patiently the ill usage of this province, leaving still hopes that they will do something for us; and therefore have avoided a quarrel with them (Quaker governing body)."

July 24 1763 (Sunday)--In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin sends two bateaux upriver to reconnoiter the Indians encampment. Being aware that the Indians have depleted much of their ammunition, the party also purposely tries to draw fire and they also taunt the Indians to dispatch canoes against them. Although it becomes too great a risk to draw out the canoes, the mission succeeds in getting the Indians to waste much ammunition, while they fire from opposite banks of the river. Many shots are fired, but no harm is sustained by the English.

July 25 1763 (Monday)--In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the garrison conducts its normal activities and the ramparts as usual are manned; however, the Indians make no advances. **In Pennsylvania,** Colonel bouquet's column arrives at Fort Bedford. Bouquet, earlier advised that many Indians would be there, discovers that whatever, their number, they have vanished. While at Bedford, Colonel Bouquet recruits 30 backwoodsmen who join his force. The task of recruiting frontiersmen is extremely difficult, not because of a reluctance to fight; rather because

their presence is required to defend their families and their fellow settlers. The lack of these frontiersmen is a huge liability because of their familiarity of the ways of the Indians. The courage, valor and skills of the Highlanders is above repute, but they are of no value when tasked to scout duty or to guard the flanks. **In Pennsylvania**, Colonel Bouquet with the main body of his force arrives at Fort Bedford from Carlisle. Bouquet's vanguard of 30 Highlanders had already passed and moved beyond to Fort Ligonier. Colonel Bouquet increases his force by thirty men when some mountain men join his column. Bouquet leaves a small group of invalids at Fort Bedford, then he proceeds to Fort Ligonier, arriving there after the siege had been lifted.

July 26 1763 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Pitt, a party of Indians, including Turtle Heart and Shingas appear at the gates of the fort and they are carrying a flag, which they claim was given to them by a British officer. The Indians present a long speech and essentially apologize for the cruel acts of the Indians against the English, but then they claim the English brought the harm upon themselves. They insist the land belongs to them and that the English had refused to abandon their forts and settlements. The conversation continues and the Indians inform Captain Ecuyer that they are delivering a message from the Ottawas at Detroit. The message is that the fort will soon be attacked. One of the Indians urging the garrison to abandon the post and move east for their safety is Shingas, who recently betrayed the trader Calhoun and his employees and guided them into an ambush. The Indians warn Ecuyer about remaining at the post: "But, if you stay, you must blame yourselves for what may happen." Captain Ecuyer, similarly to a recent warning, Ecuyer declines taking the advice and responds that the forts were built to supply the Indians with clothes and ammunition. Afterward, he states: "I have warriors, provisions and ammunition to defend it three years against all the Indians in the woods, and I shall never abandon it as long as a white man lives in America. I despise the Ottawas, and am much surprised at you the friendly Delawares, proposing to us to leave these places and go home. This is our home. You have attacked us without reason or provocation. You have murdered and plundered our settlers and traders, you have taken our horses and cattle." Ecuyer then gives them some parting advice in a not so subtle way. He instructs them to depart and return to their homes, then adds that if they return, he will "blow them up." After the scheme fails, the Indians decide to attack. During the night, they dig holes along the riverbank to conceal their positions and prepare to attack on the following day.

July 27-1 August 1763–In Pennsylvania, at dawn on the 27th, a force of about 400 Delaware Indians attack Fort Pitt on the 27th. The Indians bolt from concealed positions and strike against the post from all sides. There is no pause during the entire day; however, the fort holds. The garrison at this time is running out of food, but the attackers are unaware of the dire circumstances and the defenders, despite the crisis, show no signs of capitulating. After failing to seize the post, the Indians initiate a siege. They fire from their concealed positions along the riverbanks. Captain Ecuyer in his report states: "Not an Indian could show his nose without being pricked with a bullet, for I have some good shots here. Our men were doing admirably-regulars and the rest. All they ask is to go out and fight. I am proud to have the honor of commanding such brave men. I only wish the Indians had ventured an assault." During the siege, although the women and children are terrified, the garrison sustain no fatalities and only seven troops are wounded. Captain Ecuyer is among the latter. He remarks: "Only two arrows came into the fort, one of which had the insolence to make free with my left leg." By 1 August, the Indians learn of the approach of Colonel Bouquet's force and they move away from the fort to prevent being caught between the garrison and Bouquet's army.

July 28 1763 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, at Fort Augusta, the Indian Job Chilloway, informs Colonel Burd that the Indians had gathered for a council at Onondaga (New York) and that he was expecting to receive details of the council soon. He also informs Colonel Burd that a band of 19 Indians led by Shamokin Daniel had been launching raids along the Juniata River in the Path and Sherman valleys. Many settlers had been killed during the raids. The same band had also attempted to plunder Berks County, but Indians who remain friendly to the English on the east bank of the Susquehanna River intercepted the marauders and prevented them from carrying out their devious plan. In other activity, the fort remains on high alert and Colonel Burd takes further preventive steps regarding safety. Burd issues the order “that no soldier, woman or child should go into the garden upon any pretence, unless by the particular order of the officer.” If something is requested from the garden, Burden had instituted a system by which the person tells the gardener what is needed and he gets it. Nevertheless, the gardener has help nearby if required. Burd has ordered a guard of 12 troops, commanded by a sergeant and a corporal who remain poised if a threat occurs.

July 31 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, Captain Dalyell, commanding a force of 247 men, departs from the fort at 0245 en route to launch a surprise attack against the Indian positions that are about three and one-half miles from the post. The engagement is known as the Battle of Bloody Ridge and is fought close to Parent Creek (subsequently known as Bloody Run). Dalyel’s column advances without incident until it reaches a point about one-half mile from the Indians’ camp when suddenly Indians commence fire, catching the column by complete surprise. Pontiac, forewarned by Canadian had been able to establish an ambush. The troops are momentarily disoriented; however, they quickly recover from the confusion and regain their stamina. The Indians are then swamped by British fire as the troops advance against their various positions and evict them. Nonetheless, the primary element of the troops, surprise, had been foiled, prompting the mission to be aborted. A retreat is ordered; however, still the Indians outnumber the force by about two-to-one and in such a way as to prevent the Indians from getting into new positions between the troops and the fort. The English are able to take out their wounded and all but seven of their dead. Captain Dalyel is killed during the skirmish. Captain Grant leads the retreat and with the support of two row galley’s he gets the column back to the fort. In addition to the loss of Dalyel, Captain Gray and lieutenants Luke and Brown of the 35th Regiment are wounded. Other casualties of the 35th include: one sergeant, 13 soldiers and one drummer killed, along with 25 wounded. The 60th (Royal Americans): one private killed and seven wounded. 80th Regiment: 2 killed and 3 wounded. Royal American Rangers: 2 killed and one wounded. The Indian losses by their count stands as 5 killed and 11 wounded.

August 1 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Mr. Rutherford, who escaped from his captivity and after trekking through the woods for about seven miles stumbles upon a canoe. He climbs aboard and rows about two miles to reach the sloop. Also, Major Gladwin is informed that a part of the Huron force is encamped about 12 miles below Detroit at Gross Isle. A chief, wounded on the previous day when Captain Dalyel was ambushed had been taken there to recover from his wounds. Also, about 1500, Mr. Campo arrives back at the fort. He returns the remains of Captain Dalyell who had been killed on the previous day. The Indians treat Dalyell grotesquely by “Schelping (scalping) him, cutting of one of his Arms and one Leg and takeing out his Bowels.” Captain Dalyell is interred at the fort. In conjunction The fort also undergoes some changes regarding the garrison. Up to the arrival of the reinforcements under Dalyel, the entire garrison spent the night on the works; however, as of this day, only eighty men, along with

a captain and three subalterns hold the ramparts each night.

August 2 1763 (Tuesday)–In Pennsylvania, Colonel Bouquet concludes a 150-mile march when he arrives at Fort Ligonier from Carlisle. The sight of the column instantly raises the spirit and morale of the garrison. In what so far has become a usual occurrence, the Indians that had been threatening the fort, vanish into the woods once the column appears. The fort, similarly to Fort Bedford had been isolated for weeks until Bouquet's arrival. In conjunction, Bouquet's successful advance, uninterrupted by any attacks is a tribute to the American riflemen who prevented any surprises by scouting the front of the column's route and backwoodsmen covered the rear. During the final lap of the journey, a 50-mile trek that crossed the Allegheny Mountains with a large train attached, accomplishes the trip in less than four days. Nevertheless, the remainder of the journey remains arduous due to the poor conditions of the route, which had initially carved by Colonel Washington five years earlier. Bouquet, in addition to having to travel along a primitive path, realizes, the wilderness is also infested with Indian scouts that will shadow the column, leaving his force subject to a surprise attack at any time. Bouquet remains at Fort Ligonier until 4 August.

August 4 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the Indians have increased their daily presence since the ill-fated mission under Captain Dalyel on 31 July. Since then about 250 Indians appear each night to maintain a watch. **In Pennsylvania,** Colonel Henry Bouquet at Fort Ligonier, sets out for Fort Pitt. Lt. Blane commits some of his garrison to bolster Bouquet, but he retains sufficient strength to hold the fort. Blane's garrison is also bolstered by frontier settlers who have been at the fort to ensure safety for their families. Bouquet leaves his oxen and wagons behind so as not to slow the march and to allow him more flexibility if the Indians launch a surprise attack. However, Bouquet does take 340 pack horses. The troops also travel lightly. Each man carries only his blanket and light arms. Colonel Bouquet's column, which departs from the fort during the latter part of the day, advances to a position west of Chestnut Ridge, a distance of slightly less than ten miles from Ligonier and about three miles from Latrobe. Bouquet makes camp for the night and resumes the march on the following morning.

August 5 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a 60-man detachment under Captain Grant leaves the fort at 0330 to occupy some of the houses where the Indians arrive during the day to harass the garrison. The contingent patiently waits to spring an ambush; however, on this day, the Indians fail to appear.

August 5-6 1763–In Pennsylvania (Battle of Bushy Run)--At about dawn, Colonel Bouquet breaks his camp near Chestnut Ridge and resumes his westward march toward Fort Pitt. Bouquet's column expects to advance just under 20 miles to Bushy Run where his force will pause during the hottest part of the day, before moving on to a point beyond Turtle Creek, about 13 miles beyond Bushy Creek. Bouquet does not want to get surprised while passing some treacherous ravines at the creek during daylight hours. The column pushes through the dense woods and by about 1300, they encroach Bushy Run, following the exhaustive march. In addition to being extremely tired, the troops have become thirsty. The column moves cautiously, with about nineteen men at the point, one frontiersman named Andrew Byerly and 18 Highlanders. Byerly, who joined Bouquet at Fort Ligonier, had been forced to flee his residence (Byerly Station) with his family when Pontiac raided the area. As the troops at the point move

close to Bushy Run, they are suddenly struck by a volley that takes out 12 of the 19 men to ignite the battle. The war cries of the remainder of the Indians, under Goyasuta, who are concealed in the woods raises even more noise. Other troops speed to support the vanguard, but the fire from the woods increases and the English attempt to return fire; however, they are only able to see some of their foe. Bouquet wastes no time. He orders a bayonet attack to drive the Indians (including Delawares, Mingoes, Shawnee and Wyandots) back.

The troops charge into the woods to evict the Indians and the charge succeeds. Nonetheless, the Indians are driven away, but only for a little while. At nearly the same time, the rear of the column comes under heavy attack, which endangers his supplies. Troops fly to the rear to beat off the attacking Indians and afterward, they are compelled to prevent the pack horses, which had been terribly frightened from the gunfire, from stampeding. The horses are surrounded to keep them in place. Nevertheless, the men handling the horses exhibit no courage. They seek protection in the bushes. However, Colonel Bouquet, an experienced Indian fighter displays confidence and courage during the initial stage of the battle, and his actions inspire his troops to hold steady and raise tenacious resistance. Many of his regulars and Highlanders quickly learn to appreciate the crash-course in Indian fighting that Bouquet had given them, particularly since the Indians seem to be increasing in number as each minute passes. The Indians strike the circle from all sides, but again, the bayonet prevents penetration. However, the Indians are so agile, that they bolt back behind the trees, which prevents them from suffering high numbers of fatal casualties. The English, however, compelled to remain in formation to protect the supplies sustain higher casualties. The contest continues without pause until dusk. The major fighting ceases, but the column is forced to encamp where they had been stalled earlier in the day. The troops keep their weapons by their side throughout the night. In addition to being surrounded, the troops also have no source for water within the confined perimeter.

Colonel Bouquet continues to rally his troops and he projects confidence, but he has grave concerns. One of his problems is that his troops had consumed all of their available water before they were ambushed. Any attempts to get water, particularly for the wounded are dangerous because the Indians control the ground and a nearby spring. Bouquet writes a report this night and he writes to General Amherst to give him a report on the day's fighting in the event that the command is vanquished. He states in his report "that their thirst was more intolerable than the enemy's fire." Nevertheless, some troops risk death and or torture by creeping to the creek to acquire a "few hat fulls of water" to give to the wounded, who are crowded into the middle of the circle and surrounded by bags of flour to protect them from incoming fire. In his letter to Amherst, he closes with the following: "...Whatever our fate may be, I thought it necessary to give your Excellency this early information that you may, at all events, take such means as you think proper with the provinces for their own safety and the effectual relief of Fort Pitt; as in case of another engagement I fear unsurmountable difficulties in protecting and transporting our provision, being very much weakened by the losses of this day, in men and horses, besides the additional necessity of carrying the wounded, whose situation is truly deplorable. I cannot sufficiently acknowledge the constant assistance I have received from Major Campbell during this long action, nor express my admiration of the cool and steady behavior of the troops, who did not fire a shot without orders, and drove the enemy from their posts with fixed bayonets. The conduct of the officers is much above my praises." Bouquet's casualties on this first day amount to some officers and about 60 men killed or wounded.

The night in camp passes ever so slowly. The able bodied troops contemplate their fate, which they realize will be sealed at dawn on the following day, while the wounded ponder identical thoughts, compounded because they are unable to participate in the action and realize their fate, survival or the hatchet, depends on the others in the command. The camp remains in absolute darkness to prevent the Indians from providing the lurking Indians with conspicuous targets. Throughout the dreary night, the troops continue to protect the pack horses, who are crammed close to the layers of flour bags, essentially affording more protection of the wounded. As the first sign of daybreak burst. There is hardly time to stretch. The Indians immediately renew their attack and they have gained a sense of overconfidence as if victory is assured. With each wave, more Indians die, but Bouquet's force takes more losses. The rings of fire and the stinging arrows also reduces the number of horses. Nonetheless, the troops in Bouquet's flower bag fortress are not in the mood to capitulate, despite the near insurmountable odds. Bouquet, fighting alongside his men begins to become the recipient of enormous fire, which prompts him to become less of a target. He sheds his brilliantly colored redcoat, for a bland uniform. While he changed uniforms behind a tree, the tree is struck by at least 14 bullets.

The Indians crash against the perimeter at all points and again they are met by lead and the steel of the bayonets. Confusion that had emerged on the previous day, reoccurs and once again the horse are sent into a frenzy from the incessant fire. Many of them are killed and other break loose and bolt through the lines to disappear in the woods. Nevertheless, the fighting continues unabated. At about 1000, Colonel Bouquet devises a plan that if successful, would save his beleaguered command. Bouquet has noticed the increased impetuosity of the enemy and he has become convinced that the Indians believe they have his force on the brink of defeat. Bouquet has also concluded that if he can draw them close together, that his force can overwhelm them. Bouquet unfolds his scheme by directing two companies of Major Campbell's company, which hold part of the circle to move back as if in a retreat to positions deeper, but still within the circular defensive line. In conjunction, while the Indians increase their confidence as they observe the cowardly retreat, other troops fill the void, created by the pull-back. The Indians seemingly reach their Zenith and launch a direct frontal attack to breach the line.

During the maneuver, Campbell's troops had jumped into a small concavity that permits the two companies to reach positions to the rear of the Indians, without being detected. In the meantime, the Indians continue their charge until it is abruptly interrupted when they are struck by a devastating volley from their rear that instantly liquidates many of them. However, their confidence had so greatly swelled that they do not run. They hold their ground and retain their confidence, but only for a while. Shortly after being pounded from the rear, they suddenly hear wild yells, more intimidating than usual, but to their great surprise, the yelling is not originating from reinforcements; rather the bellowing and screaming is from the Highlanders who plow into the Indians with fixed bayonets. The Indians, stunned by the devastating thrust are driven back, but not vanquished. Bouquet, while observing the close-quartered action senses, had already predetermined the effects of the bayonets on the Indians and he also surmised in which direction they would be compelled to run to escape the Highlanders.

While the Highlanders continue to press forward, the Indians back up precisely where two other companies, earlier removed from the circle, are waiting to spring the ambush. Just as the Indians cross into close range, the troops spring from their concealed positions and deliver a decimating

volley. While the Indians are attempting to recover, they get no reprieve. The two companies (3rd Light Infantry and 42nd Grenadier Regiment) had been ordered to support the two first companies.

This maneuver succeeds and the troops do not pause to reload for a second volley. They charge with fixed bayonets and scatter the Indians. And still, the Indians fail to find safety. The other two companies from Campbell's command join in the chase. The troops fire as they pursue and inject so much pressure, the Indians have no time to reload their weapons. The state of confusion remains on the battlefield; however, it is transferred to the Indians who become confused and disoriented due to their great losses. In the meantime, one contingent of the Indians, not yet affected by the ongoing rout, continues to retain cohesion at one section of Bouquet's circular defensive line. Nonetheless, when they see the other Indians taking flight and simultaneously observe a swarm of bayonets closing upon their positions, they too abruptly lose their confidence. They choose to run rather than face the bayonets.

Colonel Bouquet, whose force had held its own during two days of brutal combat through sheer determination and improvisation including using flour to construct a miniature fortress, looks out of his circle and sees not even one live Indian. However, about 60 Indians remain prone on the field which has become a field overtaken with silence and stillness. The tranquility finally permits the troops the time to get a well deserved drink of water, without risking their lives. After examining the field of battle, it becomes apparent that many Indians had also been wounded. Trails of blood mark the leaves that underscore the routes the Indians took to vanish in the forest. The English sustain the loss of eight officers and 115 men. The Indians sustain lower losses, however, several prominent chiefs, including Keelyuscung, a Delaware chief, are among the fatalities. The English capture only one Indian and reports indicate that he was seized by a Highlander and while taking his prize to Colonel Bouquet, he was intercepted by an officer, who liquidated him by shooting the captive in the head. In conjunction, reportedly, Colonel Bouquet scolds the officer for his action. During the final phase of the operations, some of the men who handled the horses emerge from the bushes and join with some rangers. They begin to take scalps, but the regulars take no part in the incident.

Following the victory, Bouquet is faced with a new problem. The battle which consumed about seven hours on the 5th and about six hours on this day, had cost the lives on many of the pack horses. Consequently, the English are compelled to dispose of a large part of their supplies and provisions. In addition, litters are made to transport the wounded. Afterward, the column moves to Bushy Run and Bouquet establishes his camp there. The troops remain cautious in the event of a new attack and shortly after they become settled, the alarm is signaled. The Indians do launch an attack, but their numbers are few. The light infantry, without waiting for orders from Colonel Bouquet, bolts from the ground and expeditiously eliminates the problem. On the following morning (7th), the column resumes its march to relieve Fort Pitt. The troops arrive at the post on 10 August and to their delight, the siege had ended before they arrived, on 1 August.

Some Indian bands harass the column during the last leg of the journey, but not with any major opposition. Nonetheless, on 1 August, before Bouquet's column arrives, some Indians pass by the fort. They do not attack; rather, they swing the scalps that they had taken at Bushy Run. At the time, the garrison has no knowledge of the battle at Bushy Run. Later, any apprehension they might have been experiencing dissipates instantly when the English column comes into sight. In

addition to realizing that the relief force would preserve the fort, the garrison, which had been totally isolated and nearly out of food, will enjoy their dinner. In conjunction, on 2 August, Captain Ecuyer had written a letter to Bouquet which stated: “.. have four legs of beef and no flour.” Nonetheless, the Indians, while holding Fort Pitt under siege, either purposely or inadvertently, had not destroyed the garden outside the fort. Once the Indians had departed, the people in the fort were able to make use of it. After arriving at Fort Pitt, Colonel Bouquet sends word to Fort Ligonier to dispatch supplies and the heavy guns to the fort. Also, Colonel Bouquet is directed to relieve Fort Venango, Fort Le Boeuf and Fort Presque Isle; however, those forts had already fallen. Bouquet, however, due to the condition of his force, following the battle at Bushy Run is actually unable to advance to retake the posts. The campaign to accomplish this mission is initiated during the following spring when Bouquet assembles an army at Fort Loudoun in Pennsylvania. Afterward, during August (1764), the army arrives at Carlisle.

After the victory, Colonel Bouquet in a message to General Amherst states (the letter in part): “In the morning (6 August) the savages surrounded our camp, at the distance of about 500 yards and by shouting and yelping quite round at that extensive circumference thought to have terrified us with their numbers....” And in the same letter, regarding the moment of victory: “ ...The last of the savages which had not been attacked, were kept in awe by the remains of our troops posted on the brow of the hill for that purpose; nor durst they attempt to support, or assist their right, but being witness to their defeat, followed their example and fled.” In conjunction, the fortifications used by Colonel Bouquet included bags of flour, prompting the fort to be dubbed Flourbag Fort.

Colonel Bouquet’s stunning and momentous victory over the Indians led by Guyasuta remains as one of the most remarkable victories ever accomplished over the Indians. Guyasuta, who essentially commanded the Indians in Western Pennsylvania was a powerful chief of the Senecas and a formidable foe. Although not as well known or powerful as Pontiac, he left his mark. Sometimes, during that period, the conflict known as Pontiac’s war, was referred to as Guyasuta’s War. The Indians, essentially vanquish at the Battle of Bush Run are no longer strong enough to wage open warfare. Pontiac moves to Illinois, but later, he is killed by another Indian while he is with a tribe near Joliet. Also, Bouquet’s victory brings about a period of tranquility along the frontier, which is spared from further Indian attacks. The ravaged fields and farmlands throughout the region returns to a period of peace and the settlers again are able to live without fear of being harmed.

August 7 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin reads a letter, dated 18 July, from Captain Ethrington, which states that he along with his garrison (Michilimackinac) and the garrison of Fort William Augustus and a group of traders are embarking from Michilimackinac for Montreal. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Augusta, Andrew Montour arrives at the fort from the west branch of the Susquehanna and informs Colonel Burd that the Indians had seized Fort Pitt and Ligonier. He also states that the Indians are aware of Colonel Bouquet’s movements and they are maintaining constant surveillance of his force, since the columns departed from Carlisle. In conjunction, the information regarding Forts Ligonier and Pitt is erroneous. Neither of those two forts fall to the Indians.

August 8 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a contingent, composed of 60 men and two subalterns, under Captain Hopkins embarks from the fort at 0200 to launch a surprise raid

against the Puttawattamee Village. The contingent reaches the objective without being discovered; however, when the boats move toward shore to land, the row galley which is trailing the boats loses contact due to a combination of darkness and fog. Consequently, the galley misses the point where the boats turned and sails well beyond them. Hopkins succeeds in getting the galley back with his force; however, the mixup costs time and before the attack can commence, dawn arrives and the troops are detected. Hopkins is compelled to return to the fort. The fog causes additional problems too. The galley and the boats again get separated while heading back to the fort. The row galley drops its anchor to await the dissipation of the fog, something the boats are unable to do. And, due to the Indians on the banks of the river, they are not able to go ashore. Consequently the boats continue to struggle against the fog as they return to the fort.

August 10 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the sloop and the schooner prepare to embark for Niagara. Fifteen wounded and about an equal number of traders (former captives) are aboard the vessels. In other activity, Jacob Taylor, a trader who escaped from the Indians arrives at the fort. In Pennsylvania, Colonel Bouquet's relief force arrives at Fort Pitt; however, by the time the column arrives, the Indians had already ended the siege.

August 11 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin is informed that the Puttawattamees and the Hurons are returning to the area.

August 12 1763 (Friday)-- The Five Nations of the Scioto Plains, Delawares and Hurons sue for peace with the English. **In Naval Activity**, Vice Admiral Rodney (promoted during October of the previous year to Vice Admiral of the Blue) arrives back in England. He strikes his flag on 16 August. During the following year, on 21 January, Rodney is raised to a baronet. of Great Britain. This same year (1764) he marries Henrietta Clies, the daughter of John Clies. Subsequently, on 18 October, 1770, Sir George Rodney is appointed vice admiral of the White and during the following year, on 24 October, he is appointed vice admiral of the Red. Later during 1771, on 23 January, he is appointed commander-in-chief at Jamaica. During the American Revolution, Sir George Rodney serves actively and for awhile toward the latter part of the war (1780), he becomes commander of all British ships in North America, then later he returns to his command in the West Indies. Admiral Rodney dies on 24 May, 1792.

August 17 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a group of about volunteers under Mr. Watkins moves out of the fort under cover of darkness to set up an ambush at the house of Mr. Babier. The Indians, most probably a sentry, spot the men just as they reach the house to foil the plan

August 18 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the siege continues. The Ottawas relocate their camp that is close to the Grand Marais. The new camp is at the River Rouge. In other activity, Major Gladwin reads a letter from Wassong, a Chippewa chief. The threatening letter tells Gladwin, that if he “had a Mind to leave the Fort he might do it peacibly at present, but if not that the River would soon be stop'd up. That he had never yet fought against him, for that if he had the Fort wou'd have been burn'd long ago.” In response, Major Gladwin sends his answer to the chief stating that “if they (Indians) had any thing to say to come to the Fort; that he knew they cou'd not write & therefore might be impos'd on by those that wrote for them, & desir'd the Messenger to tell the French that the first that wrote another Letter of that Kind might

expect: to be hang'd..."

August 20 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, a contingent, including Captain Hopkins departs from the fort at about 0330 to ambush Indians at a point where the Indians pass when moving between the camp at the River Rouge and the Puttawattimy village. The contingent is supported by a diversion. Major Gladwin dispatches four batteaux to distract the Indians. Nevertheless, still the contingent is discovered and again, Hopkins is compelled to abort the mission. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Augusta, reinforcements under Lt. Blythe arrive at the post. In other activity, Colonel Burd, with a small detachment embarks in two canoes en route to Harris' Landing. Meanwhile, the post remains on high alert. The garrison is aware of the expedition of Colonel Bouquet and the consequences that will emerge if he succeeds, but also, the more menacing results if he fails. The former would lead to imminent peace and the latter would most probably bring about catastrophic consequences for the garrison, but also for the entire region, which would be overrun by the Indians and turned into a wasteland. **In West Virginia**, Indians attack a small party near Welton's Fort, located near Petersburg in Augusta County (later Hardy County). The six men are asleep when the Indians pounce upon them. Jonathan Welton and Michael Harness are killed and another man, Delay (Delea) is wounded and captured, then scalped. Delay dies within several days. Job Welton, a son of Job Welton Sr., also sustains a wound from a tomahawk as he escapes. Nonetheless, he makes it back to the fort. Another man in the party, Kuykendall, also escapes. The incident is remembered as the Looney Creek Massacre. Some details of the massacre differ. The party has been described as a 9-man party. The details of the attack were afterward published in a Pennsylvania newspaper, the *Pennsylvania Gazette*, on 6 October 1763 and listed it as a six-man party that was attacked on 20 August. Two detachments of militia pursue the Indians, one under Captain Collins and the other under Major Wilson who scour the area near Patterson Creek and Looney's Creek respectively. Contact is made on 30 August, while both units are joined together. A skirmish erupts close to the foothills of the Allegheny Mountains and the Indians flee. The troops retrieve the scalps of those killed near the fort. In addition, the Indians leave in such haste, that they leave a captive behind, a man, named Delay, the brother of one of those who were slain. Also, the attack is sometimes erroneously reported as having occurred during 1756.

August 23 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, a skirmish erupts outside the fort at the property of Mr. Barrois. The fighting continues throughout the day until about one-half hour before dusk, when the contingent was recalled. Afterward, the Indians deploy near the house of Mr. St. Martin and from there they fire upon the fort. The Indians also set a few houses on fire, prompting Major Gladwin to become infuriate. He dispatches a contingent under Major Robert Rogers to repossess the houses they occupied earlier in the day. The Indians take flight and Rogers holds the position throughout the night. In conjunction, three men are wounded during the day's fighting.

August 24 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, after dusk, Major Gladwin again sends out a contingent, composed of one officer and 30 troops to occupy and hold the house of Mr. Barrois and the home of Mr. St. Martin. Also, during the day, two men are wounded. Also, a trader from Albany who escaped from captivity reaches the fort and informs Major Gladwin that he had not eaten anything in the last four days. He escaped from a Puttawattamee villages, located about forty miles from the fort. In other activity, the Indians burn a house, which earlier in the day was occupied by troops from the fort. However, the house was somewhat isolated from the other homes and it was too risky to permanently occupy it because the Indians could

easily cut them off from the fort.

August 25 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, Indians arrive during the afternoon and maintain a steady fire upon the contingent holding Mr. Barrois' house; however, they fail to inflict any harm.

August 25-27 1763–In Pennsylvania at Fort Augusta, Lt. Hunter notes in his journal that a 112-man contingent under Captain Patterson and Captain Bedford arrive at the post. The contingent departs from the fort on the same day en route to attack Indian villages along the west branch of the Susquehanna about 60 miles from the post. After traveling about thirty miles, the contingent is intercepted by a large band of Indians at a point known as Muncy Hills on the route running from Warrior Run to Warrior Spring (close to present-day Port Penn). The Indians fire first and momentarily stun the English. However, they return fire and drive the Indians away. The troops sustain casualties including some fatalities and decide not to pursue due to the imminence of dusk. Nevertheless, the troops are followed by the Indians and at about 2200, again the Indians attack. However, no casualties are sustained. Afterward, the command gets separated. George Allen and John Wood, along with 26 men form one detachment and the main body remains under Captain Patterson and Captain Bedford. Patterson arrives back at Fort Augusta at about 1200 on the 27th. The other detachment under Allen and Wood arrives at about 1700. Before reaching the fort, Allen and Wood encounter several Indians moving towards the fort. They are captured and scalped. One other Indian had been scalped during the initial encounter. The troops sustain 4 men killed and 4 others wounded. In conjunction, this incident for many years had remained an obscure incident; however, it emerged from the journals of the fort and is remembered as the Battle of Muncy Hills. Also, some accounts of this engagement list it as September, 1763, which is in conflict with the entries in the journal at Fort Augusta, which list the dates as 25-27 August. Also a detailed account of the engagement was published in the work, Loudoun's Indian Narratives, published in Carlisle, Pennsylvania during 1808. The only known copy still in existence is held in the State Library in Harrisburg.

August 26 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, two men, Mr. Cecote and Mr. Forville arrive at the fort as spokesmen for four of the prominent Ottawa chiefs. The chiefs want Mr. Labute to leave the fort to meet with them; however, LaBute declines the invitation. In other activity, the Indians set fire to Mr. Babier's house at about 1600. Also, one man is wounded during the day's exchange of fire.

August 28 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the Indians continue to fire upon the fort; however, there is less activity this day than the previous day. In other activity, a group of about 50 Indians arrive at the fort. Thirty of the Indians inform Major Gladwin that they saw a large contingent of British troops at a landing place slightly less than 10 miles from the fort. They also tell Gladwin that the troops are carrying provisions on their backs.

August 29 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, two freshly made keys to the gates are accidentally discovered.

August 30 1763 (Tuesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin is informed that four Huron Indians had arrived at the Indians' camp. They arrived from Sandusky and they brought

news that a British army, composed of about 2,000 men had advanced to a point between Fort Pitt and Sandusky and were en route to Fort Detroit. In other activity, the Indians are especially active this day and continually fire upon the fort. On the following day, it is learned at the fort that one of the Missefagy chiefs had been wounded this day.

August 31 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a contingent under Mr. Brehm succeeds in destroying one of the Indians' trenches. **In Pennsylvania** at Fort Augusta, the garrison is greeted with might have been its best news since Colonel Burd first arrived there during December 1756. Captain Graydon and a detachment of 12 men arrive at the post to proclaim that Colonel Bouquet had vanquished the Indians at Bushy Run and from there his columns advanced to Fort Duquesne. Later the information is validated to the jubilation of the garrison.

September 1 1763 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, information arrives that informs Major Gladwin of the death of the chief who was wounded on the 30th of August. On this day, a nephew of one of the great Ottawa chiefs is killed during today's fighting while the Indians attempt to reopen a trench that had been destroyed on the previous day.

September 1763–In Pennsylvania, a band of 8 Indians arrives at the house of John Fincher in Berks County. Earlier, during November 1756, Indians had destroyed his home by fire. Fincher, a Quaker, invites the Indians inside in anticipation that they had come as friends. Shortly after the Indians enter the home, it becomes obvious that they did not arrive to share dinner. Mr. and Mrs. Fincher, along with two of their sons are immediately murdered. The Indians also drag away their daughter; however, terrifying screams are heard by neighbors, indicating that she too had been killed. One other, a young boy, living in the home evades capture. He runs for help and encounters a detachment of rangers (Captain Kern's company) under Ensign Scheffer. The rangers pursue the Indians and arrive at the house of a Mr. Nicholas Miller. To their disgust, they discover four children and each one had been murdered. Two other children are carried away. Nevertheless, Mr. Miller and his wife are in the field and the Indians fail to immediately detect them. Nonetheless, when they are spotted, the Indians give chase. Scheffer's rangers arrive in time to engage the Indians and save the lives of the Millers and their two children, whom the Indians abandon once the rangers arrive. In conjunction, each of the murdered victims had also been scalped; except for one small newborn baby, about two weeks old. The Indians spare the infant from being scalped, but in an unconscionable act, they swing the baby, "whose head they had dashed against the wall, to which the brains and clotted blood adhered as a silent witness of their cruelty." The despicable actions of the Indians during this massacre causes the fear of the settlers to compel every settler beyond the Blue Mountains to abandon their homes.

Nonetheless, within a few additional days, Indians strike the home of Frantz Hubler in Bern County less than twenty miles from Reading. The family is caught by total surprise. The Indians wound Frantz; however, his wife and three of their children are seized and carried away. The other three children are scalped, but not killed and of those, only one survives

September 3, 1763 (Saturday)–In New York, a schooner that had departed Fort Niagara for Fort Detroit is attacked by a large group of Indians who approach the vessel by canoes after the vessel enters the Detroit River. At about 2100, the Indians using canoes move from the river banks to seize the vessel. Nearly 350 Indians encroach the vessel and they are detected when they reach a point about 100 yards from it. At the time of the attack, only twelve men are aboard

the vessel and of those, two are killed and four others are wounded. Nevertheless, the Indians fail to board the schooner. The Indians, reportedly lose 8 killed and 20 wounded. The schooner is reinforced on the 5th when Major Gladwin dispatches 4 row galleys. At about 1530, she arrives opposite the fort, with Captain Hopkins and about 20 of his men aboard. The galleys had returned earlier at about 0900. The schooner's cargo includes 47 barrels of flour and 160 barrels of pork. Subsequently, Major Gladwin is informed by Mr. Fortville that a party under Baptiste Deriverre that had arrived from Illinois Monsr. Sabole participated in the attack against the schooner.

September 7 1763 (Wednesday)-A peace treaty is signed by the English with the Chippewa and Ottawa Indian nations.

September 8 1763 (Thursday)-**In Pennsylvania**, a newspaper, the *Pennsylvania Gazette*, reports on a mission initiated by volunteers from the vicinity of Lancaster who advanced to Great Island located in the West Branch of the Susquehanna River to engage a band of Indians there. The paper reports that of the 110 men who participated in the mission, several were wounded. No fatalities are reported.

September 10 1763 (Saturday)-**In Pennsylvania**, shortly after other Indian raids against settlers in the region, they strike again by crashing through the door of Philip Marttoff in Berks County, while he is absent. However, his family is there and except for one daughter who evades the Indians, they are massacred. After Philip's wife and their four children, two sons and two daughters, are murdered, the Indians take their scalps. After the massacre, the Indians burn the house and barn, while they simultaneously destroy the supply of hay by fire and the grain.

September 14 1763 (Wednesday)-**In Western New York**--Massacre at Devil's Hole (Ravine) - A contingent of English troops, which had just delivered supplies at Fort Schlosser is ambushed and massacred by a band of Seneca Indians several miles below Niagara Falls and slightly north of Niagra Glen in the vicinity of the Niagra River Gorge. The Senecas number about 500. The convoy including wagons is suddenly struck while under the guidance of John Steadman as it advances southward along the military road (Niagra Portage) near Fort Gray (established earlier during the war). The troops find no time to repel the assault. In a flash, the wagons are afire from flaming-arrows and the Senecas pounce upon the unit with wagons spilling as the pandemonium erupts. The sounds of Senecas, during the attack, reverberate far enough that the war cries are heard by the people at a nearby village. Reinforcements arrive, but they too are ambushed. None of the reinforcements escape; however, three men with the convoy do escape. In the meantime, John Steadman and one youngster escape the massacre. Steadman makes it to Fort Schlosser, but too late to save the command. Subsequently, a relief force arrives at the scene of the ambush only to find the bodies of eighty dead soldiers, each with their scalps removed.

September 16 1763 (Friday)-**In Michigan**, a soldier and one trader, captured earlier (29 May) while coming from Michilimackinac, had escaped from the Indians, and arrive at Fort Detroit.

September 17 1763 (Saturday)-**In Michigan**, Major Henry Gladwin, the commander at Detroit is promoted to the rank of Lt. Colonel. Gladwin had succeeded to hold Detroit despite the recent siege by Pontiac.

September 19 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin is informed that the Puttawattamys had all departed. In addition, he is told that the Ottawas have become angry with Pontiac for proposing to depart. The anger of the Ottawas prompts them to choose a new chief in place of Pontiac. They select Manitoo.

September 21 1763 (Wednesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the Indians that continue to maintain a siege of the fort send a threat to all of the inhabitants. The inhabitants are told not to enter the fort for three days and they are also informed that any inhabitants that depart from the fort will be told to return to tell those in the fort that if they exit, their homes will be burned.

September 23 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, two Indians fire upon Sergeant Fisher while he is moving toward the house of Mr. St. Martin. It is thought that some French were involved in an attempt to capture a British officer. The practice of walking there by officers including the commander, Major Gladwin, is well known by the Indians.

September 30–October 1763–In Pennsylvania, the frontier remains a place of danger and Indians continue to raid and plunder. They penetrate eastwardly as far as Reading and Bethlehem. At this time there is also alarm that Fort Pitt and Fort Augusta will be attacked. Colonel John Armstrong leads a force from Fort Shirley on 30 September, en route to the west branch of the Susquehanna River to strike Great Island, the suspected position of the Indians. The force, composed of several hundred troops arrives at Great Island only to discover it abandoned; however, the Indians had left horses and cattle on the island indicating they had made a hurried withdrawal. Colonel Armstrong, leading the main body of his command advances about thirty miles to another suspected Indian camp and it too had been abandoned, leaving signs of yet another quick exit. Unfinished meals are discovered when the troops enter the camp. Armstrong orders the houses and the crops of corn to be destroyed. Also, during this same period, Major Asher Clayton departs Harris' Ferry to evict the Connecticut settlers who had moved into Wyoming Valley; however, Indians had attacked the settlement prior to the arrival of Clayton's column. Clayton's troops discover a town in ashes and they find more than 20 settlers, killed by torture.

Early October 1763–In Pennsylvania, the Indians continue to raid the area in and around Allentown and Bethlehem. The attacks succeed in compelling the settlers to abandon their homes.

October 3 1763 (Monday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the sounds of cannon and some small arms are heard by the garrison at about noon. Later, the schooner comes into sight and she arrives at the fort at about 1530. Captain Montrefor, aboard the schooner informs Major Gladwin that the sloop had been lost on Lake Erie at a point between Presque Isle and Niagara on 28 August. He reports that all of the provisions and guns, except for 185 barrels had been lost. Those that were not lost had been transferred to the schooner. In conjunction, the sloop's rigging was taken to Niagara.

October 7 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan, Mr. Campo arrives at the fort to speak on behalf of Wabicommigot, a Toronto chief who is inquiring about Major Gladwin's "Sentiments about a peace." Gladwin responds with an ambiguous answer; however, he does tell Campo that he will consider bringing the chief to the fort to have a discussion. In conjunction, the chief had arrived

on Sunday 2 October, accompanied by 24 braves, purporting to have arrived, “not to make War, but to try to accommodate Affairs.” In other activity, several men, a soldier, a Cherokee and a trader arrive at the fort after escaping from captivity.

October 7 1763 (Friday)–In Michigan, Mr. Campo arrives at the fort to speak on behalf of Wabicommigot, a Toronto chief who is inquiring about Major Gladwin’s “Sentiments about a peace.” Gladwin responds with an ambiguous answer; however, he does tell Campo that he will consider bringing the chief to the fort to have a discussion. In conjunction, the chief had arrived on Sunday 2 October, accompanied by 24 braves, purporting to have arrived, “not to make War, but to try to accommodate Affairs.” In other activity, several men, a soldier, a Cherokee and a trader arrive at the fort after escaping from captivity. **In England,** King George III, declares (Proclamation of 1763) that there shall be four Provinces emerging from the recent English victories over the French. They are Grenada, Quebec, East Florida and West Florida. East Florida will extend from the Chattahoochy to the Atlantic Ocean and north to the southern boundary of Georgia. West Florida will extend from the Mississippi River, north of the Bayou Iberville, and from there eastward to the Chattahoochy River; northward to the thirty-first parallel of latitude, and to the south to the Gulf of Mexico. Subsequently, Quebec receives additional territory as the area north of the Ohio River will be included (1774). West Florida is to extend from the Mississippi River to the Appalachicola River and to the Atlantic Ocean. In conjunction, the proclamation also carves out an Indian reserve that prohibits the settlements of any white colonists. It stretches from the area south of the Hudson Bay to the land north of the Floridas and west of the Appalachian Mountains. The edict essentially makes it impossible for whites to acquire a patent for any of the affected territory (west of the Appalachians) unless the Indians agree either by treaty or by selling the land. The Colonists do not receive the proclamation with enthusiasm as they take it as royal interference with American affairs. In conjunction, these boundaries are later adjusted by subsequent treaties (of Fort Stanwix). Nonetheless, the Colonists pay little heed to the dictates of the Crown and continue to head west.

October 8 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, sixty Miamis arrived to join with the Indians who continue to hold the fort under siege. Also, Major Gladwin is informed that the Chippewas are getting every boat and canoe they possess prepared to attack the next flotilla of armed boats that move up the river.

October 13 1763 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, an 80-man contingent commanded by Major Asher Clayton arrives at Fort Augusta. Clayton, after pausing at the post, he departs on the 15th. A 24-man contingent under Lt. Hunter, part of the garrison, bolsters the force. The troops move out en route to Wyoming. Meanwhile on the 17th, an urgent message from John Harris arrives at the post. Harris informs the commander that the Indians had struck Northampton County and wiped out 45 persons and to make the news more distressing, Harris states that the murders continue. In addition, Harris’ message states that the governor orders that a messenger be sent to Major Clayton to instruct him to return. Clayton is intercepted and immediately, moves back to Fort Augusta, arriving there on the 20th. In the meantime, Clayton’s force had discovered 10 people dead at Wyoming and the Indians scalped everyone of them.

October 15 1763 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Indians attack the Wyoming Valley settlement. About 20 people are massacred. One of the families there had been the Cochrans. The settlers there had been from Connecticut; however, many had left the settlement before the attack.

October 29 1763 (Saturday)–In Michigan, Monsieur Dequendse (Duquindse) arrives from Illinois at the Indian camp close to Fort Detroit. He holds council with Pontiac and the other chiefs. On the following day he delivers a letter to the fort regarding the peace which had been signed between England and France. **In Pennsylvania,** John Penn, formerly a member of the governor's council, arrives in the province, carrying his commission appointing him as Lt. Governor. He succeeds Lt. Governor Denny, who his seat in the council. Shortly after taking office, Governor Penn agrees to accept the Christian refugee Indians from Nain and Wichetunk who arrive in the Northern Liberties section of Philadelphia, but the action is not enthusiastically accepted by either the soldiers or the citizens. The citizens, described as the "lower classes," move to the brink of an exploding riot and the soldiers prohibit the use of any of their barracks as a place of shelter for the Indians. The impasse is finally broken when some Quakers move the Indians to Province Island. In conjunction, Penn remains as governor until 1773. Subsequently, during 1777, pursuant to orders of the Continental Congress, Penn is arrested during 1777 as a Loyalist and held until the following year. He dies in Bucks County during 1795.

October 30 1763 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Monsieur Dequendse (Duquindse), who arrived from Illinois on the previous day, arrives at the fort to deliver a letter from Monsieur Daraeyon (commandant of the Illinois country) to Major Gladwin. On the previous day, Dequendse had informed the Indians that peace had been attained between the French and English. At that time, he urged them to "live in peace." In conjunction, at about this time, Pontiac sends a letter to Major Gladwin to inform him that "their hatchet was buried." Pontiac also requests an answer (in writing) from Gladwin. After receiving the letter, Gladwin responds, telling Pontiac that "if he had begun the War it would be in his Power to end it; but as it was him, he must wait the Pleasure of the General (Amherst), to whom he would write & inform him of his pacific Inclination in case he (Pontiac) committed no more Hostilities." Pontiac, in turn, sends an answer to Gladwin stating that he would not commit further hostilities and he tells Gladwin that he will "come (to the fort) when he was sent for." In conjunction, news of the peace treaty **November 16 1763 (Wednesday)–In Pennsylvania,** a man, named McCormick, arrives at Fort Augusta with 44-head of cattle, but he also delivers more tragic news. McCormick informs the officers that the Indians had massacred three separate families and scalped each person. The atrocities occurred within about 8 miles of Carlisle.

December 8 1763 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, a royal proclamation, issued in England on 10 October, is published this day in Philadelphia. The proclamation "prohibits until further order the colonial governors except of Quebec and Florida from granting warrants of surveyor patents for any lands beyond the heads or sources of the rivers which fall into the Atlantic, or any lands not purchased from or ceded by the Indians." The proclamation also orders "all persons who had settled on any such land to remove therefrom forthwith." and it further prohibits "any private purchase of land from the Indians, and provided that all who wished to trade with them should take out a license and give security."

December 10 1763 (Saturday)–In France, the proceedings which had begun during 1761 regarding corruption in the colony (Canada) comes to a close. Lt. De Sartine and the Council of the Chitelet announce the verdicts. They include: M. Bigot is banished from France, but he is also heavily fined and he is compelled to pay 1,500,000 francs in restitution. M. Varin is also banished from France and he is forced to pay 800,000 francs in restitution. M. Penisseau (a

contractor at Montreal) is fined 500 franc. In addition, he is compelled to pay 600,000 francs in restitution and he is banished from Paris for a period of nine years. In conjunction, Madame Penisseau “so gained the favor of the Duc de Choiseul that he granted to her husband letters of vindication and permitted him to keep the fraudulent gains which he had been sentenced to pay back.” Another, Joseph Cadet (commissary-general of Canada) is fined a mere 500 francs and he is compelled to pay 6,000,000 francs in restitution; however, he is also banished for nine years. Apparently, Cadet reimburses the government the sum of 10,000,000 francs.

Chabert Joncaire, Vassan and Saint-Blin were each convicted of “having examined inconsiderately and without scrutiny the inventories of provisions in the forts where they commanded.” The three men were “forbidden” from repeating their past offenses, which essentially is equivalent to being acquitted. Also, in regard to the charges against M. Pean, the proceedings do not terminate; rather they continue for an additional six months, while Pean remains in the Bastille. Subsequently, Pean is sentenced on 15 June, 1764. He is fined 600,000 francs; however, the ruling mandates that Pean remain confined in the Bastille until the fine is paid.

During 1764, a decree was issued that he restore to the King 600,000. In conjunction, initially 55 men had been accused of corruption; however, only 21 appear to have gone to trial. The following men are among the acquitted: Marquis de Vaudreuil, Le Mercier and Desmeloizes. Another, M. Rouville, the commander at Toronto, burned the fort and abandoned the area, believing the English were about to launch an attack; however, no attack materialized. He was fined 20 francs and banished from Paris for three years. Of those in high office in Canada, the worst offenders had been Bigot, the Intendant; Joseph Cadet, the commissary-general of Canada ; Jean-Victor Varin, deputy to the Intendant, commissary of marine, etc., and the Marquis de Vaudreuil. In conjunction, Vaudreuil, although acquitted and released from prison, loses nearly all of his possession. He also dies this same year.

December 12 1763 (Monday)–In Pennsylvania, General Thomas Gage, successor of General Jeffrey Amherst, as commander-in-chief of the English forces in America, concurs with General Amherst’s earlier call (5 November, 1763) for raising 1,000 troops. He makes the identical requisition and renews the call that the force be raised by 1 May, 1764. In conjunction, General Thomas Gage, appointed governor of Montreal subsequent to the conquest of Canada, is later during 1774, appointed governor of Massachusetts. Gage remains in the colonies until October 1775 when he returns to England where he dies during April 1787. Also, General Amherst, after his return to England becomes governor of Guernsey during 1771. Later, during 1776, he receives the title, Baron Amherst of Holmesdale. During 1778, General Amherst receives command of the army in England. Later during 1787, he receives another title, Baron Amherst of Montreal. During 1793, he is again named commander of the army in England, however, during 1795, he is replaced by the Duke of York, the second son of the king. In conjunction, in an effort to make up for the abrupt change, Amherst is offered the title of an earldom and he is offered the title of field marshal. He declines both offers, but late accepts the title of field marshal. General Amherst dies on 3 August, 1797. ty had reached Illinois on 27 September.

1764–In Illinois, the French destroy Fort Kaskaskia in Illinois at Ellis Grove to prevent it from being taken by the British. The British however, build another fort in its place, Fort Gage, which

is constructed out of stone. The British retain control until it comes under attack during the American Revolution by Virginians under George Rogers Clark. **In Michigan** - Fort St. Joseph is regained by the English after having lost it the previous year to Indians under Pontiac. Nonetheless, the English choose not to send a garrison. British troops occupy it during the American War for Independence. **In Pennsylvania**, Settlers in large numbers begin to move into the territory along the Monongahela River which is considered by the Six Nations to be their territory. In conjunction, the Monongahela River which flows for a distance of about 128 miles through West Virginia and Western Pennsylvania where it converges with the Allegheny River at Pittsburgh. **In Europe**, Large numbers of Europeans begin to emigrate to America. South Carolina this year receive many who seek the Colonies for a better life. In other activity, settlers at Roanoke, North Carolina relocate to West Florida in the vicinity of Baton Rouge (Louisiana). Also, East Florida, under the domination of the English, receives a huge influx of settlers during the next decade. In Tennessee, Daniel Boone arrives in Tennessee from North Carolina. He is accompanied by Samuel Calloway. The exploration venture lasts only a short while, but Boone will return to the region again during 1771. **In England**, British Prime Minister Grenville revisits legislation, earlier introduced in Parliament by Charles Townsend, regarding supplementing the costs of placing British Regulars to erect a sturdy defense against the Indians. The House of Commons agrees with the practice of implementing taxes (Stamp Duties) upon the Colonies and concludes to the dismay of the Colonists "that Parliament has a right to tax the Colonies." Parliament suspends action on the bill to afford the Colonists time to suggest any alternative forms of raising the funds.

February 27 1764 (Monday)--In Louisiana, Major Loftus, in command of a contingent of the 22nd Regiment, embarks on the Mississippi from New Orleans, en route to take possession of Illinois. The flotilla comes under attack near Roche d'Avion while passing through Mississippi. Loftus, being forewarned of the lurking dangers is proceeding prudently, with his boats formed into a single column. On 20 March, the banks of the river appear harmless; however, at about 0700, suddenly, the two boats at the point are struck by a wave of fire that originates from concealed positions from the west bank. The troops immediately return fire at suspected positions; however, both lead boats are struck heavily and they become immobile. Six men are killed and four others are wounded. Conditions forbid a landing. Consequently, no direct eye-to-eye contact is made during the engagement. Major Loftus, unable to advance further, is compelled to return to New Orleans. At the time, Loftus deduces that with the conditions of the banks prohibiting a landing and the narrowness of the channel, that his 200-man force, confined to the boats would face disaster against an estimated enemy force of about 2,000 Indians. Once back in New Orleans, Loftus asks permission to carry the boats overland to reach the bayou from where he can arrive at Lake Ponchartrain. Nonetheless, the French governor, Jean Jacques d'Abbadie, refuses permission, which complicates Loftus' mission.

Undaunted, Loftus, aware of a transport in the river, detains it and the transport takes his force and the boats to the Balizes. From there Loftus moves to Pensacola, from where he will again move to take possession of Illinois. Meanwhile, the new British Commander-in-Chief in the colonies dispatches two separate Expeditionary Forces to terminate the hostilities. One advances via Pittsburgh (Pittsburgh) and another travels across the Great Lakes. The missions succeed and the Indians are compelled to seek peace.

March 29 1764 (Thursday)--In Michigan at Fort Detroit, Major Gladwin, after learning that a band of hostile Indians, about 13-strong, had been detected in the woods, sends a detachment to engage them. Lt. McDougal at about dusk, leads 20 men into the woods behind the settlement

in the rear of the fort. The troops arrive where the fires had been burning, but the Indians had vacated the area. The detachment advances toward a house where the Indians had been on the previous night and while en route, they discover the Indians. Nevertheless, the Indians take flight.

April 15 1764 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, another former captive arrives at the post from Saginaw (Michigan). He informs Major Gladwin that one day before he escaped from the Indians, he observed them eating a young girl that had been a captive. His death had been set for the identical day, however, he was sent to bring some wood to the fire and at that time he slipped away and vanished in the woods, eight days before reaching the fort.

July 26 1764 (Thursday)–In Pennsylvania, in the vicinity of present-day Greencastle (Antrim County), a band of three Indians strike a defenseless schoolhouse. The slaughter the school master, Enoch Brown and despite his pleading to spare the eleven students, they too are murdered. However, one boy, Archibald McCullough, although left for dead survives the massacre. It is thought that the Indians had arrived from the Muskingum River region; however, a report from a Richard Bard, who lived nearby when the massacre occurred, related that he had noticed his dog become edgy, which caused him to return to his house and shortly thereafter, encountered a detachment under Captain James Potter (later General Potter during the American Revolution) giving chase to a party of Indians from the Seneca tribes. The school master when found, had been clutching a Bible in his hands. The ten students and the master were interred in a common grave. In conjunction, on the identical date, during 1756, a party of Indians had seized two boys from the McCullough family and taken them back to the west in the Muskingum River where they are adopted into the Delaware tribe.

July 29 1764 (Sunday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, the sloop *Royal Charlotte* embarks for Niagara. In other activity, Manitoo, an Ottawa chief, arrives at the fort, along with four other Ottawas. They have brought three prisoners with them. The Indians claim to represent the “sentiments” of all of the chiefs. Manitoo “begged pardon for what they had done in a most submissive Manner; the Reason of their beginning he did not know, but he that set them on (Pontiac) was return'd from the Illinois, but was no more beard by any body in the Nation; that God had told him he had done wrong, that he had made this Earth for them & us to live quietly together in, & that Pontiac the Causer of its being disturbed wou'd not die but wou'd burn in Hell eternally, as all those wou'd do who did not follow the Advice &: obey the Will of their Brother...” Manitoo also requests that if their “Brother (Gladwin) was “convinc'd of their Sincerity they hop'd he wou'd give them Liberty to come & settle their ancient Village.” Major Gladwin essentially responds as he has done in the past” If you who set you on, black or white, I will tell the General (Amherst) what you say, and it may be a Step toward your getting Peace, but it does not look as if you were very sincere, since this is the first of your Appearance. But I suppose the Reason of your coming is because your vain Hopes of an Army from the Illinois is vanished & you see yourselves without Succour.” In conjunction, since the previous October, when Pontiac had informed Gladwin that the hatchet was buried, there has been a steady stream of chiefs arriving at the fort to try to redeem themselves and their tribes.

August 1764–In Virginia, Indians attack John Rhodes' Fort (known also as Rhodes' Fort). Reverend John Rhodes, his wife and 6 of their 13 children are massacred. This is reported to be the final Indian massacre in Page County. There is some conflict in the numbers. Some sources claim that Rhodes, his wife and 3 sons had been and yet another source claims that six of his 7 children are killed and that one son, Michael, escapes. Also, other settlers' forts established in Virginia at undetermined times, include Jost Hite's Fort (Also Josh Hite) and Keller's Fort

during the war

August 12 1764 (Sunday)–In Michigan, at Fort Detroit, the Indian, Little Chief again arrives at the settlement with information. He informs Mr. LaBute that Pontiac is continuing his “usual discourse & was as ill intentioned as ever.” According to Little Chief, Pontiac is telling the Indians that a French army is en route to the fort from Illinois.

August 14 1764 (Tuesday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, a Puttawattamy Indian arrives at the settlement. He informs Mr. Labute that he was sent to warn him about a new threat. He tells Labute that the Shawanees and the Delawares en route to the Miamee River to join with Pontiac. Also, Labute is also told by the little Chief of the Chibbaways that Ottawa chiefs have been threatened by Pontiac, who told the chiefs that “his Father was on his way March & as soon as he came he would have them all hang'd that tried to make up a Thing that he (Pontiac) had begun.”

August 26, 1764 (Sunday)–In Michigan, Colonel John Bradstreet, having crossed through Ohio, arrives in Detroit on this day. He is accompanied by a large force to bolster the strength of the fort. After his arrival, he consummates a treaty of peace with the Michigan tribes. . However, one of his envoy’s nearly gets killed in the Maumee region by Indians from the Ottawa and Maumee tribes where Pontiac had been encamped. In addition, Bradstreet installs a garrison at Mackinac. Nonetheless, Bradstreet does not move against the hub of the Indians still causing problems and he fails to take decisive action against the Indians who had refused to return their captives to Sandusky. His instructions to attack the Maumee villages are not executed. He returns to Sandusky during September. General Gage censures him “for the indulgent terms granted at Presque Isle and urging an attack upon the Indians of the Scioto valley.” Bradstreet remains in Sandusky for about one month before returning to Fort Duquesne. Before departing, he had written to Colonel Bouquet to inform him that he (Bradstreet) “found it impossible to stay longer in these parts, absolute necessity requiring him to turn off the other way.” The return trip is arduous due to the flotilla’s encounters with storms. **In Ohio**, a party under Captain Thomas Morris embarks from Cedar Point, the tip of a peninsula in north central Ohio that stretches eastward into Lake Erie and separates Sandusky Bay from Lake Erie. Morris moves toward the Illinois country to take possession of the territory in the name of King George III.. One of the men in his party is a Frenchman (M. Maissonville), who was to be executed; however, he speaks the Indian languages and for that reason, General Bradstreet had pardoned him to permit him to accompany Morris. Before the party departed, Bradstreet had stated to the Frenchman: “I give thee thy life; take care of this gentleman (Morris). Subsequently, during the beginning of Autumn, Pontiac encounters Morris’ party in the Miami Country.

August 27 1764 (Monday)–In Ohio, Captain Thomas Morris’ party, which is en route to the Illinois country arrives at the Swifts (Maumee Rapids) near Waterville, Ohio. An Ottawa chief sends a man to the village to get horses and shortly thereafter, Morris and his two Canadian companions receive horses and an escort, with the chief carrying English colors and leading the way to the village. Just as the party passes the Miami village, Morris observes many white flags flying, then suddenly, as described by Morris: “I heard a yell, and found myself surrounded by Pondiac's (Pontiac’s) army, consisting of six hundred savages, with tomahawks in their hands, who beat my horse, and endeavoured to separate me from my Indians, at the head of whom I had placed myself on our discovering the village. By their malicious smiles, it was easy for me to guess their intention of putting me to death.” Afterward, Morris is approached by St. Vincent, who is half-French and half-Indian. According to the clothes he is wearing, Morris initially believes he is a French officer. St. Vincent is from old France and he had served in the French

army as a drummer; however, he informs Morris that his war name is St. Vincent. Morris and St. Vincent seat themselves on a bearskin rug, while they are encircled by the Indians. Meanwhile Pontiac joins them and speaks to Morris through Godesroi (interpreter for Morris). Pontiac, based on erroneous information in a letter from the French at New Orleans) stating that “Ononteeo (French king) was not crushed as the English had reported, but had got upon his legs again.” Pontiac informs Morris that a French army had debarked in New Orleans and it would advance to drive out the English.

August 28 1764 (Tuesday)–In Ohio, Captain Thomas Morris’ party remains detained at the Indians’ village near the Maumee Rapids. Morris attends a grand council and speaks stating that the French had surrendered to the king of England. The news is scoffed at. The chief of the Miamis begins to speak very loudly and begins to laugh. Meanwhile Godesroi, Morris’ interpreter begins to whisper, telling Morris to stop speaking and he tells Morris that luckily, his remarks were “received with contempt and not anger.”

August 29 1764 (Wednesday)–In Ohio, Captain Thomas Morris is still detained at the Ottawa village near the Maumee Rapids. One of the Indians with Morris’ party, a chief of the Mohawks had stolen nearly all of Morris’ supplies on the previous night. The chief also sold two barrels of rum to the Ottawas embarks and departs, leaving the remainder of the party in the village. In the meantime, many of the warriors had become drunk. One of the drunken warriors, lunges at Morris to stab him with a knife; however, Godesroi slaps down the arm of the Indian and tosses him to the ground to save Morris’ life. Afterward, other Indians search for Morris to kill him; however, he conceals himself under a blanket and while wearing Indian shoes, he fords the river to hide in a field of Indian corn. Godesroi, St. Vincent and the other Canadian join him. While in the field, he is visited by two Kickapoo chiefs. Godesroi returns to the village and discovers that Pontiac is pleased that Morris had escaped. Meanwhile, another Indian, Attawang, visits Morris and two Miamis also meet with him. Later, during the night, Morris abandons the field and moves to Attawang’s cabin, where he discovers his servant hiding under a blanket to conceal himself from being killed by the warriors.

August 30 1764 (Thursday)–In Ohio, near the Maumee Rapids, the Miamis and the Kickapoos depart from the Ottawa village due to a shortage of provisions. One of the Indians, known as Little Chief speaks to Captain Thomas Morris’ interpreter, Godesroi and inform him that he will send one of his sons to accompany Morris.

September 7 1764 (Friday)–In Indiana, Captain Thomas Morris and his party arrive near Fort Miami (formerly Fort Miamis and Fort St. Philippe). Morris rows to the opposite side of the river, while the others in the party were greeted by Indians who intended to kill Morris. He encounters a man who speaks English and discovers that he had been among the five captives when the fort was seized. The remainder of the garrison was killed and it was thought that the five captives were also killed; however, this soldier had been spared because he was adopted as her son by an elderly squaw. Meanwhile, Captain Morris has another brush with death. He is tied up while at the village and threatened with torture and death. Nonetheless, Pacanne, the chief of the Miamis nation crosses the river on his horse and moves to Morris. While at his back, the chief places his hands on Morris’ neck. Morris anticipates instant death, but instead the chief unties Morris and states: “I give that man his life.” Afterward, Morris makes it to a canoe and crosses the river to reach Fort Miamis. Subsequently during the latter part of this month, Morris arrives at Detroit. **In Michigan** at Fort Detroit, the Indians (Miamies & Hurons) sign the Articles of Peace, which they had received from Colonel Bradstreet.

September 13 1764 (Thursday)–In Michigan at Fort Detroit, word arrives that the Delawares

and the Shawanies will not agree to peace. The Indians had held Mr. Pauli (former commander at Sandusky) and his party captive and they insist that they will defend themselves against the English.

September 17-November 28 1764—In Pennsylvania, Colonel Bouquet arrives at Fort Pitt from Carlisle. After picking up about 200 Virginians, his force totals about 600 men. Bouquet traces his steps from the previous year when he moved from Bushy Run to the post. Bouquet's column departs for the Indian territory during the early part of October (3rd) to construct a road straight through the wilderness of Ohio. Prior to departing from the fort, Bouquet speaks to his troops to rally them and instill confidence. He states "that he has confidence in their bravery" and he tells them that he does not "doubt but that this war would soon be ended, under God, to their own honor and the future safety of their country, provided the men were strictly obedient to orders and guarded against the surprises and sudden attacks of a treacherous enemy, who never dared to face British troops in an open field." Nonetheless, the troops had also seen an explicit example of his regard for loyalty. Two soldiers who were caught after deserting were executed. In conjunction, while en route to Fort Pitt, about 200 men had deserted. Bouquet also cancels the accompaniment of all women, except those absolutely necessary. He permits one woman per corps to handle the women and children who are rescued and two nurses to oversee the general hospital.

Meanwhile, the Indians are aware of Bouquet's abilities as an Indian fighter and of his great victory at Bushy Run. Attempts to lay ambush fail and within a short time they become eager to seek peace. While on the march, the column arrives at a village of the Tuscarora Indians, which is located near the ford of the Muskingum River. Once the Indians spot the approaching column, the entire village is abandoned. Bouquet calls for a council with the tribes, while he is encamped along the Muskingum River. Bouquet afterward meets with nearly every chief in the surrounding area. Those that attend include Guyasuta (also known as Kiashuta), a chief of the Senecas; Custaloga, a chief of the Delawares; Keisnachtha, a chief of the Shawanese, Turtle Heart and Beaver. Bouquet, on the first day of the talks, finally tires of their excuses, while they ask for peace. Bouquet informs them that they should return to his camp on the following day to receive his answer.

Bad weather interferes and the next council is postponed until 20 October. At that time, Bouquet states in part: ". If, it were possible that you could convince us that you sincerely repent of your past perfidy, and that we could depend on your good behavior for the future, you might yet hope for mercy and peace. If I find that you faithfully execute the following preliminary conditions, I will not treat you with the severity you deserve. I give you twelve days from this date to deliver into my hands at Waukatamake, all prisoners in your possession without any exception, Englishmen, Frenchmen, women, children, whether adopted in your tribes, married or living amongst you under any denomination and pretence whatsoever, together with all negroes. And you are to furnish the said prisoners with clothing, provisions and horses to carry them to Fort Pitt. When you have fully complied with these conditions, you shall then know on what terms you may obtain the peace you sue for."

The Indians promise to carry out the demands. The Delawares had already handed over 18 captives and they present Bouquet with a bundle of stick, numbering 83, signifying that they still hold 83 captives and they state that the remainder will be brought to the camp as soon as

possible. The Shawanese, however, fail to properly comply, which prompts Bouquet to have an explicit message delivered to them that informs them to act quickly. Afterward, Bouquet advances another 30 miles to the Forks of the Muskingum River to await the hostages; rather than have them brought to Waukatamake. Bouquet also detains the principal chiefs of each tribe to ensure the safety of the captives.

One of Bouquet's primary concerns remains that the Indians would renege and slay all of the captives. Soon after arriving at the Forks, messengers are dispatched to the various tribes and within a short while, several hundred captives arrive at the army's camp. Ninety Virginians (32 men, and the remainder are women and children) are among those people that are rescued. In addition, 116 Pennsylvanians are rescued and of these, 49 are men, with the remainder being women and children. In addition to the expected joy, there is also great jubilation, when some of the men in the army are reunited with family members. Despite the heart warming reunion, there is some disappointment. Many of the Shawanese braves are away on a hunting trip. Consequently, slightly less than 100 other captives do not arrive. Arrangements are made to have those captives taken under escort to Fort Pitt. Bouquet receive hostages to ensure the people arrive at the post.

Bouquet displays a congenial disposition and he handles the chiefs with a high element of respect, but he simultaneously blends sternness with his demeanor to make sure that his mildness is not mistaken for weakness. Bouquet fully understands the way of the Indians with regard, to them being agreeable to kindness as long as they realize that if necessary extreme force could be applied. After concluding his agenda, Bouquet meets again with the chiefs and informs them that he is satisfied with their actions and their conduct. Guyasutha, a Seneca chief, known for ravaging the frontier in western Pennsylvania is the first chief to speak. He states: "Brother, with this string of wampum I dispel the thick cloud that has hung so long over our heads, that the sunshine of peace may once more descend to warm and gladden. I wipe the tears from your eyes and condole with you on the loss of your brethren who have perished in this war. I gather their bones together and cover them deep in the earth, that the sight of them may no longer bring sorrow to your hearts, and I scatter dry leaves over the spot, that it may depart forever from memory. The path of peace, which once ran between your dwellings and mine, has of late been choked with thorns and briars, so that no one could pass that way, and we have both forgotten that such a path had ever been. I now clear away all such obstructions and make a broad, smooth road, so that you and I may freely visit each other as our fathers used to do. I kindle a great council fire whose smoke shall rise to heaven in view of all the nations while you and I sit together and smoke the peace pipe at its blaze."

Subsequent to listening to the other chiefs, Bouquet replies to all of the chiefs: "By your full compliance with the conditions which I imposed you have satisfied me of your sincerity and I now receive you as brethren. The King, my master, has commissioned me, not to make treaties but to fight his battles; and though I now offer you peace it is not in my power to settle its precise terms and conditions. For this I refer you to Sir William Johnson, his Majesty's agent and superintendent for Indian affairs, who will settle with you the articles of peace and determine everything in relation to trade. Two things, however, I shall insist on. And first you are to give hostages as security that you will preserve good faith and send without delay a deputation of your chiefs to Sir William Johnson. In the next place these chiefs are to be fully empowered to

treat in behalf of your nation; and you will bind yourselves to adhere strictly to everything they shall agree upon in your behalf.”

One of the chiefs, Nettowhatways, of the Turtle tribe, having failed to co-operate properly in the peace measures receives some unexpected news. Colonel Bouquet relieves him of his leadership and directs the tribe to elect a successor and bring him as the proper representative. Later, on 12 November, Bouquet meets again with some chiefs, including Bennevissico, Lavissimo, Nimwha, Red Hawk and others. Red Hawk goes further than merely mentioning burying the hatchet. He speaks to Colonel Bouquet, saying that as one of the younger brothers, “would take it (hatchet) out of the hands of their older white brothers and throw it up to God, that they might never see it again.” Afterward, Red Hawk, in an attempt to rekindle old friendships, shows Bouquet a copy of a treaty that had been signed by them and the English during 1701. Also, the promise to take the remaining captives to Fort Pitt during the following spring is kept. Nonetheless, some of the captives had been with the Indians so long that they found it difficult to return to their former life as Christians and some others return to life with the Indians. One woman, named Mary Jemison, who had married an Indian, declined returning. She took her children and went into hiding until Bouquet’s force departed. In what might be considered a poignant moment in the saga of the captives, there was also much sadness among the Indian families that had adopted them. A number of Indians follow the column as it heads back to Fort Pitt, to provide assistance to their former captives. (See also the listing Spring 1755).

The treaty known as the Bouquet Treaty is consummated, and most particularly, it is remembered in Ohio, although not an otherwise well known treaty. Camp is broken on 18 November and the column, now escorting several hundred former captives, including men, women and children, heads back to Fort Pitt and arrive there on 28 November. Subsequent to the treaty which terminates Pontiac’s War, Fort Pitt becomes useful only as an observation post from which to maintain a vigil on the Indians in the region. However, the post is also used to dispatch troops westward against hostile Indians.

In conjunction, there is a permanent reminder of Colonel Bouquet’s days at Fort Pitt. The ancient blockhouse that still stands at Fort Pitt was ordered to be constructed by Bouquet. Bouquet was unimpressed by its defenses, which he believed required a blockhouse, particularly during dry weather, when a band of Indians could cross a dry moat and come within a few yards of the post. The plaque specifies that the blockhouse was constructed by Colonel Bouquet during 1764. In conjunction, Colonel Henry Bouquet dies in Pensacola, Florida, on 2 September, 1765. He was buried in an unmarked grave and the location of his grave site remains unknown. Subsequent attempts to locate his grave site were unsuccessful.

In what might well be considered a grave injustice, subsequent to the end of the campaign, the Virginians who participated, discover that Virginia, which had benefitted greatly with the suppression of the Indian hostilities, refuses to pay the expenses of the Virginia troops. Fortunately for the troops, Colonel Bouquet persuades the Pennsylvania Assembly to pick up the cost. Colonel Bouquet is promoted by King George II to the rank of brigadier general during 1765. On 15 April, 1765, Bouquet sends a letter back to England in thanks of his promotion. Shortly thereafter, General Bouquet arrives in Philadelphia, where he has his last will and testament drawn. Later, he departs from Philadelphia en route to his new duty station, Pensacola, Florida. He embarks on the HMS William and arrives at his destination 36 days later on 23

August, 1765, as part of a 10-ship convoy, which is transporting troops to relieve other British troops at that post. General Bouquet, not acclimated to the torrid heat, falls victim to the fever. He dies from the illness on 2 September, 1765.

November 18 1764 (Sunday)–In Ohio, Colonel Bouquet, subsequent to bringing peace on the frontier and completing the campaign without engaging the Indians, departs from the territory and returns to Fort Pitt. See also, September 17–November 28 1764.

1765–In Michigan, the English establish Fort St. Clair in the vicinity of St. Clair, Michigan. In Pennsylvania, a large group of settlers, infuriated that the English have resumed trading with Indians at the conclusion of “Pontiac’s War,” expresses its displeasure. The settlers compel the English to abandon Fort Loudoun. In Tennessee, a party under Henry Scraggins, sent by the Henderson and Company of North Carolina, arrives in Tennessee. They establish a post in the vicinity of present-day Goodlettsville (Davidson County). The company deals in land, rather than furs.

March 23 1765 (Saturday)–In Pennsylvania, Lieutenant Alexander Fraser, who had accompanied George Croghan to Fort Pitt while on a mission to the Illinois country, departs alone this day. Fraser is accompanied by several other white men and about two Indians. He arrives at the western posts during the latter part of the following month. The Indians there appear to be destitute; however, still they are incited by the French. Fraser encounters hostility and the Indians refuse to listen to his words. He is placed in a prison and the Indians threaten to execute him; however, Pontiac intervenes and his life is spared. Meanwhile, Fraser does not hear from Croghan, who is expected at anytime. Consequently, Fraser decides to escape. He disguises himself and makes it to the Mississippi River and from there he reaches New Orleans. M. Maissonville, the Frenchman who had accompanied him later arrives at Fort Quiatanon from fort De Chartres to deliver a message to George Croghan. In the meantime, George Croghan, along with a small party of whites and a contingent of Shawnee Indians departs from Fort Pitt on 15 May. Later, on 8 June, a band of Kickapoo and Mascoutin Indians fire upon Croghan’s two boats when they arrive near the mouth of the Wabash River. Two of the men in the party and several Shawnee Indians are killed during the encounter. Afterward, the Indians claim that they are sorry and that they believed that they were attacking Cherokee Indians. Despite their apologies, the Indians relieve Croghan of all the supplies and afterward, Croghan and the others are taken to Vincennes, a town held by the French. Once there, Croghan is taken to Fort Quiatanon, slightly more than 210 miles north of Vincennes. Meanwhile anger against the Kickapoo intensifies for attacking the friendly Shawnee Indians intensifies due to the possibility of the Shawnee taking retaliatory action against the Illinois tribes. During early July, the various tribes arrive at Vincennes to visit with Croghan to convince him that they seek peace and during the visits, they offer to safely escort him through the Illinois territory. Also, George Croghan who served as a guide and interpreter during the conflict later becomes a colonel.

July 11 1765 (Thursday)–In Indiana, M. Maissonville, previously traveling with Lt’ Alexander Fraser, arrives at Fort Quiatanon where he delivers messages from St. Ange at Fort de Chartres (Illinois). St. Ange is requesting Croghan to repair to Illinois to oversee affairs there. A few days later Croghan, escorted by a large number of Indians departs from the post; however, after traveling a short distance, he encounters Pontiac. Afterward, Pontiac and Croghan return to Quiatanon, where they hold a council. Pontiac makes it clear that he favors a permanent peace. In addition, Pontiac informs Croghan that his warriors will halt their resistance against English troops that advance through the area. Following the council with the Kickapoo, Mascoutin and

Miami, his journey to Fort De Chartres becomes unnecessary. In conjunction, Croghan dispatches a message to Fort Pitt to inform the commandant of his success with Pontiac. Croghan returns to Detroit where he initiates conferences that convene between 17 August and 25 September. By the 25th, Croghan completes his mission when all of the tribes accept British sovereignty. In conjunction, Pontiac informs Croghan that he will journey to Oswego, New York to personally ratify the peace during the following spring. Pontiac arrives at Oswego as promised. Afterward, Pontiac is given a large amount of presents to take back with him when he departs for the Maumeem, where he spends the winter (1765-1766). Subsequently, during 1769, Pontiac is struck from behind (while inebriated) and assassinated by a Kaskaskia Indian on 20 April. At the time, Pontiac had been in St. Louis visiting with St. Ange de Bellerive, the commander at Fort Chartres, with whom Pontiac had become friends. Against the warnings of St. Ange de Bellerive, Pontiac insisted upon crossing the river to participate in a festival of the Illinois Indians at Cahokia. There were suspicions that the English had a hand in the assassination; however, no proof ever emerged. St. Ange travels across the river to retrieve Pontiac's remains. After taking him back to St. Louis, Pontiac is interred there.

February-August 1766--General Thomas Gage (commander-in-chief) and Sir William Johnson during discussions with George Croghan convince him to travel back to Illinois. He departs from Fort Pitt on 18 June. His party, which includes some Indians, George Morgan, a merchant, along with Lieutenant Thomas Hutchins and Captain Harry Gordon, transports about £ 3,000 worth of presents for the Indians. Although peace had been restored, still some tribes remain loyal to the French and problems remain in the Illinois country. Croghan arrives at Fort De Chartres on 20 August. At nearly the same time, the recently appointed commissary, Edward Coles arrives at the post from Detroit. Croghan, after conferring with the commandant, Colonel Reed, he calls for a conference to be held on 25 August. The chiefs and many of their prominent warriors from eight separate nations (about 22 tribes) arrive to meet with Croghan. In addition, representatives of the Six Nations and the Delawares had made the journey from Fort Pitt with Croghan. Croghan's ability to speak the languages of the Indians gives him additional persuasive powers. Within a few days, he is able to conclude a general peace. In addition, the Indians proclaim an alliance between the western and northern tribes and the English. However, despite the success, the French had persuaded some tribes to not attend the conference. Consequently, they remain outside the peace and the alliance.

Summer 1766--In Illinois, Major Farmer remains in command until the summer of 1766, when he is relieved by a new contingent of the 34th Regiment, under Lt. Colonel John Reed. His tenure as commandant remains quite volatile and his tactics are not highly rated. Reed begins to charge high fees for taking the oath of allegiance and also for marriage licenses. Reed manages to anger the French and the English. Nevertheless, when Reed is relieved by Lt. Colonel John Wilkins during 1768, his policies carry over to continue under Wilkins' term as commandant. During Wilkins' second year at Fort De Chartres, 1769, Pontiac is killed by another Indian, which ignites a civil war between tribes. Meanwhile, problems between the French and English continue unabated and the court system installed once the English assumed jurisdiction over Illinois favored the British.

Wilkins' is able to keep the Indians pacified and following the death of Pontiac, the inter-tribe conflict had caused the Indians to divert their attention away from the settlers. All the while, the Catholics in the region had been able to freely practice their faith; however the Jesuits had been absent since the French Royal decree of 1764, when the Jesuits were abolished. The decree took

effect in Illinois that same year (1764). In conjunction, Wilkins' is able to maintain good relations with the Catholics in the region. In conjunction, many of men in his garrison force are Catholics. Wilkins remains in command until he is accused by his officers of corruption, including misappropriation of funds and falsifying record. Wilkins is dismissed from the army during September 1772. Nonetheless, his successor does not arrive until spring of the following year.

At about that time (1773), Wilkins returns to England. Temporarily, Major Isaac Hamilton assumes command, but he is relieved within a few weeks by Captain Hugh Lord. Captain Lord establishes his headquarters at Fort Gage in Kaskaskia. In conjunction, Fort de Chartres, by this time had been ravaged by the Mississippi River and destroyed by order of General Gage. The Illinois country remains unstable. During 1774, about January, the garrison at Fort Gage is ordered to depart from the post. From that point; Illinois is essentially abandoned. A Frenchman, named Rocheblave acts as agent for the English government during the period 1776-1778; however his endeavors to retain the territory for England bears no fruit. England fails to send requested troops to Illinois. The Americans, at that time, seize the advantage during the Revolution. George Rogers Clark moves into Illinois with a force that conquers Illinois, along with the entire Northwest during 1778, to terminate England's domination there.

1833 — Congress would merge the Rangers and the 1st Regiment of Dragoons, initiating the rebirth of the "U.S. Cavalry!" Official birth-date of the Cavalry 12-12-1776.

June 15th 1834 — Colonel Henry Dodge, with 500 Dragoons, leaves Fort Gibson heading for the Arkansas Territory to search out and destroy the Comanche, Pawnee and other hostile Indian tribes who had gone out of reach of the U.S. Infantry.

1835 — A detachment of the U.S. 7th Infantry is dispatched from Fort Gibson with orders to proceed under the command of Captain Stuart and establish another Fort (Fort Coffee) which is to be located approximately 13 miles further up the River.

December 28th 1835 — The "Dade Massacre" Seminoles ambush 112 Soldiers as they march to reinforce Fort King, Florida. Two men manage to escape.

May 19 1836 — Approximately 100 Comanches raid the Texas settlement of Parker's Fort in Limestone County, Texas. John Parker is savagely mutilated with his genitals ripped out and scalped. Granny Parker is tied to the ground, lanced and raped. Total casualties — 5 dead, 5 women

and children are kidnapped. The two women captives, Elizabeth Kellogg and Rachael Plummer are the first known white women taken captive by Comanches. (Both are raped that night in full view of the three children.)

May 26 1837 — Representatives of the Apache Kiowa, and Tawakoni Tribes sign a Peace Treaty at Fort Gibson, Oklahoma. This is the first treaty adopted between the U.S. and these Indians.

March 9th 1840 — Council House Fight — "Mook War — Ruh" and 12 other Comanche War Chiefs with their families arrive in San Antonio for a peace parley. They return two captives including one brutalized woman, Matilda Lockheart (her nose burnt to the bone "both nostrils wide open and denuded of flesh" and she has been sexually abused). The Texans demand release of all

other captives, holding the Chiefs. A fight starts as the Indians attempt to escape. Sixty five Indians are killed during the skirmish.

March 26 1840 — One woman held captive by the Comanches, Mrs. Webster, steals a horse, escaping from their village with one of her children. She arrives at San Antonio safely. Booker Webster, her son, and one 5 year old child survive. All other white captives held by the Comanches are "skinned, sliced and horribly mutilated, finally being burned to death" (described by Booker Webster).

August 4 1840 — Comanches under "Buffalo Hump" bypass San Antonio with their war party of over 1,000 braves. Texas Ranger Ben McCulloch would track their trail, sending riders in all directions to raise a Militia force which pursues the Indians for their hostile actions.

August 6th 1840 — The Comanches encircle the town of Victoria, Texas and massacre several people on the outskirts; however, the town is able to blockade the streets, preventing total disaster. The Comanches, fearing house-to-house fighting, retreat, taking many of the town's horses and mules with them.

August 7 1840 — Buffalo Hump's warriors move swiftly, leaving death and destruction as they raid along Peach Creek, towards the Gulf of Mexico.

August 8 1840 — The Comanches raid Linville, Texas (vicinity of San Antonio). The savages take Daniel Boone's granddaughter captive, killing her baby and throwing her over a horse for their pleasure. Most of the other settlers escape to safety in boats. The Indians loot and burn the town.

August 8th 1840 — Captain McCullough and his Texas Rangers arrive as Linville is being burned. After picking up additional men, his force exceeds a hundred. He pushes on towards the coast, pursuing Buffalo Hump.

August 10th-12th 1840 — Texans from all over are converging on Plum Creek, knowing Buffalo Hump's force must cross at that point. Tonkawa Chief Placido and 14 of his warriors join the Texans acting as scouts. The Texans devastate the Comanches, pursuing them for approximately 15 miles towards Austin. As the Comanches flee, they tie their captives to trees, shooting them with arrows.

October 1840 — Texans under the command of Colonel John M. Moore, on the trail of the Comanches since the battle of Plum Creek, finally discover a Comanche camp of approximately 100 warriors, near the Red Fork of the Colorado, and seek revenge for the Linville Massacre. The Texans attack, killing Indians at will. The Indians lose approximately 130, including women and children. The Texans suffer 1 fatality.

Early 1846 — Colonel Stephen W. Kearny had previously taken an expedition into Nebraska to locate a strategic area for a Fort to assist settlers as they traveled westward. His choice of locations had been in the vicinity of the Missouri River at the mouth of Table Creek. The troops depart Fort Leavenworth during early 1846 and begin construction but the number of settlers that pass in the vicinity of the Fort is sparse, causing a Battalion of troops to winter there for the winter 1847-48, and then the troops move on to the Platte River and re-establish a Fort along the Oregon Trail. The new more adaptable Fort will also be named Fort Kearny.

November 1846 — Major William Gilpin, with approximately 180 men, in addition to 60 Mexicans and Pueblo Indians, crosses the Cordilleras mountains to join with Doniphan to engage the Navajo Indians.

January 19 1847 — **BENT MASSACRE** — Pueblo Indians under Chief Tomasito massacre some settlers and Governor Bent of the New Mexican Territory. Bent is shot with a pistol, scattering his

head, after being wounded three times by arrows. The Indians also scalp him.

February 3 1847 — The U.S. Army, accompanied by 6 pounder cannons, successfully attack the Pueblo de Taos and its Garrison of Pueblo Indians. At battle's end, Americans lose 15 dead, 47 wounded. Indians suffer 150 dead and heavy amounts of wounded. This battle ends the Pueblo insurrection and avenges the Bent Massacre.

1849 — The San Antonio-El Paso Road is opened to travelers and immigrants. During 1853, the Federal Government awards a Mail contract to George H. Giddings. His company subsequently uses this route to transport the U.S. Mail. During 1857, the contract is awarded to James Birch who will be remembered for the "Jackass Mail" To continue the story of the U.S. Mail, the "Butterfield Overland Mail" initiates mail service during 1859 carrying between St. Louis and San Francisco.

June 2 1849 — Fort Kearny, Nebraska is a solid edifice along the Oregon Trail but the Garrison is not sufficiently supplied to lend the proper amount of assistance to the wagons as they pass heading for California and points west. By this date, according to the records of a Lieutenant Woodbury, 4,400 wagons have passed the new Fort, not including those that passed on the other side of the Platte River.

October 22nd 1854 — The U.S. Army establishes a new military post which is to assist with the protection of the Sante Fe Trail. Life for the Indians in the area has changed rapidly since the free flow of settlers heading West. Fort Lamed becomes the northern anchor of a chain of Forts defending the southwestern frontier against hostile Indians. Fort Lamed is responsible for the Kansas section of the Santa Fe Trail.

March 1854 — Apaches ambush approximately 60 troopers under Lt. Davidson, on the northern New Mexico plains. Fewer than 20 men survive the ordeal.

June 1854 — General John Garland, commander of troops in New Mexico, initiates two campaigns against the Apaches.

October 1854 — U.S. Major General Persifor F. Smith selects a location in the Davis Mountains in Western Texas, for the location of a new Fort to be constructed for the defense of the area. The Fort is named in honor of Jefferson Davis (Secretary of War and later President of the Confederacy).

Six companies of the U.S. 8th Infantry move west to establish and construct the new Fort which is located in the vicinity of Limpia Creek in a Box Canyon. In other activity, American troops chase down Apaches who have attacked a wagon train on the El Paso-San Antonio trail, killing 6 warriors and 1 chief.

January 1855 — U.S. Cavalry under the command of Captain Thorn departs Fort Thorn on the Rio Grande and meets up with Captain Henry Stanton, to search and destroy Apaches along the Penasco River, 200 miles to the east. The Americans lose Captain Stanton and two troopers. The Apaches lose approximately 15 warriors dead.

March 1855 — The First & Second U.S. Cavalry Regiments are authorized by Congress through the efforts of Jefferson Davis. The 2nd Cavalry is known as "Jeff Davis' Own" This Regiment is

June 1855 — Mescalero Apaches sign a treaty ending their war with the United States. They have been badly defeated by Garland's Campaign.

July 1855 — The Gila Apaches also seek to sign a peace treaty, agreeing to become peaceful farmers.

November 1856 — Major Kendrick is sent to find Apaches raiding the herds of friendly Navajo

Indians. One of the men with him is Henry Linn Dodge, Navajo agent. Dodge is ambushed and killed by the Apaches. Colonel Miles and a contingent of 400 Soldiers are dispatched to capture the Apaches who murdered Dodge. June 23rd 1857 — U.S. troops are withdrawn from Fort Gibson, Oklahoma. In accordance with agreements from the treaty with the Cherokee nation, the post will be given to the Cherokees on September 9, 1857. The present-day town of Keetoowah, Oklahoma is established on the site.

July 20 1857 — A 20 man detachment from the 2nd Cavalry under Lt. John Hood is ambushed near Devil's River, Texas. A Comanche force of over 100 braves attack. The detachment withstands the assault, killing 19 of the braves and wounding many more. The Cavalry suffers 2 dead, and 5 wounded, including Lt. Hood.

July 21 1857 — The 8th Cavalry from Fort Hudson arrives to reinforce Lt. Hood with supplies.

April 22 1858 — Rip Ford, a scout, leaves Camp Runnels, Texas, with a force of over 100 Texas Rangers and approximately 100 Indian scouts, heading towards Oklahoma to search out and destroy Indians. The force encounters a massive Comanche village on May 11th. The Americans, after initially being attacked, countercharge, dispersing the unorganized Comanches. The Indians lose approximately one third of their warriors. May 6th 1858 — Colonel E. J. Steptoe and his command of 157th Infantry and Dragoons are attacked by over 1,200 Indians, at Fort Walla Walla, Washington Territory. The command suffers heavy losses; however, they hold the Indians off. The Army has less than three rounds of ammunition per man when the Indians withdraw.

September 1858 — Colonel George Wright's troops cross the Snake and Pease Rivers to revenge the defeat of Colonel Steptoe. His troops handily defeat the Indians at "Four Lakes." At day's end, not one American casualty is suffered. The Indians lose approximately 500 men.

October 1 1858 — The U.S. 2nd Cavalry marches almost 100 miles in 37 hours to surprise a Comanche war camp north of the Red River, at Rush Springs, Oklahoma Territory. The Indians are under Chief Buffalo Hump. Fifty-six Indians are killed, but the balance, almost 500 Indians, escape. U.S. Major Van Dorn (later a Confederate General) commands the Soldiers. Van Dorn defeats the Indians in another battle at Crooked Creek during 1859.

1860 — The Apaches allow the Butterfield stagecoach line (Butterfield) to pass safely through their Territory to keep Soldiers from coming in force.

October 1860 — The Cavalry is dispatched from Fort Buchanan to recapture a young boy kidnapped by Apaches. (He is the adopted son of a settler, John Ward). The troops return without finding the boy.

December 17th 1860 — Texas Ranger Sul Ross with 60 Rangers and about 70 Settlers and Scouts, pursue Comanche Chief Nawkohnee. The Rangers are joined by a detachment of the 2nd Cavalry, consisting of 20 men. The village is crushed by the Americans; however, the Chief and his braves are hunting. Only women and children are in the camp (Pease River, Quanah, Texas).

December 17th 1860 — During the Cavalry raid on Nawkohnee's camp, a white woman and child are discovered. The woman turns out to be Cynthia Ann Parker, one of the children captured during the raid on Parker's Fort in 1836. She speaks no English and has become the wife of Nawkohnee.

February 4 1861 — Second Lieutenant George Nicholas Bascom and a command of 50 Troopers go to the stagecoach post at Apache Pass, demanding that Cochise return Felix Ward or Cochise will face prison at Fort Buchanan. Cochise escapes but 6 warriors are taken prisoner. The Indians are hanged. Fighting continues for several weeks between the Cavalry and the Apaches until

reinforcements including Infantry and Dragoons arrive. The Apaches will continue to fight for the next 12 years.

February 13-14 1861 — Reinforcements from Fort Buchanan and additional troops from Fort Breckenridge arrive and finally break the siege at Apache Pass. The Chiricahua Apaches under Cochise withdraw to the high country, choosing not to fight when the additional troops arrive. The siege on Lt. George Bascum's 60 man command has been lifted. Assistant Surgeon Bernard Irwin and 14 additional men are part of the rescue team. These men start their 100 mile march on mules, but then recapture horses held by Indians and participate in breaking the siege.

February 19 1861 — Captain Irwin, after locating the bodies of the six captives held by Cochise and seeing them being devoured by vultures, immediately orders the hanging of the six Apache prisoners being held.

March-April 1861 — Three of the six Apaches hanged on the return march to Fort Buchanan are close relatives of Cochise. Approximately 150 white men are killed trying to pass the Overland Trail, probably in retaliation for the hanging of the Apaches.

August 1861 — By this time, the Union troops have abandoned Fort Davis and it is Garrisoned by Confederates. Apache Chief Nicholas decides to steal cattle and horses from the new residents of the Fort and he is pursued by a detachment of 13 men, led by Lieutenant Reuben E. Mays. The Apaches, numerically superior, stop running on the 12th and ambush the Confederates who unsuspectingly ride into the canyon which has nearly 100 warriors deployed on both sides. The encounter is deadly and only one man, their Mexican guide, is able to escape death. The Confederates abandon Fort Davis during spring, 1862 after their unsuccessful campaign to win the Southwest and no troops occupy Fort Davis until it is regarrisoned by U.S. troops during 1867.

September 27th 1861 — Mangus Coloradas, Apache Chief and father-in-law of Cochise, attacks the town of Pinos Altos. The town is heavily fortified by Arizona Guards with breech rifles who repel the attack.

September 28 1861 — A wagon train is attacked by Mangus Coloradas and his Braves as it leaves Pinos Altos. Once again, the Arizona Guards drive them away, saving the train from disaster.

November 1861 — Chief Opothleyohola leads 4,000 Creeks towards Union, Kansas and is attacked by Indians allied with Confederates and Texas Cavalry along the way. Seven hundred Indians are killed.

July 4 1862 — Union Cavalry assisted by an artillery outfit armed with howitzers, under the command of Captain Thomas Roberts, depart Tucson, acting as an advance guard, and begin to move through Apache Pass en route to Sante Fe. They are followed by the main guard under Captain John C. Cremony.

July 14 1862 — Apaches ambush a group of 14 miners approaching Apache pass from the east, killing all. While the miners at the other end of the pass are being ambushed, the Apaches watch the advance guard under Roberts begin to climb Apache Pass from the opposite end.

July 15 1862 — **BATTLE OF APACHE PASS** Captain Roberts' troops are ambushed by Apaches. Artillery drives the Indians away, allowing the troops to reach water. Men dispatched to warn the main guard are all wounded. One trooper, John Teal, reported dead, actually saves the day. After his horse is shot from under him, he manages to stay alive and wound Mangus Coloradas. Teal, reluctant to leave his saddle for the Apaches, walks 8 miles, saddle over his shoulder, to reach Cremony's camp. American losses after passing through Apache Pass — 2 dead, several wounded. The Apaches suffer 63 dead. The Apaches have never before seen the 8

pounders, which blasted them. The Apaches call the cannon "Shooting Wagons!" Within a month, Fort Bowie is completed and insures safe passage through Apache Pass.

August 1862 — General Carleton builds Fort Bowie at the approach to Apache Pass. The Fort is built with no opposition because the Apaches have fled to Mexico, waiting for Mangus Coloradas' wounds to heal.

August 17th 1862 — Four Santee Sioux Indians massacre three men and two women on a farm near their reservation in southwest Minnesota. The Indians appear on the pretense of a friendly target shoot but after the settlers' guns are emptied, the Indians open fire to kill.

August 1862 — Several hundred settlers are massacred throughout Minnesota by Santee Sioux who take to the warpath, taking scalps and in some cases, bashing in the heads of children. Some settlers manage to escape the Indian massacre and arrive at Fort Ridgely, Minnesota. Captain March takes a detachment of 48 men to search for the Sioux. One half of this detachment is wiped out by the Sioux.

August 22nd 1862 — Fort Ridgely, Minnesota, Garrisoned by a mere 180 Soldiers and armed Civilians, withstands a large-scale Indian attack by Sioux under Little Crow. Artillery Sgts. Whipple and McGee, firing at point blank range, save the fort from capture. While buildings burn and women scream, pleading to be shot rather than be taken by the Indians, Lt. Timothy Sheehan rallies the troops for a last stand, positioning the guns for a final salvo. The cannon fire sends the Sioux off in panic. The Indians retreat, the Fort is saved.

August 23 1862 — A large party of Santee Sioux now attack New Ulm, Minnesota. The defenders are able to drive them off.

September 18 1862 — Colonel Henry Sibley moves out to attack Sioux under Little Crow at the Yellow Medicine River. Advance scouts have been ambushed but Sibley's artillery hold off the major Sioux attack, causing them to retreat.

September 26 1862 — The Sioux turn over 269 prisoners, mostly women and children, to Colonel Sibley. Sibley moves on, capturing Indians until the prisons at Fort Snelling and Fort Mankato are filled to capacity.

October 1862 — Colonel Kit Carson on the way to Fort Stanton receives orders from General Carleton. 'ALL INDIAN MEN OF THAT TRIBE [Mescalero Apaches] ARE TO BE KILLED WHENEVER AND WHEREVER YOU FIND THEM:' Carson expresses shock, but goes on towards Fort Stanton to carry out his orders.

October 1862 — Carson's troops who are dispatched from Fort Stanton find only deserted Indian camps. However, another troop under James Graydon find a tribe under Chief Manuelito. The Apaches state that they are on their way to Sante Fe, to "beg for peace:' Graydon's troops commence firing, killing Manuelito and 10 other warriors, plus women. Others manage to escape. Carson sends his feelings of being upset, to General Carleton, who responds: "IF YOU ARE SATISFIED THAT GRAYDON'S ATTACK ON MANUELITO WAS NOT FAIR AND OPEN, SEE THAT ALL HORSES AND MULES ARE RETURNED TO THE SURVIVORS:'

November 1862 — Colonel Kit Carson escorts Chief Cadette to Sante Fe in search of peace but he receives an ultimatum from General Carleton: "SURRENDER AND GO TO THE RESERVATIONS ON THE PECOS OR BE KILLED!" Most of the tribe comply but about 100 braves flee West to join the Gila Apaches.

December 28 1862 — Thirty-nine Sioux, convicted of brutal crimes against the settlers in Minnesota, are put to the gallows.

January 17 1863 — Apache Chiefs Mangus Coloradas and Geronimo, along with several warriors expecting to talk peace under the flag of truce with Soldiers at Pinos Altos, are taken prisoner. Mangus is shot during the night. Brigadier General Joseph West has instructed two sentries "MEN, THAT OLD MURDERER HAS GOT AWAY FROM EVERY SOLDIER COMMAND AND HAS LEFT A TRAIL OF BLOOD 500 MILES ON THE OLD STAGELINE. I WANT HIM DEAD TOMORROW MORNING. DO YOU UNDERSTAND? I WANT HIM DEAD:'

January 17 1863 — The 1st U.S. Cavalry engages the Indians at the Lava Beds, California. Major John Green receives the Medal of Honor for his courageous actions leading his men over the lava, against the concealed Indians.

January 27 1863 — Colonel Patrick Edward Connor, 3rd California Infantry, attacks the Shoshones under Chief Bear Hunter at the Battle of Bear River, in the Utah Territory. Colonel Connor becomes a General because of this great victory. The Army suffers 20 dead and 46 wounded. The Indians have over 200 dead. It becomes safe for settlers to travel through the Utah Territory by fall, 1863.

March 1863 —Apaches seeking revenge for Mangus' death begin attacking settlements while Cavalry is destroying Apache villages and their stock.

December 1863 —The Governor of the Arizona Territory, John N. Goodwin, and his military escort enroute to Fort Whipple encounter friendly Apaches. The troops, assuming all Apaches hostile, open fire, killing approximately 20 warriors. This prevents any further treaties from being signed and Arizona becomes open Territory for raiding Apaches.

October 13 1864 — Little Buffalo and a force of over 700 warriors cross the Brazos approximately 10 miles outside Fort Belknap, Texas. The Comanches mutilate one man and a boy, raid the Fitzpatrick Ranch, killing one woman by stripping her naked and mutilating her body, then take the other women and children captive.

October 13 1864 — Thornton Hamby, a Confederate Soldier, assisted by women loading his pistols, holds off an attack by Little Buffalo on the Bragg Ranch. Hamby kills Little Buffalo and the Comanches withdraw.

November 29 1864 — A promise of peace given to the Indians by Major E. W. Wynkoop is broken, and more than 600 Colorado State Militiamen under the command of Colonel J. M. Chivington attack the reservation in the vicinity of Fort Lyon, Colorado, devastating the tribe, mostly comprising women and children. Chief White Antelope is killed, but Chief Black Kettle escapes. Chief Black Kettle raises both a white flag and the American Flag, but the Soldiers fire relentlessly.

May 12 1865 — A contingent of the 1st Nebraska Veteran Cavalry repel an Indian attack at Gilman's Ranch, Nebraska. Pvt. Francis Lohnes receives the Medal of Honor for gallantry during this action.

May 19 1866 — Colonel Henry B. Carrington's troops leave Fort Kearny, Nebraska, guided by Jim Bridger the Indian scout. They reach Fort Laramie on June 16th, with intentions of rebuilding Fort Connor on the Bozeman Trail, plus building two additional Forts about 100 miles apart. (Fort Connor is renamed Fort Reno).

July 1866 —George Armstrong Custer, now finished with the war, spends time as Commanding Officer in Texas and returns to civilian life, receives a commission as Lieutenant Colonel in the newly formed 7th Cavalry which will be deployed against the Indians. Custer joins the Regiment during 1867 at Fort Riley, Kansas and the legend begins anew. The U.S. is pushing West. The

rails are stretching through Indian Territory and the Army is going to have to protect the settlers and the trains. There is no doubt that major confrontations are coming, especially after the humiliating defeat at Fort Kearny with the massacre of Fetterman's command, during December of 1866.

July 15 1866 — Colonel Carrington's men begin building Fort Kearny. Indians attack logging parties nine times between July 14th and July 29th.

August 1866 — Two men, Gilchrist and Johnson, are captured by the Indians near Fort Kearny, and tortured to death by a slow fire. Their skulls and parts of their skeletons are recovered a week later.

October 31 1866 —Fort Kearny is complete. A Stars and Stripes holiday is celebrated and the troops watch the First Garrison Flag fly over the Fort.

December 6 1866 — Lt. Bingham and Sgt. Bowers are killed during an engagement with Indians near Ft. Kearny. Lt. Grummond escapes, thanks to the speed of his horse, making it safely back to the Fort.

December 21 1866 — The Sioux attack a lumber train, commanded by Captain Brown, outside of Fort Kearny. Captain Fetterman previously boasted, "GIVE ME EIGHTY MEN AND I'LL RIDE THROUGH THE ENTIRE SIOUX NATION". A relief force of 81 men led by Captain Fetterman would be sent to relieve the beleaguered train, with direct orders not to move any further.

Additional troops led by Captain Ten Eyck arrive to reinforce Captain Fetterman's patrol, only to find 40 naked soldiers who had been killed and scalped by a Sioux war party that exceeded 2,000 men. Captain Fetterman and Brown both have bullet holes in the head. Fetterman advances beyond Lodge Trail Ridge, northwest of the post. Only two civilians among the entire command have automatic weapons (Springfield Muzzle Loaders).

December 22 1866 — Colonel Carrington and 80 men search for the remainder of Fetterman's command and find 32 additional bodies in the same vicinity. All are likewise naked and scalped. In a battle that lasts less than half an hour, Fort Kearny loses 25 percent of its troops because one Officer, Fetterman, had disobeyed orders. The relief force under Carrington now returns to Fort Kearny in hopes the lightly-defended Garrison was able to hold. A white light glowing atop the Fort lets the returning troops know the Fort remains secure.

December 22-23 1866 — A Frontiersman, John "Portugee" Phillips, begins a 235 mile journey through Indian country, hoping to arrive at Fort Laramie to get reinforcements for Fort Kearny. He arrives on Christmas Eve and as he enters the gates of the Fort, his horse falls down dead. This gallant ride is accomplished by a civilian volunteer because no soldier would do it. This infamous defeat convinces the Army of the need for repeater rifles. General Sherman gets them the new rifles which arrive in the Spring to act as an equalizer for the army.

January 3 1867 —In an official letter from Colonel Carrington to the Assistant Adjutant General, Omaha, Nebraska: "THE GREAT REAL FACT IS THAT THESE INDIANS TAKE ALIVE WHEN POSSIBLE AND SLOWLY TORTURE' " IT IS THE OPINION OF DR. S.M. HORTON THAT NOT MORE THAN SIX WERE KILLED BY BALLS. THE WHOLE ARROWS — HUNDREDS OF WHICH WERE REMOVED FROM NAKED BODIES, WERE ALL USED AFTER REMOVAL OF CLOTHING:' This defeat at Fort Kearny, to which Carrington refers, has been remembered as "FETTERMAN'S FOLLY:'

February 1867 —Sgt. George Grant, Company E, 18th U.S. Infantry, during the month of February, is used to dispatch important messages between the command at Fort Phil Kearny and Fort C.F. Smith

in the Dakota Territory. This dangerous assignment has him battling severe weather, including blizzards and rain, in addition to continual attacks by hostile Indians. His valor and bravery during this most important assignment earn him the Medal of Honor.

March 1 1867 —Nebraska is admitted to the Union as the 37th State.

March 22 1867 —American troops depart Fort Kansas, heading for the Plains to confront Cheyennes in Kansas. The command includes infantry and artillery. The 7th Cavalry participates in this expedition. The expeditionary force arrives at Fort Lamed, Kansas during April. General Hancock orders Edward Wynkoop to direct the Cheyenne leaders to come to the Fort for a parley. Afterwards, the Indians are ordered to come to the Fort with the entire tribe but complications set in and the Indians do not arrive as expected. This prompts Hancock to set out after the Cheyenne.

April 15-May 2 1867 — The Army under Hancock moves towards the Cheyenne camp at Pawnee Fork. An altercation is imminent but the Cheyenne under Roman Nose withdraw to their camp and are shortly surrounded by the 7th Cavalry. During the night, the Indians evacuate the camp to the embarrassment of Hancock's command. Orders are given to give chase but the end result is fruitless. The Indians scatter and disappear on the plains. As the Army pursues the Indians, the Indians strike along the Smoky Hill Line. The 7th Cavalry returns to Fort Hays during the beginning of May without capturing any Indians. The village at Pawnee Fork has been burned by the Army because the Cheyenne have fled. General Hancock returns to Lamed with the Infantry. Hancock's expedition ends without success. He eventually meets Custer at Fort Hays and shortly thereafter returns to Fort Leavenworth. The Indians are on the warpath and Custer is stranded at Fort Hays until his troop is ready to initiate the pursuit.

June 1867 — Custer departs Fort Hays searching for hostiles. The 7th encounters some braves but no heavy fighting occurs and the troop arrives at Fort McPherson on June 10th. The command remains until the 18th when they depart, upon orders issued by General Sherman, who conferred with Custer on the 16th and directs him to seek out the Indians and kill them.

June 24th, 1867 — A band of Pawnee Indians attack Custer's encampment at the Republican River. Custer's pickets are on the alert and quickly respond. The entire troop is up and firing in an instant. The Oglalas, led by Pawnee Killer are thwarted. Later in the day, another band of Indians appears within range of the 7th Cavalry. Custer dispatches 50 troopers, led by Captain Louis Hamilton to pursue but the Indians are setting an ambush. The Cavalry breaks off in two groups and the detachment led by Hamilton hits heavy opposition, but Army firepower allows them to fight their way out.

June 1867 — The troops at Fort Phil Kearny receive new "breech-loader" Springfield 50 calibre rifles. They are the first troops in Indian country to receive them.

June 29 1867 — The U.S. 9th Cavalry, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Wesley Merritt advances along Limpia Creek in Texas to re-establish Fort Davis. The 9th Cavalry is a newly organized Colored Regiment. Fort Davis will later be Garrisoned by 12 companies of combined Infantry and Cavalry. These Colored troops are called "Buffalo Soldiers" by the Indians. 2nd Lieutenant Henry Ossian Flipper, the first black graduate of West Point, is stationed at Fort Davis and during 1881 is accused of embezzling government funds. Flipper is found innocent of that charge but guilty of conduct unbecoming an officer, and dismissed from the army. During 1976, the U.S. Army agrees to review the court transcripts and clears his name, granting Lt. Flipper an honorable discharge.

July 7th 1867 — Custer departs his position on the Republican River and heads for Fort Wallace. Several men desert the command and Custer, concerned about discipline and survival of the

command, orders the men pursued with orders to kill them. Three men are captured and shot. Custer is aware that a small detachment led by Lieutenant Lyman Kidder has been dispatched by Sherman to locate Custer's command and deliver orders directing Custer to Fort Wallace. Custer rushes towards Fort Wallace and searches for the Kidder detachment. Four days later, on the 11th, the detachment is located. Unfortunately, the men had been massacred by the hostiles and the ten bodies had been horrendously mutilated.

July 12, 1867 —Custer's command reaches Fort Wallace, Kansas. The horses are tired and there has still been little contact with the hostiles. The Indians on the other hand have been raiding all over the Territory leaving, wrecked telegraph lines and hundreds of dead whites in their wake. The detachment of Lt. Kidder has killed two braves before they are annihilated and they are to date, the only Indians known to have been killed by the Army since the beginning of the campaign by Hancock earlier in the year. Custer cancels the campaign and begins to move his command towards Fort Harker, Kansas to resupply the command.

The Indians still hold the upper hand against the Army on the Plains. The Forts are scattered along the Plains but their numbers are insufficient to protect such a wide area. The Indians, although great in numbers, are not armed with enough weapons to match the Army's firepower at the Forts so they concentrate on quick hit and run raids and ambushes of supply trains. The trains "Iron Horses" are penetrating deeper into the Plains causing more difficulty for the Indians who now have more competition going after the buffalo. (July 1867)

August 2 1867 — Approximately 40 Soldiers and Civilians are surrounded and attacked by a force of over 1,500 Sioux warriors near Fort Phil Kearny, Wyoming. The new breech-loaded rifles allow the Soldiers to beat off the attack known as the "WAGONBOX FIGHT" As the Sioux approach, Sgt. Samuel Gibson and two other soldiers leave their post without orders, with Gibson explaining the reason for leaving the post to their captain. The captain's response: "YOU HAVE DONE NOBLY MY BOY!" "MEN FIND A PLACE IN THE WAGONBOXES, YOU WILL HAVE TO FIGHT FOR YOUR LIVES TODAY!" Captain Powell responds to the savage charge, "MEN HERE THEY COME! TAKE YOUR PLACES AND SHOOT TO KILL!" These 40 defenders turn back the attackers and force them to withdraw. Sgt. Gibson, after the battle states: "THANKS TO GOD AND LIEUTENANT GENERAL SHERMAN, WE WERE ARMED WITH THE NEW WEAPON!" Lt. Jenness and Troopers Doyle and Haggerty are killed at the battle. Eleven hundred Indians are killed or wounded. The Americans under Powell lose 3 killed and two wounded. In other activity, Indians also attack a hay detail in the vicinity of Fort Smith. Lieutenant Sigismund Sternberg with his command of 19 troopers and 6 civilians hold off the Indians. The Indians inflict 3 killed and 3 wounded against the Americans.

August 3 1867 —The discipline of Powell's command saves their lives at the Wagon Box Fight on the previous day. The Indians, under Crazy Horse, had attempted to trick Powell into a trap, such as that used against Fetterman but the plan was unsuccessful and the rapid fire weaponry proves too much for the Sioux. This is the last major assault against Fort Kearny on the Bozeman Trail. Crazy Horse concentrates on smaller raids.

March 1868 —The U.S. decision to abandon Forts Kearny, Reno and Smith is made by President Grant after consultation with Sherman. During the following month, a treaty will be signed at Fort Laramie.

March 1868 —Outlaws attack a powder train, heading from Fort Harker to Fort Dodge, Kansas, in the vicinity of Plum Creek, Kansas. Sgt. James Fegan, 3rd U.S. Infantry, singlehandedly repels the attack, wounding two of the bandits and chasing off the rest. The train arrives safely at Fort Dodge.

April 1868 —The Treaty of Laramie is signed guaranteeing about one half of South Dakota to the Sioux as a reservation. The Black Hills were a part of this area and considered sacred ground to the Indians. Fort Laramie, previously a fur trading outpost in Wyoming, was purchased by the U.S. Government during 1849 to be used as an army post to protect the Oregon Trail. Subsequently during the mid-1870's, the fort sees extensive service against the Sioux and Cheyenne.

May 1868 —The Indians on the plains still control most of the terrain. The Army has not been able to contain the many raids that have been sprung all across Kansas. General Sherman is becoming distressed at the situation and as summer rolls along, decisions will unfold to reinitiate campaigns against the Plains Indians.

May 30 1868 —Pvt. Edgar R. Aston, 8th U.S. Cavalry and two additional men, through their perilous movements, secure a safe passageway from the valley in San Carlos, Arizona for an immobilized Infantry column. Their mission goes through hostile Apache terrain.

July 1868 —The U.S. Army begins to dismantle its Garrisons that stretch along the Montana Road.

August 1868 — Fort Phil Kearny is abandoned by the Army after reaching an agreement with Chief Red Cloud of the Sioux nation.

August 1868 —General Sheridan directs Major George Forsyth to recruit 50 frontiersmen from the garrisons of Forts Hays and Harker in Kansas. These specialized troops will be used against Chief Roman Nose.

September-October 1868 —The U.S. Cavalry would initiate campaigns against Indians in Kansas and Colorado. The intent is to track down the Cheyenne warriors under Chief Roman Nose. General Sheridan dispatches Colonel George Alexander Forsyth and approximately 50 men from Fort Hays, Kansas, for the mission. This campaign ends in October, when reinforcements are rushed to the cavalry's aid at Beecher's Island on the 27th.

September 2nd 1868 —A detachment of four men would be attacked by a hostile force of approximately 50 Indians in the vicinity of Fort Dodge, Kansas. Corporal Leander, 3rd U.S. Infantry, comes to their aid and the detachment holds out until reinforcements arrive to drive the attackers away.

September 24th, 1868 —A telegram is received by General Custer at his present home in Michigan where he and his wife have been staying since he was suspended from duty for allegations that he had deserted his position at Fort Wallace and had deserters shot. Custer was suspended for one year on October 10th, 1867 but his main accuser had not been present at the court martial. The dismal situation of the army on the plains prompts the telegram from Generals Sheridan, Sully and Sherman to report for duty and assume command of the 7th Cavalry. Custer hardly places the telegram down before he is preparing to jump on the next train heading to Fort Hays, Kansas.

October 1868 —Custer drills his command heavily, instilling discipline, sharpshooting, horseback training and the ability to force march. Custer is preparing his command to take on the hostiles. As the 7th completes its training there are several skirmishes with renegade Indians who begin attacking wagon trains and the herds in the vicinity of Fort Hays.

October 17 1868 —THE BATTLE OF BEECHER'S ISLAND — (Yuma County, Colorado) — Fifty Frontier scouts under the command of Col. George Alexander Forsyth face approximately 600 Indians comprised of Northern Cheyenne, Sioux and Arapahoes, under Chief Roman Nose. Two volunteers, Stillwell and Trudeau, sneak away dressed as Indians, to get reinforcements from Fort Wallace. The defenders, almost starved, manage to hold on until reinforcements arrive to save them on the 27th. Chief Roman Nose is defeated and killed at the battle. A detachment of the U.S. 10th Cavalry under the command of Captain Louis H. Carpenter are the first troops to relieve Forsyth.

Carpenter receives the Medal of Honor for his actions during the campaign and in particular for his forced march to relieve the beleaguered scouts of Forsyth at Beacher's Island, Colorado.

November 11 1868 — A contingent of the U.S. 8th Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at Cienega Springs, Utah.

November 12 1868 — The U.S. Army initiates its winter campaign against the Sioux as Sheridan and Custer depart Fort Hays, Kansas heading for the Oklahoma Panhandle to destroy the Indians at their winter camps. These Indian encampments have not been previously endangered by the army and the Indians feel safe that they could continue their raids into Kansas and Texas. The columns of Infantry and Cavalry head south to a point on the North Canadian River where Camp Supply will be established just across the Kansas border within quick striking range of the Panhandle. A vicious blizzard will hit the area during the latter part of the month and play an important part in the plan to locate the Indians. The Cavalry, using the miserable weather to their advantage, move out on the 23rd with the music of "The Girl I Left Behind Me" easing the strain of the difficult journey ahead. Several days later, Custer's troops discover Indian tracks and realize the kill is near. The cavalry successfully follows the trail and will locate the main camp which is at Kettle Island on the Washita. The cavalry has finally found a large force of the enemy after years of frustration. Reconnaissance is carried out and the 7th will prepare to attack from four sides at the first beam of sunlight on the 29th.

November 1868 — BATTLE OF BLACK KETTLE ISLAND — U.S. troops are dispatched from three different Forts with orders to converge upon and strike hostile Indian camps in the Oklahoma Panhandle. The troops which depart Fort Lyons in Colorado are to rendezvous with troops from Fort Bascom and Camp Supply both of which are in New Mexico. The contingent which arrives and contributes the most devastating damage during the campaign is the 7th Cavalry, commanded by Lt.

Colonel Custer who orders an assault at dawn on the 29th of November. The 7th Cavalry with sabres drawn and pistols blazing, swoop down on the camp located on the Washita, Oklahoma Territory from four different sides as their Regimental music, the Garryowen is blaring. The U.S. Cavalry inflicts severe damage upon the Southern Cheyenne before withdrawing and taking over 50 women and children prisoner. During the operation, Custer discovers that these Indian camps are spread extensively all along the Washita River. The Americans lose 21 Soldiers killed, including Captain Lewis M. Hamilton (Grandson of Alexander Hamilton) and 13 wounded. Chief Black Kettle is killed at this action.

November 30 1868 — Custer's victory has presented several problems. The captured horses have to be destroyed before they pull back and the captives are taken back to Camp Supply. The official losses have been slim to Custer's command but one contingent branches off in pursuit of escaping braves and is later found killed. The village contains various articles that prove the Indians have participated in raids against the whites and although the raid did cost the lives of some women and children, it has been noted that it was hard to distinguish which was which especially when some women and children bore arms. Custer feigns a march against the other villages along the Washita but when darkness falls, the 7th changes direction and returns to Camp Supply. Two white captives are murdered by the Indians as the Cavalry attack.

December 25 1868 — A contingent of U.S. Cavalry commanded by Major Andrew Evans defeats a Comanche war party at the northern fork of the Red River in the Battle of Soldier Spring.

March 15 1869 — Lt. Colonel Custer captures four Chiefs at Medicine Arrows and Little Robe

(Cheyenne villages in the Oklahoma Panhandle). Custer demands the release of two white women or he will hang three of the four chiefs. The Sioux would release the women captives and the Indians subsequently surrender.

May 16 1869 — Hostile Indians attack a Cavalry scouting party led by Lt. John B. Babcock, 5th U.S. Cavalry, at Spring Creek, Nebraska. Babcock's presence of mind allows his troops to hold off the larger Indian force until reinforcements arrive. Babcock's actions earn him the Medal of Honor. He gallops to the high ground, then remains on horseback while ordering his men to dismount and fire at will.

June 4 1869 — The Army and hostile Indians engage at Picacho Mountain, Arizona. George Gates, the Bugler of Company F, 8th Cavalry, kills a brave, capturing his weapons. Gates would become recipient of the Medal of Honor for gallantry during this action.

Summer 1869-Winter 1871 — The Indians have kept active with raids in various locations across the Plains. Sporadic actions listed take note of many instances where the Cavalry is involved with skirmishes; many of which have prompted troopers to display extraordinary courage that has them receive the Medal of Honor. General Custer spends the summer and winter based at Fort Hays and devotes much time to keeping his command in top shape.

July 3 1869 — The U.S. Cavalry would engage hostile Indians at Hell Canyon, Arizona. Sgt. Sanford Bradbury is the recipient of the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action. Another Soldier, Corporal Paul Haupt of the 8th Cavalry, also receives the Medal of Honor.

July 8 1869 — A detachment of three men led by Corporal John Kyle, Company M, 5th U.S. Cavalry, would repel an Indian force of 8 men in the vicinity of Republican River, Kansas. Sgt. Co-Rux-Te-Chod-Ish (Mad Bear) is accidentally wounded by his own command as he breaks ranks in an attempt to capture a hostile Indian. Mad Bear, the Indian Scout, also receives the Medal of Honor for his heroism during this battle.

July 11 1869 — The U.S. 5th Cavalry along with Indian scouts under the command of Major Eugene Carr, defeat the "Dog Soldier" Cheyennes at Summit Springs, Colorado. Cheyenne Chief Tall Bull is killed at this battle.

August 25 1869 — The army battles hostile Indians at the Agua Fria River, Seneca Mountain, in Arizona. Corporal Michael Corcoran and several other troopers of the 8th U.S. Cavalry receive the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action.

September 23 1869 — The U.S. 8th Cavalry clashes with an Indian force at Red Creek, Arizona. Sgt. Charles D. Harris becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for gallantry during his engagement.

October 14 1869 — Pvt. David Goodman 8th U.S. Cavalry becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for bravery in action against the Indians at Lyry Creek, Arizona.

October 20 1869 — The Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians in the Chiricahua Mountains, Arizona. Corporal Charles H. Dickens, 8th U.S. Cavalry, becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for his heroism during this engagement. Pvt. Edwin Elwood also receives the Medal of Honor for gallantry.

October 28 1869 — 1st Lt. George E. Albee of the 41st U.S. Infantry, along with two other Soldiers, would encounter and attack a force of eleven Warriors at Brazos River, Texas. The Soldiers drive the hostiles away.

April 15 1870 — Brigadier General George Stoneman assumes command of the Arizona Territory.

May 15 1870 — The Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at Little Blue, Nebraska. Pvt. Heth Canfield and Pvt. Michael Himmelsback, both of the 2nd U.S. Cavalry, would become recipients of the Medal of Honor for gallantry during this action.

May 20 1870 — A detachment of the 9th Cavalry while on a scouting mission in the vicinity of Kickapoo Springs, Texas, engages a hostile Indian force. Sgt. Emanuel Stance of the 9th Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during this action.

July 12 1870 — The army would engage Indians at Wichita River, Texas. The 6th U.S. Cavalry participates. One of the men who receives the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action is Sgt. George H. Eldridge.

October 5 1870 — The U.S. Cavalry engages a band of hostile Indians at Wichita River, Texas, driving them off. Pvt. James Anderson of the 6th U.S. Cavalry receives the Medal of Honor for heroism at this action. Corporal Sam Bowden of the 6th Cavalry is another who receives the Medal of Honor.

January 24 1871 — An Indian raiding party crosses the Red River into Young County, Texas, ambushing a small wagon train, killing the 4 colored teamsters. (Brit Johnson and his three partners)

April 30 1871 — Infuriated civilians would destroy a peaceful Apache village in the vicinity of Camp Grant, Arizona, in retaliation for an Apache raid on American settlers. This confrontation initiates additional war between the whites and Apaches. The Apaches continue fighting until 1886. The leaders of the Grant massacre are arrested but subsequently exonerated by a Tucson jury.

May 5 1871 — The Army engages hostile Indians in the Whetstone Mountains, Arizona. Pvt. Hermann Fichter of the 3rd U.S. Cavalry is among those who receive the Medal of Honor for heroism in this action.

May 18 1871 — WAGON TRAIN MASSACRE — A teamster who escapes the brutal attack, described what happened, including the wounded teamster: "TIED HIS HEAD DOWN ON WAGON WHEEL, RIPPING OUT HIS TONGUE AND BUILT A FIRE UNDER HIS FACE THEN TOOK AXES, CUTTING THE DEAD TO PIECES!" This story convinces Sherman to order pursuit on the 19th. This occurs at Cox Mountain, Texas, near Fort Richardson. The Apaches who set up the ambush at Salt Creek Prairie, Texas allow a small wagon train to pass through safely, while they waited for the larger train that follows. General William Tecumseh Sherman was with the first train. After discovering that the wagon train had been wiped out, he orders the arrest of three Kiowa leaders Satanta, Big Tree, and Satank. Chief Satank is killed while attempting to escape. Chiefs Big Tree and Satanta are tried and convicted, receiving prison terms of two years. Subsequently, during 1876, Satanta, while in custody, chooses to take his own life.

June 4th 1871 —Lt. Col. George Crook replaces General Stoneman as commander of Arizona Territory.

September 1871 —The 7th Cavalry receives orders to depart Fort Hays and report for duty in the South. Custer and his 7th Cavalry are separated into smaller commands and given responsibility for seven states. The Regiments main headquarters is at Elizabethtown, Kentucky.

October 10 1871 —Hostile Indians attack the Army on the Brazos River, Texas, driving a portion of the men into retreat. Lt. Robt. G. Carter 4th U.S. Cavalry, holds the left line firm, refusing to move an inch. His command successfully holds off the hostiles until reinforcements arrive to save the command.

January 1872 —General Sheridan directs Custer to report for special duty to escort the Grand

Duke Alexis of Russia on a hunting expedition on the Plains while the Duke is visiting the United States. General Custer becomes such a success with the Royal visitor that Sheridan permits Custer to remain with the Duke for the balance of his tour. Subsequently, during February, 1873, Custer gets his wish.

Orders arrive to regroup the 7th and take the Regiment to Fort Abraham Lincoln, outside of Bismark, North Dakota. The Army anticipates trouble with the Sioux who are living in the area where the Northern Pacific Railroad is about to penetrate, especially since the Sioux expect no white men or Iron Horses because of the Treaty of 1868.

March 28 1872 — A detachment of the U.S. 4th Cavalry, in pursuit of cattle thieves running from New Mexico are intercepted at Colorado Valley, Texas. Sgt. Wilson receives a Medal of Honor for his heroism and he receives a second award later at Red River, Texas.

April 26 1872 A detachment of the 3rd U.S. Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at Loupe Fort, on Platte River, Nebraska. Sgt. John Foley and Pvt. William Strayer receive the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action.

May 23 1872 —The U.S. Cavalry engages the Tonto Apaches at Sycamore Canyon, Arizona. Sgt. Richard Barrett, 1st U.S. Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor for his actions during the charge against the hostiles.

July 13 1872 —During an engagement between a contingent of the U.S. Cavalry and hostile Indians at Whetstone Mountains, Arizona, Pvt. Michael Glynn, 5th U.S. Cavalry, singlehandedly fights 8 Indians, killing or wounding 5, and driving the rest away.

August 5 1872 — A contingent of the 11th U.S. Infantry drives off a band of Indians who attack a mail train near Fort Griffin, Texas.

August 27 1872 — Sgt. James Brown, Company F, 5th U.S. Cavalry, in command of a detachment of 3 troopers defeats a larger force of hostile Indians at Davidson Canyon in the vicinity of Camp Crittendon, Arizona.

August 1872 —The U.S. 2nd Cavalry, operating from positions along the Yellowstone River, reach striking distance of the Sioux under Crazy Horse and Sitting Bull who are encamped near the Powder River in eastern Montana. The hostiles spot the cavalry and the infantry which accompanies them to insure the safety of American engineers who are establishing the rails. The Sioux strike the army encampment at Arrow Creek on the 14th and the skirmishing continues for several hours most of it from fair distances. Chief Crazy Horse is uninjured, but his horse is shot from under him during one of the charges.

September 8 1872 — During a clash with hostile Indians at Date Creek, Arizona, Sgt. Frank F. Hill, 5th U.S. Cavalry, captures a hostile Apache Chief despite his severe wounds. Hill will be a recipient of the Medal of Honor for his heroism during this action.

September 29 1872 — The U.S. 4th Cavalry would engage a hostile Indian force at Red River, Texas. Sgt. William Foster and Pvt. Edward Brannigan become recipients of the Medal of Honor for their actions during this battle.

November 1872 —The Modoc Indians would begin an uprising along the California-Oregon boundary lines. The Modocs are deeply entrenched in the lava beds of northern California.

December 27-28 1872 — **BATTLE OF SKULL CAVE** — Troops under the command of Lt. Col. George Crook defeat Apaches, killing approximately 75. By April of 1873, the remainder of the tribe under Chief Nanni Chaddi, surrender at Camp Verde, Arizona. Captain W. H. Brown with a detachment of the 5th Cavalry and a number of Apache scouts, attack hostile Apaches in the

Arizona-Tonto Basin Country, defeating them badly. Unwilling to give up, the Apaches fight with tenacity until most defenders perish. Only a small amount survived to surrender.

December 1872 —Troops attached to Crook's command capture Apache Warriors.

January 2 1873 — Pvt. James Lenihan of the 5th Cavalry receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during an engagement with Indians at Clear Creek, Arizona.

January 17 1873 —U.S. troops engage with Modocs at the Lava beds in California. The Indians holding invincible positions continue to fire at troops all day. Nightfall permits the Army to withdraw from the invisible enemy.

January 22 1873 —The U.S. Cavalry engages a band of hostile Indians at Tonto Creek, Arizona. Pvt. George Hooker Company K, 5th Infantry, shows extraordinary courage, and gives his life during the battle. Hooker becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for his gallantry during this action.

March 1873 —The U.S. Army is moving against the Sioux in the north country. Forts are being constructed along the Missouri River in North Dakota in addition to others being built on the outskirts of Sioux Territory. Events of 1872 prompts the Army to bolster forces against the Sioux. Custer departs Memphis, Tennessee with a large force and Colonel Stanley (Civil War Major General by Brevet) is also heading towards Fort Lincoln with a strong force of troops and civilians. Stanley is the Commanding Officer during the journey.

March 25 1873 — The 5th Cavalry would engage with a group of hostile Indians at Turret Mountain, Arizona. Sgt. Daniel Fisher receives the Medal of Honor for his heroism during this action. Another engagement between the 5th Cavalry and Indians occurs on the 27th.

March 27 1873 —A contingent of soldiers engages an Indian force at Turret Mountain, Arizona. 1st Sgt. William Allan 23rd U.S. Infantry receives the Medal of Honor for gallantry during this action.

April 6 1873 —A Peace Treaty is signed with the Apaches at Camp Verde, Arizona. The Treaty gains Lt. Colonel Crook the rank of Brigadier General.

April 11 1873 —General Canby, while under a flag of truce, is murdered by the Modoc Chief Captain Jack and his warriors. American troops ultimately flush out the Modocs and execute those responsible for the brutal murder. In addition to the death of General Canby, the Reverend Eleaser Thomas is also killed by the Modocs.

May 4 1873 —General Sheridan orders Colonel Ranald S. Mackenzie to take the 4th Cavalry to Fort Clark (20 miles from the Rio Grande), and: "TAKE WHATEVER ACTION YOUR OWN JUDGEMENT DEEMS FITTING." This order appeared to include crossing into Mexico to stop the Indian raids, even at the cost of a fight with Mexican troops.

May 6 1873 —The U.S. Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians in the Santa Maria Mountains, in Arizona. Sam Hoover, a bugler with Company A, 1st U.S. Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during this engagement.

May 17 1873 —Colonel Mackenzie and approximately 400 men of the 4th Cavalry cross the Rio Grande into Mexico and on the 18th devastate three Apache villages near Santa Rosa. The battle report seems intentionally vague, saying little; however, the troops burn the villages and return with one Chief and 40 women and children as prisoners. No conflict between the cavalry and the Mexicans develops.

June-July 1873 —The U.S. Cavalry and hostile Indians become embroiled in many skirmishes in the vicinity of Castle Done and the Santa Maria Mountains, Arizona. Sgt. Patrick Martin and Capt.

James Burns both of the 5th Cavalry, receive Medals of Honor for gallantry during this campaign.

July 8th-11th 1873 —The U.S. Cavalry engages hostile Indians in the vicinity of Fort Selden, New Mexico. During these skirmishes, Sgt. Leonidas S. Lytle of the 8th Cavalry receives the Medal of Honor for valor.

July 1873 — The army expedition force reaches the mouth of the Powder River by the end of July but not to the surprise of the Sioux who are aware of the progress of the expedition. Within a few days, the two forces begin to engage at the mouth of the Tongue River.

August 4 1873 — The Sioux begin to tangle with the Cavalry. As the 7th awaits the balance of the force, they post pickets and relax along the Tongue River. Sioux Warriors make a dash towards Custer's position, hoping to draw the cavalry into a trap. Firing erupts but the horses do not stampede and the advance cavalymen send out a detail to get the hostiles. As the troopers encroach the woods, they halt and as it turns out, make the proper decision. The woods were hiding the main war party. Some of the hidden warriors are from the same band who massacred Fetterman's command at Fort Kearny. Custer, a genuine Yankee Doodle, and his horse called "Dandy" have outrun the galloping Sioux, foiling the day for Crazy Horse. The cavalry detachment is rejoined by the remainder of the main body and 85 Soldiers pour fire upon the attackers scattering them in all directions. The 7th then remounts and drives the Indians away. Casualties are light on both sides. General Custer, in conversation with Bloody Knife his trusted Crow Scout (on right) and others while resting during the expedition along the Yellowstone.

August 8-11 1873 —Bloody Knife, Custer's trusted Crow Scout, locates a Sioux village and after Custer is informed, the 7th Cavalry begins to move against the Sioux. They approach the village on the 9th, anticipating a surprise assault but the Sioux have moved across the Yellowstone River. The current is an obstacle which prevents pursuit. The Sioux, eagerly awaiting a chance to kill Custer in revenge for the 7th's attack on Chief Black Kettle, rise early on the 11th and move against Custer, firing from the opposing bank of the Yellowstone. Some Indians easily swam the Yellowstone, ignoring the treacherous currents that block Custer's men. The hostiles under Crazy Horse and Sitting Bull crept closer to the 7th's lines and Custer reacted, by ordering the men to mount and prepare to charge. Custer gallops in the lead with the music of the "Gary Owen" blaring. This unpredictable charge confounds the Sioux who retreat and subsequently move their village along the Big Horn River, moving south. Custer, who was not riding "Dandy," has his horse shot from under him but in quick motion, remounts and continues the chase. The Sioux escape and the fighting ceases with the cavalry returning to Fort Lincoln and the Indians withdrawing to Powder River Territory and passed the winter without any major incidents.

October 3 1873 —Modoc Chiefs Captain Jack, Boston Charley, Black Jim and Schonchin are hanged on the Parade Field of Fort Klamath, Oregon.

Spring of 1874 —General Sheridan authorizes the establishment of a fort in the Black Hills of South Dakota. Custer's 7th Cavalry is subsequently dispatched from Fort Lincoln which is to be the main base camp.

April 2 1874 — The U.S. Cavalry skirmishes with hostile Indians at Apache Creek, Arizona. Sgt. George Deary of the 5th Cavalry exhibits much gallantry during this action and becomes a recipient of the Medal of Honor.

June 8 1874 —Cochise dies and his son Taza becomes head of the Chiricahua Apaches.

June 27 1874 — A group of American hunters are attacked at dawn by a combined Cheyenne-Kiowa and Comanche war party, but the Americans manage to successfully repel the attack. There

are 28 buffalo hunters who hold off approximately 700 Indians at "Adobe Walls" in the Texas panhandle.

July 2 1874 —Custer's force moves out of Fort Lincoln with trains numbering over 100 wagons, two companies of infantry, a piece of heavy artillery, several Gatling guns, complemented by ten companies of the 7th Cavalry. In addition, Custer assembles a large group of Indian scouts, including Bloody Knife, his trusted Crow companion. The American expeditionary force approaches the hills towards the latter part of July and enters the Black Hills on the 25th, and makes camp in what would be present day Custer, South Dakota on the 27th. The troops remain in the hills for several weeks before returning to Fort Lincoln with information that the Black Hills are not being used by the Sioux. The expedition returns to Fort Lincoln with the entire trip being uncontested by the Sioux, a fact which has never been explained or fully understood.

July 20 1874 —Washington gives General Sheridan authority to wage war on any and all hostile Indians.

August 30 1874 —Colonel Nelson A. Miles' command intercepts Kiowa and Comanches leaving their reservation, and inflicts heavy casualties on them in the Antelope Hills of Oklahoma.

September 9-11 1874 — The U.S. Army engages in heavy fighting with hostile Indians in the vicinity of Upper Washita, Texas. Sgts. Fred S. Hay and William De Armond of the 5th U.S. Infantry, become recipients of the Medal of Honor for their heroic actions during this engagement.

September 12 1874 — BUFFALO WALLOW FIGHT In a spectacular battle, four enlisted men and two army scouts withstand a ferocious attack by 125 Comanche and Kiowa Indians in present-day Hemphill County, Texas. In a letter to the Adjutant General from Commanding Officer Col. Nelson Miles, dated September 24th, 1874 — "HOW THE WOUNDED DEFENDED THE DYING AND AIDED THE WOUNDED BY EXPOSURE TO FRESH WOUNDS" — "THESE ALONE PRESENT A SCENE OF COOL COURAGE, HEROISM AND SELF SACRIFICE, PROMPTING US TO RECOGNIZE, BUT WHICH WE CANNOT FITLY HONOR:"

September 24-27th 1874 — General Ranald Mackenzie's troops on a search and destroy mission, discover the winter camp of the Kiowa-Comanches, located in the Palo Duro Canyon, near Amarillo, Texas. The cavalry marches for 24 hours to surprise the camp, capturing all Indian supplies. Mackenzie heavily defeats the combined camps of the Cheyenne, Comanches and Kiowas, on the 25th. In addition, the cavalry captures almost 1,500 Indian horses. The Indians are forced to begin surrendering during the upcoming winter. Private Adam Paine is among those who receive the Medal of Honor for heroism.

November 1 1874 —Sgt. Bernard Taylor Company A. 5th U.S. Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor for courage in rescuing Lt. King of the 5th Cavalry from hostile Indians in the vicinity of Sunset Pass, Arizona.

December 2nd 1874 —Hostile Indians engage the 6th Cavalry at Gageby Creek in the Indian Territory. 1st Sgt. Dennis Ryan becomes a recipient of the Medal of Honor for his courage during this battle.

December 8th 1874 —The U.S. Cavalry engages and pursues hostile Indians at Staked Plains, Muchague Valley, Texas. Pvt. Frederick Bergerndahl, 4th U.S. Cavalry receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during this extended chase.

April 12th 1875 —Alchesay, Sgt. of Indian Scouts, receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during the campaigns against the Apache, during the winter of 1872-73. Another courageous Indian Scout, Corporal Elsatsoosu, also becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for consistent

bravery during the Apache campaign.

April 23 1875 — A detachment of 6 men from the U.S. 6th Cavalry, including Pvt. Peter Gardiner and Pvt. Simpson, sneaks behind Cheyenne lines at Sappa Creek, Kansas. This surprise attack causes the hostile Indians to withdraw from their once formidable positions, allowing the main column of the 6th Cavalry to proceed without further harassment.

April 25 1875 — Isaac Payne, a trumpeter of Indian Scouts and three other men attack a hostile force of 25 Indians at Pecos River, Texas. Payne and the others become recipients of the Medal of Honor for their extraordinary courage during this action.

June 12 1875 — Taza, Chief of the Chiricahua and approximately 325 of his people, begin a move to the San Carlos Reservation. Nearly 400 Apaches refuse, fleeing to Mexico. Among those who flee, is Geronimo.

July 9 1875 — General Crook headquartered at Big Horn, Montana, requires important messages be communicated between himself and his staggered forces to insure the safety of his command, including those in the field. Pvt. James Bell Company E, 7th U.S. Infantry risks his life by volunteering to successfully carry these most important documents through Indian terrain, keeping General Crook informed of the situations concerning the success of his campaign.

1876-1879 — Renegade Apaches initiate raids until their skirmishes turn into full-scale warfare. Apaches, under Victorio Mimbreno, upon his death, follow Nana into the Sierra Madre Mountains, joining there with Geronimo.

March 1 1876 — General George Crook departs Fort Fetterman, Wyoming with just under 1,000 troops, heading up the Bozeman Trail towards the Powder River.

March 17 1876 — Colonel J.J. Reynolds attacks the encampment of Crazy Horse on the Powder River. The Indians counterattack and Colonel Reynolds withdraws to rejoin General Crook. William C. Bryan, a hospital steward, accompanies a Cavalry charge prior to the retreat. Bryan has his horse shot from under him, yet continues to fight, saving two men from capture. During the retreat, Albert Glavinski, a blacksmith of Company M, 3rd Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor as part of the rear guard, holding off the Indians, and allowing the main force to retreat towards Crook's main command.

April 28 1876 — A contingent of the U.S. 23rd Infantry clashes with hostile Indians near Fort Hartstuff, Nebraska. During this engagement, the Indians become well fortified in the hills. Lt. Charles H. Heyl, with the assistance of three other men, successfully dislodge the hostiles, saving the army from suffering unnecessary casualties. This detachment, in recognition of their extraordinary bravery become recipients of the Medal of Honor.

May 1876 — General Terry and Lt. Colonel Custer depart Fort Abraham Lincoln, Nebraska, heading for the Yellowstone River in search of the Sioux and Cheyenne camps. In addition, Colonel John Gibbon's command is advancing from Fort Ellis, Montana to rendezvous with the troops of Terry and another column commanded by General Crook which departed Fort Fetterman, Wyoming Territory. The combined force is to assault and destroy the hostile encampments but as the converging troops are advancing on their objective, obstacles interrupt the plan and the Indians score a major victory. General Crook encounters a large enemy force at the Rosebud River on the 17th of June which halts his progress. The other two columns join at the mouth of the Rosebud River and attempt to split their force and assault from two different directions with a synchronized assault. The attack plans go astray on the 25th of June when the annihilation of Custer's 7th Cavalry occurs at the Little Big Horn.

May 17-18 1876 — The 7th Cavalry departs Fort Lincoln heading for the Black Hills. It was touchy for a while whether or not Custer would be with the regiment because of several personal problems stemming from politics but after a last minute plea and the intercession of General Terry, Custer moves out with the 7th, marching to the tune of "The Girl I Left Behind Me." The famed Battle of Little Big Horn is one march away and the gallant 7th Cavalry unknowingly rides to immortality.

June 1876 — Geronimo initiates raids in Sonora, Mexico, stealing horses, mules and cattle, moving them north across the border for sale in New Mexico. These raids continue until March, 1877.

June 17 1876 — **BATTLE OF ROSEBUD** — Scouts under General Crook's command discover a force of Sioux and Cheyenne approaching Crook's column which is halted at the Rosebud River. The Indians engage Crook's command in a heated six-hour battle that forces General Crook to maintain his position and await supplies before rejoining the Little Big Horn expedition. The Indians, immediately after the battle of the Rosebud, begin moving towards the Little Big Horn to join the other thousands of warriors camped along the valley. This battle takes place approximately 40 miles South of the Little Big Horn. General Crook calls the battle a victory but the fact he is forced to withdraw negates his claim. General Crook's command consists of 15 cavalry companies in addition to five infantry companies and several hundred civilians. In other activity, Major Marcus A. Reno sends out scouts who locate an Indian trail moving out of the valley moving across the Wolf Mountains and exiting in the direction of the Little Big Horn. Major Reno, unaware of the situation of General Crook at the Rosebud, does not bother to inform his superiors.

June 21 1876 — General Terry, Colonel Gibbon and Custer, unaware of Crook's withdrawal, meet to discuss battle plans against the Indians, on the steamboat Far West. The scouts determine they will find the Indians on a stream called "Greasy Grass", also known as "Little Big Horn." The following day, the U.S. 7th Cavalry pass in review in front of General Terry prior to their march against the Sioux at the Little Big Horn.

June 25-27 1876 — **THE BATTLE OF THE LITTLE BIG HORN** — Lt. Col. George Armstrong Custer's troops, unaware of General Crook's stalemate against the Indians at the Rosebud River on the 17th, are advancing from the south, following the Rosebud towards suspected Indian positions at the Little Big Horn. General Terry, advancing with the command of Colonel Gibbon, has maneuvered his command along the Yellowstone in order to assault from the north. This circuitous route takes additional time and causes the main column to remain far behind the 7th Cavalry Regiment. Custer, in all probability, feels his force strong enough to deal with the Indians; however, the size of the Indian force exceeds 12,000, including between three and four thousand braves.

Custer divides his force into three separate commands, retaining five Companies of the 7th Cavalry for his assault force and delegating three each to Major Reno and Captain Benteen.

The Sioux and Cheyenne holding the valley are not surprised and have sufficient numbers to assault the forces under Custer encircling them and simultaneously trapping Benteen and Reno. The warriors riding their horses bare-back fire incessantly at the besieged 7th picking off the Soldiers trapped at the Little Big Horn. Other massive war parties move out of the camp to intercept Major Reno's command near Garryowen Post Office, situated approximately four miles from where Custer is making his last stand. Reno's command gives the Indians bitter opposition but his command is simply overpowered by the superior numbered Indians which forces the Cavalry to retreat hastily

towards some cliffs. Captain Frederick Benteen, who is speeding forward under orders from Custer, locates Major Reno and the combined force holds off the hostiles but they cannot locate Custer's command, which is being devastated by the swarming braves. Custer's 7th, although finished, does not capitulate, firing until the last man is killed. Major Reno and Captain Benteen force their way to the sounds of gunfire, hoping to join Custer but upon arrival at a vantage point later called Weir Point, all signs of battle have ceased and there is no indication of the whereabouts of Custer.

The bloodied battlefield displays no signs of the cavalry because they had been slain in a struggle to the death; this band of courageous men who had been outnumbered by a ratio of as many as 20 to one. The hostiles had felled Old Glory, silenced the Regimental Bugle and in the aftermath of the massacre, driven the fallen heroes into a glorious legend that subsequently inspired the cavalry to avenge the slaughter by increasing their intensity as they fight relentlessly, galloping across the Plains, sabres drawn and guns blazing until the Indians are thoroughly defeated. The crazed Indians begin closing to finish off Benteen and Reno, but quick maneuvering by the remnants of the Regiment enables them to take cover at the cliffs overlooking the Little Big Horn to prevent another disaster. The remnants of the original 600 men of the 7th Cavalry hold their positions and repulse successive hostile assaults throughout the balance of the 25th and again on the 26th. Finally the main command under General Terry, advances to relieve the besieged survivors of the 7th Cavalry on the 27th.

The victorious Sioux and Cheyenne under Sitting Bull, Two Moon, and others determine that the main column under Terry is too strong and choose to withdraw, rather than face the challenge of fighting the combined forces of Terry and Gibbon. General Custer and his entire command are killed, totalling approximately 225 men (Indian scouts subsequently count nearly 200 naked mutilated bodies at the Little Big Horn). In addition to the losses of Custer's five Companies, 47 men attached to Benteen and Reno are killed and 52 troopers are wounded prior to the arrival of General Terry and Gibbon. Indian losses are approximately 100 killed. This is a major victory for the Indians, but it turns out to become the catalyst for the total demise of the Indians as powerful foes.

The U.S. Cavalry would relentlessly seek revenge during the coming months, causing massive defeats for the Sioux and Cheyenne. Chief Sitting Bull withdraws to Canada, perched to attack the Montana-Dakota borders, but most of the ill-equipped Indians are driven back to the Reservations. The force of well over 2,500 Indians at Little Big Horn, sought revenge for the Custer victory at Black Kettle Island. Sgt. Richard R Hanley and Sgt. George Geiger are among many of the famed 7th, who would receive the Medal of Honor for their heroism during this most devastating defeat. **June 27 1876** — As America was preparing for its 100th Birthday, telegraph lines are announcing the National disaster at the Little Big Horn, on the plains of the Dakotas, throughout the country, to the dismay of the entire country.

July 8-11 1876 —The U.S. Cavalry is constantly engaged with hostile Indians in the area protected by Fort Seldon, New Mexico. Corporal Frank Battling, 8th U.S. Cavalry receives the Medal of Honor for bravery against the enemy during this particular skirmish.

July 9 1876 — Once again important dispatches pertaining to the well-being of the Army necessitate the transport of important dispatches from the field to General Crook at Big Horn, Montana. Pvt. William Evans 7th U.S. Infantry, volunteers to get the messages through. He successfully evades capture and death while traveling through treacherous Sioux Territory. Evans

becomes a recipient of the Medal of Honor for this most courageous mission.

July 17 1876 —BATTLE OF WARBONNET CREEK Col. Wesley Merritt and his 5th Cavalry, attached to Fort Robinson, Nebraska, attack and defeat the Cheyenne in the vicinity of Fort Robinson. William E Cody (Buffalo Bill) becomes a national hero because of his actions at this battle.

August 1 1876 — Colorado is admitted to the Union as the 38th State and, North Dakota on the same day as the 39th State.

September 9 1876 —Colonel Anson Mills and his troops defeat the Indians under Crazy Horse at Slim Buttes, Dakota Territory.

October 21 1876-January 8th 1877 — The U.S. Army and U. S. Cavalry clash with hostile Indians at Cedar Creek and other locations in Montana. John Baker, a Musician attached to Company B, 5th U.S. Infantry, is among the men who receive the Medal of Honor for bravery above and beyond the call of duty during these actions.

November 25 1876 —A contingent of the U.S. 4th Cavalry is attacked by a superior force of hostile Indians at Powder River, Wyoming. Although gravely wounded, Sgt. Thomas Forsyth, with his small command holds off the main assault. In addition, Forsyth rescues his wounded Commanding Officer.

November 26th 1876 — Col. Mackenzie's forces rout the Cheyennes at the Battle of the Big Horn Mountains. These troops are under the command of General Crook.

January 8 1877 — BATTLE OF WOLF MOUNTAIN U.S. troops devastate a force of over 500 Sioux and Cheyenne under Chief Crazy Horse, at Wolf Mountain, Montana. Capt. Edmund Butler, 5th U.S. Infantry, exemplifies distinguished heroism during this action, and Capt. James S. Casey leads a successful charge against the larger Indian force.

January 13 1877 — A war party of 14 hostile Indians ambushes a five-man detachment of the U.S. 3rd Cavalry in the vicinity of Elkhorn Creek, in Wyoming. Three of the five men are wounded; however, they repulse the attack.

January 20-22 1877 — The U.S. Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians in and around Bluff Station, Wyoming. Sgt. William B. Lewis, 3rd Cavalry, becomes a recipient of the Medal of Honor for his courage during this engagement.

January 24 1877 — A contingent of the 9th U.S. Cavalry is dispatched to attempt to force a band of hostile Apaches to surrender in the Florida Mountains, New Mexico. The Apaches surround and attack the cavalry. Brutal fighting ensues, but the smaller cavalry unit manages to break out and return safely. Corporal Clinton Greaves receives the Medal of Honor for bravery during the escape.

Spring 1877 — The Nez Perce Indian War breaks out with the killing of settlers in the Idaho Valley.

April 22 1877 —Indian Agent John Philip Glum traps and captures Geronimo at Ojo Caliente. Glum proceeds to move all Warm Springs Apaches to San Carlos. They arrive there on May 20th.

May 7 1877 — A Sioux war party attacks the 2nd U.S. Cavalry at Little Muddy Creek, Montana. The cavalry successfully repels the assault. One man, Corporal Garland, badly wounded at an earlier battle, still fiercely directs his men until the Indians withdraw. His courage makes him recipient of the Medal of Honor. Another, Farrier William H. Jones, of the 2nd Cavalry, also receives the Medal of Honor for gallantry during this battle.

June 17 1877 — About 100 cavalry men dispatched from Fort Lapwai to avenge the death of four whites are solidly defeated at the Battle of White Bird Canyon in Idaho Territory, by warriors under

Nez Perce Chief Joseph. The cavalry loses 34 men. During the cavalry withdrawal, Lt. William Parnell and a small detachment of men return under heavy fire from the pursuing Indians to rescue a fellow soldier who has his horse shot from under him. The detachment manages to save the stranded trooper and the cavalry, although badly beaten, make it back to the main command. The cavalry then prepares for a new attack in July.

July 11 1877 —General Oliver Howard departs with just under 500 men (combined infantry and cavalry) to catch the Nez Perce who devastated the soldiers at White Bird Canyon, Idaho. They catch them on the 11th near Clearwater, Idaho, and after a bitter two-day battle, rout the Indians, driving them in fast retreat towards Canada. During this tremendous battle between the Army and Indians, a detachment of the 4th U.S. Artillery led by Lt. Charles Humphrey, expose themselves to intense fire while recovering an abandoned Howitzer and two Gatling guns, positioned immediately before the Indian positions.

August 9 1877 — Colonel John Gibbon's troops, including the 7th U.S. Infantry, clash with the retreating Nez Perce Tribe at Big Hole River, Montana. The cavalry fails to retain them. Chief Joseph continues to dart towards the safety of Canada. His successful withdrawal places his tribe within one day's march from the Canadian border. Pvt. Wilfred Clark (Sharpshooter), 2nd U.S. Cavalry, becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action.

August 20 1877 —A small detachment of men from the 1st U.S. Cavalry led by Captain James Jackson, under heavy enemy fire, manages to recover the body of their trumpeter, at great risk to their lives, during the battle at Camas Meadows, Idaho. Pvt. Wilfred Clark, a hero at Big Hole River on the 9th, again shows tremendous valor at this battle.

September 1877 —Victorio leaves the San Carlos Reservation, with over 300 Apaches to begin raiding and killing settlers. Over 10 ranchers are killed before the Army captures them. The renegades are temporarily returned to the Warm Springs Reservation.

September 30 1877 — The U.S. 2nd Cavalry and the U.S. 5th Infantry intercept and initiate a five day siege on Chief Joseph's tribe in the vicinity of Bear Paw Mountain, Montana. The continuing bombardment of U.S. Light Artillery in addition to the Cavalry, forces the surrender of Chief Joseph on October 5, 1877, ending the Nez Perce War. 1st Lt. George W. Baird, 5th Infantry, receives the Medal of Honor for heroism during this engagement. Lt. Mason Carter leads a devastating charge inflicting many losses on the enemy. Another detachment led by Capt. Edward Godfrey also causes severe casualties to the Indians. Godfrey is badly wounded, but insists on continuing his successful charge.

December 14 1877 — Sgt. James Brogan, Company G, 6th U.S. Cavalry, singlehandedly fights off two hostile Indians. Brogan has his horse shot out from under him. Determined to continue the fight, he follows the Indians on foot through Simon Valley, Arizona.

May 30 1878 — Chief Buffalo Horn ravages Southern Idaho, until June 8th, when he is killed by settlers. After the death of Buffalo Horn, his followers move to Steens Mountain, Oregon where braves led by Chief Egan join them.

June 23 1878 — Captain Reuben F. Bernard's 1st Cavalry would attack and defeat the Indians under Chief Egan at Silver Creek, forcing them to retreat. These Indians are Paiute and Bannock.

July 8 1878 — General Howard's command would rout the Indians (Umatila) at Birch Creek, but the fleeing Indians reach the Indian Agency at Pendleton, Oregon.

July 13 1878 — Captain Evan Miles' Infantry engages hostile Indians under Chief Egan at Pendleton, Oregon, driving them away. Chief Egan is pursued by a Umatila who returns with

Egan's scalp.

September 4 1878 — U.S. Cavalry troops defeat the Bannock Indians at Clark's Fork River, Montana, forcing them back onto the reservation.

September 1878 — Northern Cheyenne, attempting to leave their prison reservation in Oklahoma to return to their lands in Montana, are pursued by U.S. troops and armed American civilians. The Indians would be hit by constant strikes during their return journey through Kansas, Nebraska, Dakota and Wyoming, until they are almost all lost. Very few who started the journey survive this tragic event of 1878-79.

October 8 1878 — The Government in Washington orders Victorio and his Apaches moved back to San Carlos Reservation. Victorio refuses and departs with over 100 warriors. Chiracahua and Mescalero Apaches join him in 1879.

January 5 1879 — Orders come from Washington to march the Cheyennes back to the Indian Territory.

January 9 1879 — Chief Dull Knife and his Cheyennes break out of prison in an attempt to reach the Canadian border where they might join Chief Sitting Bull.

April 10 1879 — The U.S. Army clashes with hostile Indians at Mizpah Creek, Montana. Sgt. Glover 2nd U.S. Cavalry, while in command of a scouting party, surrounds and captures a Sioux war party.

May 29 1879 — The U.S. Cavalry engages Indians in the Mimbres Mountains, New Mexico. Sgt. Thomas Boyne 9th U.S. Cavalry, receives the Medal of Honor for bravery during this action. Boyne becomes the recipient of a second Medal of Honor for heroism against the Indians on September 27, 1879, at Ojo Caliente, New Mexico. Hostile Indians under Victorio slay Mexican ranchers during one of their incursions into Mexico.

September 4 1879 — Victorio and about 60 Apaches attack and kill 8 guards from the 9th Cavalry and steal their horses. This attack provokes the Victorio War. The Apaches wreak havoc and are chased by the 9th and 10th Cavalry plus Mexican troops. Victorio is finally killed in Mexico during the Tres Castillos, Battle of by Mexican troops.

September 18 1879 — The U.S. Cavalry would battle hostile Indians at Las Animas Canyon, New Mexico. Lt. Matthias Day, 9th U.S. Cavalry, ventures alone into Indian-held lines to successfully rescue a wounded trooper. Lt. Day becomes the recipient of the Medal of Honor for bravery. Sgt. John Denny also receives the Medal of Honor for his courage during this engagement. The Indians have the Army command surrounded until reinforcements finally arrive on the 19th, to save them.

September 19 1879 — A detachment of the 9th U.S. Cavalry led by Robert T. Emmett is dispatched to reinforce a trapped command at Animas Canyon, New Mexico. Emmett and five of his men are surrounded by hostiles and successfully hold off the force of nearly 200 while other troops make it safely to a canyon. The besieged five remount and join the command.

September 27 1879 — The U.S. Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at the Cuchillo River in the vicinity of Ojo Caliente, New Mexico.

September 29-October 5 1879 — Major Thomas Thornburgh and his force of approximately 22 men would come under siege by a Ute war party led by Chief Jack in the vicinity of White River Agency, Milk River, Colorado. The men hold out against heavy odds until reinforcements (9th Cavalry, Colored) would reach them on October 2nd and lift the siege. Capt. Francis Dodge and 40 troopers gallop through the entire night to save the embattled troops. Sgt. Edward Grimes of the 5th U.S. Cavalry takes a contingent of men to come to the aid of a detachment surrounded on

three sides by hostiles. Grimes' detachment brings needed ammunition, as their supply was nearly exhausted. Sgt. Henry Johnson of the 9th Cavalry voluntarily leaves the fortifications under intense fire, to instruct guards in the pits. He also fights his way to the creek to get water for the besieged troopers. Sgt. Lawton of the 5th participates in saving the trapped contingent. The extraordinary courage and heroism of these men permit them to hold out and finally on October 5th, the Indians withdraw.

October 20 1879 — A war party, consisting of 35 braves, would attack a reconnoitering party of three men from the 5th U.S. Cavalry at White River, Colorado. 1st Lt. William P. Hall places himself in conspicuous danger, drawing fire upon himself, and allowing the rest of the command to fire effectively to successfully repulse the attack.

February 10 1880 — A U.S. Army scouting party attacks a Sioux war party at Pumpkin Creek, Montana. A contingent of the 2nd U.S. Cavalry successfully surrounds and captures the hostile Indians.

April 1 1880 —The U.S. 2nd Cavalry engages hostile Indians at O'Fallon's Creek, Montana. The Cavalry drives off the Indian horses and the skirmish lasts until darkness when the Indians get away.

May 14 1880 —A detachment of the 9th U.S. Cavalry led by Sgt. George Jordan, successfully repels an attack by approximately 100 Indians near Fort Tularosa, New Mexico.

October 15 1880 — American troops have chased Victorio throughout his raids of 1879-80 at a furious pace, but it was an Indian scout named Mauricio Correvor who catches and kills him on this day.

July 19 1881 — Chief Sitting Bull returns from Canada to surrender to the army at Fort Buford, South Dakota.

August 12 1881 —The 9th U.S. Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at Carrizos Canyon, New Mexico. Sgt. Thomas Shaw holds his ground, forcing the superior Indian force to retreat. Shaw's actions would prevent the enemy from surrounding and devastating the troops.

August 16 1881 —The U.S. 9th Cavalry would clash with hostile Indians at the Cuchillo Negro Mountains, New Mexico. The vicious battle lasts nearly four hours in the foothills but the cavalry holds off the attackers. One trooper about to be cut off and killed or captured by the Indians is rescued by the heroism of Lt. George R. Burnett, 9th Cavalry, who rushes under heavy fire, picks up the straggler and in spite of his own horse being shot twice, returns safely. Burnett receives the Medal of Honor for this action.

August 30th 1881 — Colonel Carr and a detachment of 79 men arrest Nakaidoklini, a medicine man at Cibicu Creek, Arizona. An attack by angry White Mountain Apaches occurs that night and the medicine man is killed by his guard. This action prompts additional uprisings by the Apaches. The U.S. Army continues to hunt the elusive Geronimo and other Apaches for several years. Geronimo finally surrenders in 1886. Sgt. Alonzo Bowman, 6th U.S. Cavalry, leads an attack against mutinous scouts during the fight. Bowman and Pvt. Richard Heartery are among those Soldiers who receive the Medal of Honor for bravery.

August 31 1881 —Colonel Carr's detachment is back at Fort Apache after their recent encounter at Cibicu Creek. Carr's command is again attacked by hostiles the following day by the same White Mountain Apaches.

September 11 1881 — White Mountain Apaches again attack a contingent of the U.S. Army at Fort Apache, Arizona. Pvt. 1st Class William C. Barnes, attached to the Signal Corps, receives the

Medal of Honor for heroism during this attack.

April 23 1882 — The U.S. 6th Cavalry clashes with hostile Indians at Horseshoe Canyon, New Mexico.

July 17 1882 — **BATTLE OF BIG DRY FORK** — The U.S. 6th Cavalry would defeat Apaches at Chevalon Creek, Arizona. Seventy two Apaches are killed and the rest surrendered. This is the last major battle between the army and Indians on Arizona soil. Lt. Thomas Cruse receives the Medal of Honor for his gallantry in saving the life of a wounded trooper by charging the hostiles and holding them off, while the wounded soldier is recovered.

March 1883 —Apaches leave Sonora, Mexico and raid southern Arizona and New Mexico, killing H.C. McComas, a prominent judge and his wife. The Apaches take their son captive. The boy is found dead. These marauding Apaches are led by Chatto.

May 15 1883 — General Crook surprises Apaches at their Mexican hideout in the Sieras and within a week, his soldiers return to Arizona with approximately 300 Apache prisoners. Crook's command consists of 45 Cavalry troops and 193 Apache scouts.

January 1884 — Lt. Britton Davis is ordered to transport 550 Apaches (men, women and children) to Turkey Creek located about 17 miles outside of Fort Apache, Arizona.

May 18 1885 —Indian scouts Chatto and Mickey Free (the stepson of John Moore kidnapped by Apaches in the Bascom Affair of 1860) inform Lt. Davis that Geronimo and many braves have fled the San Carlos Reservation.

May 1885 —Geronimo, having left the reservation near Fort Apache, starts raiding the settlers. He continues this course until September, 1886 when he surrenders for the last time. He is taken after his surrender in Mexico to Fort Bowie, Arizona.

May 1885 —Philip Sheridan, Commanding General of the Army, orders General Crook to move his headquarters closer to the Southern Pacific Railway to better control all troop movements. Crook has 200 additional scouts with him and quickly sets up headquarters at Fort Bowie, Arizona.

June 1885 — Lt. Gatewood completes his military mission in New Mexico but it proves uneventful. Gatewood's detachment have searched unsuccessfully for hostile Indians. Upon his return to the Fort, a reporter asks: What about the Indians? Gatewood responded: "WELL, THEY'VE ALL GONE SOUTH AND PROBABLY ACROSS THE SOUTHERN PACIFIC IF THEY HAVEN'T BEEN CAPTURED."

June 2 1885 — By this date, Crook has his men convincingly deployed at Fort Bowie. Captain Emmet Crawford with his scouts and Troop A, 6th Cavalry, as well as Lt. Parker 6th Cavalry, search the Black and Mogollon Mountains for Apaches. Another troop under Captain Wirt Davis and the 4th Cavalry leave for Mexico, carrying 60 days rations, with hopes of driving the renegade Indians out of the Sierra Madres in Sonora. The 10th Cavalry are stationed at every waterhole from the Rio Grande, west to the Patagonia Mountains. General Crook places well over 2,000 troops in the field in an attempt to finish the Apaches.

June 8 1885 —Apaches under Chihuahua raid a contingent of the 4th Cavalry at Guadalupe Canyon, Arizona, while the Officers are on a scouting patrol. The Apaches kill 5 of the 8 men left behind to guard the camp.

August 7 1885 — The command of Wirt Davis strikes at a band of Apaches, thought to be led by Geronimo, killing a few braves, a squaw and child. Fifteen others are captured but Geronimo crisscrosses the Sierras and then back north into New Mexico, successfully evading the soldiers posted to capture him.

November 23-24 1885 —Josanie, the younger brother of Chihuahua, strikes with surprise near Fort Apache, killing 2 civilians and then attacks the Indian Reservation itself. 20 White Mountain Apaches are murdered.

December 9 1885 —Troops of the 8th Cavalry commanded by Lt. Samuel W. Fountain attack Apaches near Papanosas, New Mexico. The Apaches escape.

December 10 1885 — Josanie's Apaches attack a ranch, killing 2 settlers and stealing fresh horses. That same afternoon, they ambush a detachment of soldiers, killing 5 and wounding 2.

December 27 1885 — Josanie and his renegades reach the Chiricahua Mountains of Arizona. Fresh snow in the form of a treacherous blizzard guarantees the Apaches safe arrival in Mexico, out of reach of the pursuing cavalry. In their ride of terror, they have travelled approximately 1,200 miles, killing 40 people, and stealing countless horses and other livestock. The Apaches evade capture and lose only one brave.

January 8 1886 —Captain Crawford starts a forced march, 48 hours with no sleep, in hopes of overtaking Geronimo.

January 10-11 1886 — Captain Crawford's forces commence an attack on Geronimo's village in the Sierra Madre Mountains, Mexico, from all sides. The horses run off and Geronimo sensing his lost position, shouts: "SCATTER AND GO AS YOU CAN!" The soldiers capture all supplies, but the Apaches make it to the other side of the Arros River safely. On the 11th a meeting is scheduled between Geronimo and Captain Crawford to discuss surrender: however, the meeting never takes place. Lt. Marion P. Maus of the 1st U.S. Infantry receives the Medal of Honor for his gallantry during this engagement.

January 11 1886 —A Mexican force of approximately 150 men open fire on Captain Crawford's scouts. Emmet Crawford, in full visible American uniform, climbs atop a huge rock with a white handkerchief in full view, exclaiming: "SOLDADOS AMERICANOS!" Crawford simultaneously orders his troops not to fire. Within minutes, Another volley of shots from the Mexicans hits Captain Crawford in the head. He never regains consciousness and finally succumbs January 18th, 1886. Crawford's body eventually is retrieved and buried in Arlington National Cemetery.

March 22 1886 — A pack train leaves Fort Bowie (with Tom Moore) en route to the Canyon Of The Tricksters in Mexico, to meet with General Crook to assist in a parley with Geronimo and other chiefs. General Crook, after seeing the faces of the Indians, describes what he felt: "FIERCE AS SO MANY TIGERS — KNOWING WHAT PITILESS BRUTES THEY ARE THEMSELVES, THEY MISTRUST EVERYONE ELSE!"

March 27 1886 — General Crook receives word the Chiricahuas will surrender. Nachez will also surrender. Geronimo, convinced of Crook's sincerity, is the last of the three to capitulate, stating: "ONCE I MOVED ABOUT LIKE THE WIND, NOW I SURRENDER TO YOU AND THAT IS ALL!" Then he shakes the hand of General Crook. The surrender takes place at Canon de los Embudos, Mexico.

March 28 1886 — General Crook returns to Fort Bowie, leaving Lt. Maos, the scouts and Alchise, to return the renegade Apaches to the Fort.

March 29 1886 — Geronimo, Nachez and some of the braves decide to leave the return march back to Fort Bowie for they fear treachery and break for their hideaway in the Sonoran Mountains.

March 30 1886 — General Crook dispatches Lt. Maos and troopers to recapture Geronimo.

April 2 1886 — General Nelson Appleton Miles replaces General Crook as Commander of the Department of Arizona. Miles attempts a much tougher stand against the Indians and shows no

desire to negotiate as Crook had been doing.

April 11 1886 —General Miles arrives at Fort Bowie to confer with General Crook.

April 12 1886 — General Crook departs Bowie Station, Arizona.

April 27 1886 — Apaches under Geronimo and Nachez strike at the Peck Ranch in the Santa Cruz Valley, killing a few civilians, including Mrs. Peck. Her husband and 13 year old daughter are taken captive by the Apaches. Captured, Mr. Peck suffers temporary insanity from the ordeal. Cavalry under Captain T. C. Levo pursues the Apaches until relieved by Captain Wirt Davis on May 5th, just as their rations are running out.

May 3 1886 —The U.S. Cavalry on a search and destroy mission encounters Indians at Pinito Mountains, Sonora, Mexico. The cavalry are not successful in their attempt to capture Geronimo during this engagement. Lt. P. H. Clarke, 10th U.S. Cavalry, risks his life under heavy fire to save the life of a seriously wounded trooper, bringing the man to safety. The Apaches however, continue to evade capture.

May 15 1886 —The U.S. Cavalry attacks a hostile Apache camp in the Santa Cruz Mountains, Mexico. Once again, Geronimo is not captured. Sgt. Sam Craig of the 4th Cavalry shows extraordinary courage during the engagement. His actions earn his Medal of Honor.

July 9 1886 —General Miles, fearful the Apaches might surrender to the Mexicans, reverts to Crook's policy and seeks a negotiated settlement. Miles realizes that his own policy has failed.

November 5 1887 — General T. H. Ruger issues an ultimatum to the Crow Indians, demanding surrender of the braves who fired on the Indian Agency. The Indians refuse and troops are dispatched to within about a mile of the Little Big Horn. The Indians fire on the cavalry, killing one soldier. The Indians were under Chief Wraps Up-His-Tail. The chief is shot by a Crow Indian in retaliation for the harm he caused the tribe.

April 1 1888 — Cavalry engages hostile Indians at O'Fallon's Creek, Montana. Lt. Lloyd M. Brett, 2nd Cavalry, manages to prevent the Indians from escaping by cutting off the Indian pony herd.

May 11 1889 — Robbers unsuccessfully attempt to rob a paymaster's wagon in Arizona. The escort repels the attack. Sgt. Benjamin Brown 24th U.S. Infantry is severely wounded in both the stomach and arms, but his courage and valor during this attack make him a recipient of the Medal of Honor. Corporal Isaiah Mays walks and crawls two miles to a ranch for help.

November 1899-1890 —The Indians, anticipating their god's arrival with ghosts of their ancestors, enact a ghost dance to recall the buffalo and spirits of the Indians departed.

March 7 1890 — Sgt. James T. Daniels, Company L. 4th U.S. Cavalry, exemplifies extreme courage and heroism while under attack by hostile Apaches in Arizona. Daniel's actions during this fight earns him the Medal of Honor.

December 15 1890 — Chief Sitting Bull is killed by Indian policemen (Lt. Bull Head and Sgt. Red Tomahawk). The remaining Sioux after the death of Sitting Bull flee and follow Chief Big Foot. The U.S. Cavalry begins immediate pursuit.

December 28 1890 — The Cavalry captures Big Foot and his braves, moving them to Wounded Knee Creek.

December 29 1890 — **BATTLE OF WOUNDED KNEE** — The U.S. 7th Cavalry while attempting to disarm the Sioux under Big Foot, hear a shot from the Sioux camp. This initiates fire from both the soldiers and the Sioux. By mid-day, the battle is over. A young Cheyenne Brave, Black Fox, had fired his rifle and the soldiers, almost all from Custer's famous 7th Cavalry, respond with ferocious fire, killing approximately one half of the warriors on the first volley, and many

additional Indians including women and children are subsequently killed or wounded as the cavalry fire continues nonstop. The cavalry loses 25 killed and thirty seven wounded. This battle is the last major battle between the U.S. Army and the Indians. During the battle of Wounded Knee, John E. Clancy, a musician, twice risks his life, successfully rescuing wounded soldiers while under intense enemy fire. Another soldier, Sgt. William Austin, in an attempt to dislodge the concealed Indians, assists the other soldiers, directing their fire and at great risk to his life, successfully dislodges the enemy.

December 30th 1890 —Hostile Indians clash with the 7th Cavalry at White Clay Creek, South Dakota. The cavalry withdraws under fire. Captain Charles A. Barnum refuses to retire, resorting to leading a charge which gains ground, allowing the regiment to withdraw safely.

January 1 1891 — The U.S. 6th Cavalry has serious problems in attempting to cross the partly-frozen White River in South Dakota. Lt. Benjamin Cheever heads this dangerous movement, successfully accomplishing the task. Cheever receives the Medal of Honor for his actions during this action. This contingent of the U.S. 6th Cavalry, commanded by Capt. John B. Kerr, engages and defeats a force of approximately 300 Brute Sioux warriors, in the vicinity of Little Grass Creek, South Dakota. The Indians, attempting to reach the badlands, are forced back to the Pine Ridge Agency.

October 5 1898 — The Chippewaw Indians stage an uprising at Lake Leech in northern Minnesota. The Army puts down the rebellion. Pvt. Oscar Burkard receives the Medal of Honor for his gallant actions during this uprising. (This is the last Medal of Honor received during the Indian Campaigns.)

1865 through 1898 — During the years 1865 through 1898, many major battles between the army and the Indians occur. It is not possible to list in a book such as this all of the names of the individual heroes who fought and gave their lives for the Colors. When possible, names of recipients of the Medal of Honor have been used. In total, 417 men received the Medal of Honor while in the service of the United States Army during the Indian wars.

